



PEERLESS MARTIAL GOD

BOOK 02

Jing Wu Hen

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

Peerless Martial God

(绝世武神)

by

Jing Wu Hen

(净无痕)

Synopsis

Lin Feng tried to be the diligent and hard-working good guy. He studied hard, did his best to make his family proud and not get into trouble, but when he saw a girl being taken advantage of, he had to intervene. He had been tricked, sentenced to 10 years in jail and framed for a crime he never committed, all was lost. If his life was over he would take those who ruined his life with him...

Suddenly he opens his eyes again. He is not dead, but alive in the body of the Lin Feng of a different world. This Lin Feng had been killed as trash of cultivation. This world where the strong had no regard for human life and would kill freely if they had the strength. Called 'trash' and thrown away, with vengeance in his heart he will rise to new heights opposing the will of heaven and earth.

Copyright

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Alice, Not Sane, Pan Pan @ [Totally Insane Translation](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 101: A Dead End?

On the large empty road which was surrounded by uncultivated fields, two silhouettes could be seen riding horses. There was one handsome young man and an extremely beautiful young girl. They were galloping at full speed surrounded by a cloud of dust.

These two people were obviously Lin Feng and Meng Qing who were now riding a single horse towards the imperial city.

Lin Feng was proud that he could ride so quickly. His horse was galloping so fast that Lin Feng's long hair was floating along with his robes which created a sound like that of a flag blowing in the wind.

The bad thing though was that Lin Feng was about to fall because of the strong wind. Lin Feng was about to fall because he was standing on the horse behind Meng Qing. However, what comforted him is that he was behind Meng Qing and could put his hands on her shoulders to stabilise himself.

“If I hadn't broken through to the Ling Qi layer and I was still as weak as before then I would have fallen down from the horseback a long time ago.”

Even though Meng Qing had never seen anything else apart from the Black Wind Mountain and she didn't understand much of the outside world, she still didn't let other people notice the change in her emotions. She was extremely smart and also had amazing perception abilities.

At that moment, Meng Qing turned her head around and looked at Lin Feng. She noticed that he was having a hard time and slightly smiled at him.

Even though it was only a slight smile, it seemed like there was nothing else in the world except that beautiful smile. All other things in the world instantly seemed uninteresting and dull. That smile illuminated everything around it and made the world seem bright.

“It’s too much. What a cruel world.” thought Lin Feng. He couldn’t believe how beautiful Meng Qing was. When he was looking at her, he forgot everything for a brief moment. He slightly smiled back at her as he thought about his pitiful state.

“Do you want to sit down?” asked Meng Qing looking indifferent again as if nothing could affect her.

“Yes, I do.” said Lin Feng straightforwardly while nodding. Lin Feng was an honest and straightforward young man.

Unfortunately, the world was full of people with evil intentions. It was important not to be naive and not to show other people potential weaknesses, for example by being too honest.

But Lin Feng was simple and honest which is why he was often disappointed by cruel and heartless people.

“Explain to me how the outside world works, if you manage to make my heart beat and shake up my feelings, I might consider the matter.” said Meng Qing with expectant eyes which stupefied Lin Feng. He was puzzled and couldn’t help but smile.

“The outside world?”

Even though Lin Feng knew a lot about how cruel that world was, he was puzzled. After all, he had also been in that world for a short time. Moving Meng Qing was easier said than done.

But at that moment, Lin Feng had a flash and said to Meng Qing while smiling: “Let me tell you about the story of my family.”

“Alright.” said Meng Qing while faintly nodding.

“In my family, there is a ferocious beast which is a thousand years old. It has magic powers and is extremely strong. Its name is Bai Su Zhen.”

Lin Feng’s voice was faintly audible. He remembered the classic scriptures he had read in his previous life. He remembered the story of the lovers, Liang Shanbo and Zhu Yingtai. During life they had fallen in love but due to certain circumstances they had been driven apart. When death had separated the lovers they transformed their spirits into butterflies so that they would never be separated from each other again. He was trying to take elements from such stories to make his own story even more touching and moving.

Meng Qing was so captivated by Lin Feng's words that she didn't pay attention to the fact that Lin Feng sat down behind her and wrapped his arms around her waist. Their two bodies, from the distance, seemed to be joined as one.

"Alright." said Lin Feng who had finished telling his story and then pulled on the reins to stop the horse.

At that moment, Meng Qing turned her head around. There was less than a centimeter between Lin Feng and Meng Qing's face.

When Lin Feng saw Meng Qing's face that near, his heart started pounding. At this moment all he wanted to do was to kiss her. She was really a captivating and enchanting young woman.

"It seems like my heart is still weak. Haha." thought Lin Feng. So close to Meng Qing, he was unable to remain cold-blooded. His heart felt like the ice which was gathering had begun to melt.

Lin Feng was an extremely motivated cultivator and set high goals for himself. In this world, people like Meng Qing were rare. She could remain cold blooded no matter what the situation. Only a wise cultivator could achieve such a high level of self-control but Lin Feng was incapable of such a thing. He was not on the same level as Meng Qing.

Meng Qing looked surprised and immediately asked Lin Feng: "Did you finish your story?"

“Yes.” said Lin Feng while nodding.

“If you finished your story, why are you still like this? I didn’t give you my permission.” said Meng Qing sounding unsympathetic but with teasing look in her eyes.

“Ehhh.....” Lin Feng was surprised and then added: “Alright, I’ll continue telling you stories.”

“Hm.” Meng Qing hummed and turned around without adding anything.

“.....”

Lin Feng’s mouth was open but he was speechless. How evil was this woman? If he didn’t tell her stories, he couldn’t sit like that... well then, how could he possibly stop telling her stories?

“Boooom vroooom vroooom!”

At that moment, the ground was shaking with the sound of horses.

Lin Feng gazed into the distance and saw a cloud of dust. This was the sound of horses galloping and its noise was getting louder and louder.

Not long after, a few armored horses appeared in front of them

surrounded by a cloud of dust.

Meng Qing urged the horse to move and tried to make him move to a location to hide. At that moment, the armored horses were about to pass them. The leader of these people glanced at Lin Feng for a second and then continued galloping.

“Horse mounted bandits?”

Lin Feng was astonished. These people looked extremely well trained. Even though they were galloping on a road, they were in formation and there wasn't the least bit of chaos in their movements. They were galloping in a perfectly synchronous formation.

Strong auras were emanating from their bodies. Lin Feng could sense the aura they had and how incredibly strong these people must have been.

However, their clothes and their hairstyles looked terribly messy just like the thieves Lin Feng had previously killed.

“How is it possible that these people look so similar to the thieves that you killed?”

Meng Qing was also surprised and asked Lin Feng that question sounding cold and indifferent as always

She just turned around for a second and saw that Lin Feng looked

as confused as her.

A short while after, Lin Feng seemed like he had understood something.

“They are the same!”

Lin Feng looked ice-cold and said: “Meng Qing, let’s go back, quickly!”

“Alright.”

Without hesitating, they turned around and galloped at full speed in the direction they had just come from.

.....

Duan Feng’s carriage was going at full speed leaving a deep trail in the ground behind him.

The Imperial City was extremely far from Yun Yang Town and they didn’t want to spend too much time on the road.

“Ho oh!”

At that moment, Uncle Wang stopped the carriage.

Even though Uncle Wang was extremely weak, he was extremely respected by the Duan Clan because he was close to Duan Feng's grandfather. After Duan Feng's father's death, Uncle Wang had been the one assigned to handle a certain number of things in the Duan Clan. His status within the clan was extremely high.

That is why Uncle Wang had dared to insist for Lin Feng to leave even though Duan Feng was firmly opposed to that decision. However, except for Duan Feng and Jing Yun, all the others were happy to see Lin Feng leave.

At that moment, Uncle Wang noticed a yellow windstorm of dust on the horizon and noticed that the ground was shaking.

Everybody felt that the ground was shaking. They all anxiously started gazing into the distance at the source of the commotion.

A short time after, a certain number of men mounted on horseback appeared in front of them which frightened them.

Horse mounted bandits...

Suddenly there were more bandits in their way.

It seemed like they were really unlucky on this journey.

“Let's hope that these bandits are not as strong as the thieves we just encountered.”

They were all hoping that these bandits were not as strong as the thieves they had met before which were dealt with by Lin Feng. They were all extremely strong and their leader had even reached the Ling Qi layer. If Lin Feng hadn't been there, they would have all been slaughtered.

They were thinking about Lin Feng and how he had left them. Uncle Wang had accused Lin Feng of being one of Duan Tian Lang's spies but now Lin Feng wasn't there anymore and now bandits had appeared again. They were all puzzled and wondered what was really happening.

But what is sure is that they all wished that Lin Feng was still there with them. Uncle Wang had also thought that Lin Feng was a spy because he had gained Duan Feng's trust very quickly. Besides, at that moment, they didn't know what the bandits' goal was.

The chief of the bandits held a long dagger which had a dazzling light covering the surface of the dagger.

"Kill them all, leave no survivors." said the chief of the bandits in a cold voice. The bandits' bodies were emitting very strong Qi.

"Boom."

The ground was violently shaking. All of the bandits' daggers emitted an extremely strong and deadly Qi which moved straight towards to the carriage and started to oppress them.

“Protect the young master!” shouted Uncle Wang. The guards moved in front of him and released their spirits.

“Die!” shouted one of the bandits as he swung his long dagger through the air. Suddenly, blood sprayed everywhere and a head flew into the air.

The darker elements of this world in general liked to behead people and always aimed at the throat of their enemies. Wherever they went, blood usually flowed in huge quantities. They enjoyed the fear that would be caused by the scene when other found it.

That violent scene seemed like it had stopped time around them. Suddenly, time seemed to pass very slowly and the landscape had become completely silent. Blood was dripping from the tip of the dagger.

A guard had been beheaded. There were still a few dozen bandits who were observing them with ferocious eyes.

The ones who were left were terrified and shaking from head to toe in terror. Some of the guards were even in a state of panic and their heart was beating out of their chest. They could hardly breathe under the intense pressure of the bandits. These bandits were much stronger than the thieves they had just met. It seemed like it was the end for them. They were all going to die.

Could it be that they were going to die in the same conditions and end up beheaded and left here to rot?

“Lin Feng, where are you!”

They all wanted Lin Feng to come back and save them. They remembered how Lin Feng had killed the thieves so easily and so quickly.

Unfortunately, Uncle Wang had ordered Lin Feng to leave and nobody had insisted to make him stay. They were all too proud and many were happy to see him leave, but now they were wishing he was still there.

Chapter 102: Aggression and Brutality

Duan Feng and Jing Yun came out from the carriage and when they saw the scene they were overcome with nausea.

How cruel and heartless. There was too much blood. For these bandits, people's lives were like trophies to be taken.

“Uncle Wang, you're the one who made Lin Feng leave! What should we do now? They want to kill us. We're going to die!” shouted Wan Qing Shan furiously

Even if Lin Feng was a spy, they should have kept him, at least, they wouldn't have died but Uncle Wang had made him leave even though Lin Feng was the only who could save them from such a predicament.

“Are you blaming me?! Are you not the one who called him a piece of trash?!” shouted Uncle Wang furiously at Wan Qing Shan.

“But at least I didn't make him leave.” replied Wan Qing Shan furiously. He hated Uncle Wang at that moment. He was still young, how could he die so young?

It was already too late and it wasn't a matter of wanting to die or not. They were already doomed and were really going to die.

“And saying these things will save our lives? Is it useful?” said Uncle Wang in such an arrogant way that it made Wan Qing Shan

grow more furious.

“Die!”

The bandits were not planning to stop their attacks. Their long daggers up in the air were diffusing a resplendent yet deadly light.

“Ahhhh!!” shouted Wan Qing Shan furiously. Wan Qing Shan wanted to escape from this situation as he didn’t want to die.

But in front of Wan Qing Shan there were two bandits standing with their daggers ready. They could kill him at any moment, his fate had already been sealed.

“Why do you want to kill me?” asked Duan Feng to the chief of the bandits with an innocent yet stubborn look on his face.

“Young master, you should have never accepted your brother’s request to go to the Imperial City!” shouted Uncle Wang filled with bitter feelings.

“Why do you need to know? You are going to die anyway.” said the chief bandit calmly. He was looking at Duan Feng the same way he would look at a corpse on the road.

“Kill him.” ordered the chief of the bandits. At that moment, two of the bandits released a strong Qi.

“Jing Yun, sister, Uncle Wang, I’m sorry for getting you into trouble.” said Duan Feng while sounding sincerely sorry. When Uncle Wang heard Duan Feng, he shook his head. As far as Jing Yun is concerned, she was thinking about the fact that she had escaped death when she had left the Yun Hai Sect but death was following closely behind her. She wouldn’t have thought she would die so early. It seemed like she could only escape her death for this long.

At that moment, the sound of a horse galloping spread through the atmosphere. It seemed to come from quite far away but it surprised everybody who then looked at the horizon.

“Stop!” shouted a voice in the horizon. The horse was moving closer and closer.

When they saw the silhouettes standing on the horse, they were surprised.

“Lin Feng and Meng Qing!” thought Duan Feng. He wouldn’t have thought that Lin Feng would suddenly come back.

The chief of the bandits turned his head around and stared at Lin Feng. He was in no rush to kill Duan Feng.

Meng Qing was urging on the horse even more using the whip. At that moment, they had already galloped past the bandits and arrived next to Duan Feng.

Lin Feng saw some heads lying on the ground which used to belong to the guards and grew furious.

These bandits were like animals and their methods were truly cruel.

“Lin Feng, big brother!” said Duan Feng looking extremely happy and deeply grateful. Even though Uncle Wang had disrespected Lin Feng, Lin Feng had come back to save them in spite of the potential risks.

Lin Feng indifferently nodded to Duan Feng and kept staring coldly at the bandits.

“Army troops, disguised as bandits and on top of that, you are killing your own people. Are you not ashamed of yourselves seriously?”

When Lin Feng finished talking, Duan Feng, who was standing next to him, looked astonished. Army troops!?

The chief of the bandits was astonished. He was staring at Lin Feng and asked him: “What makes you think that we are army troops?”

“Bandits on horses would never adopt such a precise formation and be as disciplined as you are. They wouldn’t even understand the meaning of the words formation or discipline.” said Lin Feng coldly to the bandits. Each and every single one of them was

speechless.

Real thieves and bandits had no methods of moving in formations as this required years of training. The only rule they followed was complete chaos. How could they be so organized and so incredibly strong? Besides, Lin Feng had sensed the same Qi as that released by the soldiers in the Stormy Gorge. It was not as strong as what he had felt in the Stormy Gorge but was definitely the same type of Qi.

“The camouflage of the thieves we encountered earlier was much better than yours. They looked like real thieves.” continued Lin Feng.

“You mean that you killed that group?”

The dagger of the bandit chief started to glow. He was evilly staring at Lin Feng.

“Indeed and I will kill you the same way I killed the animals that came before.” Said Lin Feng confidently.

“You talk big but you’re overestimating yourself. You will die for this.” shouted the bandit chief aggressively and then added: “Kill him!”

“Roger.”

The two bandits who wanted to kill Duan Feng then turned

around and moved towards Lin Feng with their glowing daggers.

Lin Feng looked calm yet firm. When the two bandits arrived near him, he moved his hands slightly.

“Sword unsheathing.”

A bright silver light flashed between the two bandits and Lin Feng at amazing speed.

Lin Feng’s sword attack was incredibly powerful. Suddenly, two trails of blood spayed into the air. There were even some drops of blood which had landed on Lin Feng’s horse.

“Ling Qi Layer.” said the bandit chief while looking surprised and then added in an indifferent tone: “No wonder that he acts so arrogant and had the power to kill the other group.”

While looking at Lin Feng, he added: “Even if you are not weak, boy, let me tell you, your strength doesn’t justify your arrogance and I will show you how ignorant of the world you truly are.”

At that moment, a strong and oppressive force rushed towards Lin Feng.

“You see? I have broken through to the third Ling Qi layer so you, who are only at the first Ling Qi layer, could never compete with me. You will regret your provocations. Besides, almost all of my comrades here are of the second Ling Qi layer. Almost every

person remaining here can easily kill you, only a few are at your level. Today, I will be magnanimous though. Normally, you should be killed for your provocations but today, I will give you an offer out of the kindness of my heart. If you join my troops and serve under my command, you will be excused from your previous crimes.”

The chief of the bandits was trying to make it appear as a favor for Lin Feng but in his heart, he really hoped that he would be able to recruit Lin Feng. Even if he didn't admit it, Lin Feng, for such a young man was extremely gifted. People of his age rarely broke through to the Ling Qi layer. Lin Feng's future would definitely be bright and the bandit therefore hoped Lin Feng could bring him good fortune in the future by serving under him.

“You are not strong enough yet but I can teach you many things. If you come with me, I can help you rise very quickly.” Said the bandit chief.

Lin Feng was calmly looking at the chief of the bandits and started smiling.

“In your dreams.” said Lin Feng.

The chief of the bandits was stupefied and said: “But I am a cultivator of the third Ling Qi layer, are you not afraid of me killing you now?”

“Third Ling Qi layer... is that strong where you come from?” said Lin Feng with a mocking expression on his face. He suddenly

started to release Qi and force from his body in incredible quantities.

“First Ling Qi layer?”

“No, second Ling Qi layer!! He is truly gifted.”

The crowd could feel Lin Feng’s Qi surrounding them. Everybody was stunned because breaking through to the second Ling Qi layer at such an early age was an extraordinary thing and it was really difficult to achieve.

Lin Feng’s abilities were terrifying.

But they didn’t have time to continue observing Lin Feng too long because the power of the Qi emerging from Lin Feng’s body was ever increasing.

“What?” said many of the bandits in astonishment. Lin Feng had become even stronger! Could it be that he was at the top of the second Ling Qi layer?

They were even more surprised to see that Lin Feng’s strength was a strength reached at the peak of the second Ling Qi layer.

“What a frightening genius.”

All the bandits could see that Lin Feng was much stronger and

much more gifted than they were.

“Wait wait, the Qi and the Force he is releasing is still getting more powerful!

Many people were utterly surprised. Could it be that.....

“Boom.”

The whole crowd was astonished. Lin Feng’ force and Qi had reached a power of the third Ling Qi layer. At that moment, it had stopped increasing though.

Duan Feng and Jing Yun were speechless and astonished. Their hearts were pounding at full speed.

He was only about sixteen years old and he had already broken through to the third Ling Qi layer?! That was monstrous and beastly. What a genius!

“We need that boy.”

The chief of the bandits really wanted to recruit Lin Feng. If he recommended Lin Feng, he would probably receive a great reward which would raise his status and grant him a large sum of money.

“I admit that you are a genius but you are only at the third Ling Qi layer which is not enough to defeat all of us. We have enough

people here that we can easily kill you.” said the chief of the bandits and then added: “However, if you accept my offer to join me, I will first recommend you to become my personal assistant and when the right moment comes, I will recommend you to rise up in the hierarchy and your future will have endless opportunities.”

“Besides, if you want anything in the future, you can always ask me and I will do my best to help you achieve your aims.”

“Is it still not enough? You are still confident in your ability to defeat me.” Said Lin Feng who was smiling coldly.

At that moment, Lin Feng released the incredible amount of Qi and Force which he had been condensing all along. It was beyond monstrously strong.

At that moment, everybody could feel that they had been consumed by the energy released by Lin Feng. Immediately after, they could feel the sword Qi was piercing into them like a blade and contained another energy.

“Sword force.” said the chief of the bandits as he grew even more surprised.

“Is this enough for you?” said Lin Feng while laughing evilly. Lin Feng made another step and released even more sword force. This time however it was even more powerful than a moment before.

“Lin Feng’s strength is terrifying! If I was in the middle of that sword Qi, I would die in the blink of an eye.”

Duan Feng whispered that to Jing Yun who was standing on his side. Jing Yun didn’t know that Lin Feng had become so strong. He was much stronger than the last time she had seen him.

Uncle Wang was also staring at Lin Feng and his thoughts were flowing at full speed. He didn’t know what to think or believe anymore.

When the chief of the bandits heard Lin Feng’s words, a hideous expression appeared on his face. Lin Feng was a sword master who could use sword force and sword Qi with such mastery. Besides, his power was ever increasing each time he released more of his energy. The chief of the bandits was even more worried because the energy that Lin Feng was releasing was a threat to his life. Lin Feng was most likely stronger than even him. He then remembered everything that he told Lin Feng a moment before and thought that his words had been ridiculous.

Chapter 103: Impudent old man

“Such a pity, a genius like you has to die so early.” said the chief of the bandits while looking at Lin Feng and shaking his head.

Lin Feng was very young and even if he could already use sword force, he could not be as strong as the combined power of this many experts, even if he was stronger than them individually. They were already condensing a huge amount of Qi and preparing for their attack.

They all wanted to kill Lin Feng.

“Don’t worry, I can’t die from something like this.” said Lin Feng sounding extremely confident. He was a bit worried a moment before. He had thought that they might have a multitude of people who have reached the third Ling Qi layer but in the end, the bandit chief revealed that they were much weaker than Lin Feng initially thought.

When Lin Feng had broken through to the second Ling Qi layer, he could already compete with Duan Han of the fourth Ling Qi layer. Lin Feng had actually greatly increased his strength since then, so he didn’t really worry about defeating the group even if they attacked together.

“You seem over confident but I will tell you that you are just being stupid.” said the chief of the bandits sounding extremely calm. He brandished his long dagger in the air and at that moment, all of the bandits did the same then suddenly an extremely strong

Qi invaded the atmosphere.

At that moment, Lin Feng was surrounded and enveloped by the combined attack from the bandits' Qi. He had the feeling his bones were going to crack from the pressure. These bandits were many times stronger than the thieves that he had defeated before.

“Die!” shouted all the bandits at the same time. The Qi of their daggers pierced through the atmosphere directly towards Lin Feng who was still surrounded by his sword force. Their fear of Lin Feng was overtaken by their desire to kill him.

Their long daggers glowed from all directions and the Qi they released was directed at oppressing Lin Feng.

“Since you’re attacking me, you should just die.” said Lin Feng and then closed his eyes. He released his Celestial Spirit and entered the world of darkness. His brain also started processing all the data at full speed. He instantly understood the position of every incoming attack around him.

Every single dagger, every single movement the bandits made, Lin Feng could see and feel everything clearly.

He was holding his soft sword out of which a grayish black Qi was emerging and filled in the atmosphere.

“Psshhh!” almost all of the bandits had arrived next to Lin Feng at the same time and their daggers were all glowing, they all had

expectant smiles on their faces.

Lin Feng's sword force invaded the entire atmosphere but Lin Feng remained motionless.

"Deadly sword." whispered Lin Feng. Suddenly, he moved his body at shocking speed. His long sword made a perfect curve through the air. The grayish black Qi as well as the sword force had annihilated everything in its path. His attack was extremely powerful.

The daggers had stopped glowing and the bandits who had attacked Lin Feng were all sent flying backwards. On their bodies was a mark left by Lin Feng's deadly sword.

The horses had gone crazy and were unceasingly neighing. The chief of the bandits was staring blankly at Lin Feng. He was gasping in astonishment and shaking from head to toe in complete terror.

This was completely unheard of!

All the members of his troop without exception had been blown away and then miserably fell onto the ground. There hadn't been the slightest noise but with a single sword strike, Lin Feng had killed them all.

The chief of the bandits had a shiver run down his spine. He was astonished. He was looking at Lin Feng and could only feel Lin

Feng's dreadful Qi wrapping around his body.

"It's your turn." said a Lin Feng. The chief of the bandits saw that Lin Feng had finally opened his eyes and had started moving towards him. A cold Qi was moving towards him at full speed. Lin Feng's dark eyes looked lifeless and evil.

A moment before, Lin Feng looked calm and serene even though his eyes still revealed some indignation and anger. But at that moment, Lin Feng' facial expression had undergone a drastic change. His expression was ice cold and emotionless. His two eyes had become pitch black and gave the impression that they would consume anyone who looked directly into them.

How could the chief of the bandits still want to fight against Lin Feng? Fear was petrifying him and he could not even move a muscle other than to escape.

The chief's horse started turning around to escape. The chief of the bandits wanted to escape from that deadly sword at all costs. He wasn't able to counter a single attack from Lin Feng.

"You want to leave?" said Lin Feng with a cold smile on his face. He used his Moonlight Feather Agility technique and jumped a hundred meters towards the bandit chief.

The energy released by his deadly sword was creating vortexes as it passed through the air. Lin Feng's sword energy immediately crashed into the chief's body and pierced a hole directly through his chest.

If he had tried to block the attack, maybe he could have resisted for a few more strikes but it looked like he had given up all hope and knew that he was going to die under that sword. This was the end for the bandit and his body heavily crashed onto the ground.

Lin Feng recalled his spirit back into his body. His eyes became normal again. He turned around and walked towards Duan Feng and the others.

“Lin Feng, big brother.”

Duan Feng’s eyes were filled with gratitude and admiration. Lin Feng was way too strong! Besides, even if he was as strong as Lin Feng, he probably wouldn’t take the same risks.

At that moment, Uncle Wang started to talk as well. He had a big smile on his face and said: “Lin Feng, young man, I made a mistake. I am sorry.”

Lin Feng looked at the old man. He looked incredibly cold.

“You, how long are you going to pretend?” Lin Feng spat the words out in anger. At that moment, Uncle Wang was stupefied.

Duan Feng and Jing Yun were also surprised. They didn’t understand what Lin Feng meant.

“Lin Feng, young man, please explain what you mean.” said Uncle Wang looking careless yet staring fixedly at Lin Feng.

“These bandits were all army troops, right?” said Lin Feng.

“Indeed. They must be army troops.” Replied Old Wang.

Duan Feng nodded and asked: “What does that have to do with Uncle Wang?”

“Duan Feng, do you remember that Uncle Wang said that the first thieves I killed were actually calmly speaking with me?”

“I remember.” said Duan Feng while nodding.

“If Uncle Wang is as weak as you think then how could he hear and observe these things better than all of you?” replied Lin Feng.

“I have been loyal and devoted to the Duan Clan for so many years. I am in charge of controlling that the young master is safe at all times. I always have to pay attention to every single detail. I know that you, young man, bear a grudge against me but there is no need to try and damage my reputation like this.” Said Old Wang.

“Damage your reputation?” said Lin Feng coldly. “I am not that kind of person.”

“What the chief of the thieves told me has nothing to do with this affair. I think that all these thieves and bandits came straight for Duan Feng to kill him and all of you would have let him die.” Said Lin Feng in disdain.

“Maybe.” nodded Uncle Wang. “Who knows?”

“Well, since that is the case, I find a bit strange... I killed all of the thieves in the first group. Not a single one of them was left to send a message to the second group, but how could the second group know that Duan Feng hadn't died? Why did they still come? How did the bandit chief know that the first group had been killed when he asked me if it was me who killed them?” said Lin Feng which surprised everybody. Indeed, the second group was ready to come and kill Duan Feng after the first group died. How could they know that he hadn't died?

“Since they knew, there must have been someone who told them. There must be a spy. What do you think?” said Lin Feng while staring at Uncle Wang.

“Maybe you are right. There might be a spy. But Lin Feng shouldn't forget about the fact that you were much farther in front of us and that the bandits came after you left us. So if there is a spy, then.... Hehe.” said Uncle Wang while laughing. He didn't finish his sentence but everybody understood what he meant.

“Why are you laughing? Is this situation a joking matter to you?” said Lin Feng with a cold tone when he saw that the old man was laughing. But Duan Feng and Jing Yun started looking at Uncle Wang in a strange way which immediately made him stop

laughing.

“It’s easy to understand what the situation really is when you have a brain.” said Lin Feng firmly and then continued: “There were two groups of bandits. They were probably working together and then you implied that I worked with them. If I was working with them then I would have killed the first group to gain your trust but what about the second group? The people behind this are not stupid and would definitely not sacrifice so many strong individuals for such a reason. Do you think that everybody is stupid and you are the only one with a brain?”

Uncle Wang looked panicked as he was running short on arguments and didn’t know what to say anymore. Lin Feng wanted to do a favor for Duan Feng as he had shown him kindness. Uncle Wang really thought that the others were stupid, he was bringing Duan Feng straight to the bandits ready to be killed.

“Alright, even if is not you or me, it could be anyone else.” Said Old Wang in a panic.

“Anyone else?!” said Lin Feng with a sarcastic smile on his face. “What do you mean? Duan Feng called them himself so they could take his life?”

“Then, there is Jing Yun but Jing Yun was in the carriage all along sitting with Duan Feng and had had no opportunity to inform anyone. Then, there were all the guards but they have all died thanks to the second group of bandits. You are the only left to suspect, Uncle Wang. Still alive and completely unharmed, not even a single attack was aimed in your direction. Besides, you’ve

been looking calm throughout the whole journey, even when the bandits arrived because you knew everything from the beginning.”

Duan Feng and Jing Yun were stupefied while staring at Lin Feng.

“Lin Feng, big brother, Uncle Wang has been working for the Duan Clan for many years. He’s always cared for me since my childhood. He would never hurt me. This is probably a misunderstanding or a coincidence.”

Duan Feng refused to believe that theory. Uncle Wang was a friend of his grandfather and had always been there for him.

“Duan Feng, what kind temperament does Uncle Wang have?” replied Lin Feng.

“Gentle, philanthropic and charitable.” replied Duan Feng.

“Gentle, philanthropic and charitable? Duan Feng, If this was really the case then why has he been opposed to our friendship from the moment he learnt of my strength? Didn’t his personality drastically change when he saw me kill the thieves? He was the one who forced me to leave using the most absurd reasons. Don’t you think that all of this is completely out of character?” said Lin Feng coldly which made Duan Feng look surprised. Actually, Uncle Wang’s behaviour had been really strange.

“You have absolutely no proof of what you are saying. I have

been working for the Duan Clan for so many years. If the young master believes you then I should just accept my death. You could kill me easily at any time but instead you try to tarnish my reputation. It would be as easy as lifting your hand, so there is no need to continue talking. Please kill me.” said Uncle Wang coldly. He closed his eyes as a sign that he was begging to be killed which made Duan Feng feel extremely awkward.

“What a disgusting old man.” said Lin Feng while staring at Uncle Wang. He was speechless. The old man’s method to make Duan Feng feel guilty was horrible.

“Lin Feng, young man, why are you not killing me? Take my life. You are so strong. Nobody will ever say that you unfairly killed someone. Nobody would ever dare.” said Uncle Wang in a weak voice. Uncle Wang sounded like he had been extremely hurt by Lin Feng. It sounded like Lin Feng’s purpose had been to kill the old man all the way.

“Lin Feng, big brother... this...”

The situation was horrible for Duan Feng. He respected Lin Feng a lot and thought that he was strong and powerful. Besides, he had saved him twice already... and Uncle Wang had always been taking care of him since his childhood. He was like a member of his family... an elder of his family.

“I have no way to prove everything that I said. If you don’t believe me, then there is nothing else that I can do. Whether he is important for you or not is not my problem and it has nothing to do with me. I just wanted to warn you, that’s all. Jing Yun, do you

want to continue the journey with us or are you going to stay here?”

Lin Feng didn't feel like arguing anymore. After all, he had only known Duan Feng for a Day. Even if he thought that Duan Feng was a remarkably kind young boy, if he didn't believe him, then it wasn't necessary to keep trying convincing him. As far as Jing Yun is concerned, Lin Feng always considered her as a great friend and didn't want to put her aside or to make her feel abandoned.

“Lin Feng, I've had respect for you all the way but now you are really just humiliating everybody! First, you humiliate me, an old man and now you are humiliating Jing Yun putting her in an awkward situation. You are going too far.”

Uncle Wang said these words on a very cold and aggressive tone as if he had been provoked by Lin Feng.

“Shut the hell up!” shouted Lin Feng extremely loudly while glancing at Uncle Wang which stunned the latter.

“Alright, alright... Lin Feng, I see that you only know how to rely on your strength to bully others. ”

“Are you done talking?” At that moment, a cold and indifferent voice spread in the air. It was Meng Qing. Everybody was surprised. She had surprisingly said something even though she was quite uncommunicative most of the time.

Meng Qing was staring at Uncle Wang and she looked disgusted. She then said: “You really are an impudent old man. You initially thought that you were going to leave alone at the beginning after everybody would have been killed by the bandits but your plan failed and now you are trying to humiliate and bully Lin Feng. Do you have no shame?”

Chapter 104: Blood Spirit

Lin Feng was astonished. He wouldn't have thought that Meng Qing would suddenly join in.

Uncle Wang was astonished as well and shouted furiously: "You two are working together. However, there is no need to make slanderous accusations. You two are extremely strong. If you want to kill me, just kill me. there is no need to make up reasons."

"So you want to die that much?" said Lin Feng calmly but filled with indignation because of that shameless old man.

"What other choice do I have? You are treating an old man like me in such a horrible way." replied the old man.

"Don't worry, there are enough reasons for you to die." Said Lin Feng.

Meng Qing started talking and said: "Lin Feng, search him. You might find an item which could be used as evidence, for example, something which would enable several people to communicate even if a long distance separates them.

"Huh?" Lin Feng was stupefied and glanced at Meng Qing. Immediately after, he looked at Uncle Wang again. If Meng Qing was right and Uncle Wang possessed such an item, it would be very clear that he was at the origin of everything that had happened on the journey.

Uncle Wang's face drastically changed.

"Hehe, I really need to search him." thought Lin Feng while staring at Uncle Wang and smiling coldly.

"Stop harassing me with your crazy and unfounded ravings! If you want to kill me, just kill me! There is no need to humiliate me like this! I am a weak old man but I don't deserve to be humiliated like this." said Uncle Wang.

"You don't need to try and make everyone think you are a victim. That only makes you even more disgusting. If Lin Feng finds nothing, I will die." said Meng Qing. She was calm but her words were incredibly sharp.

Lin Feng looked at Meng Qing, smiled and said: "If I find nothing, you kill me. I don't want you to die, Meng Qing. My life will be enough."

When Lin Feng finished talking, his silhouette vanished and suddenly appeared in front of Uncle Wang. He then started holding him tightly and moved quickly so that the old man wouldn't have time to speak.

Lin Feng's hand moved all over the old man's body and a short instant after took out a small black pouch. Lin Feng untied it and took a little sealed bottle out of it.

“What do you have to say now?” said Lin Feng while looking at the old man who was shaking. Lin Feng had a teasing expression in his eyes.

Duan Feng and Jing Yun were astonished. They were blankly staring at the old man. They needed an explanation.

“Young master, I have always been close to the members of your family. I used to be close to your grandfather, then I was close to your father and now I am close to you. I have been caring for you since your childhood. Do you remember the love and affection that I showed you?”

Uncle Wang was looking at Duan Feng with an affectionate and tender expression in his eyes.

“I, of course, remember but..... why?”

Duan Feng hoped that Uncle Wang would give valid arguments but, unfortunately, he didn't.

“Since you remember, I have nothing to add. If young master wants me to live, I will live, if you want me to die, I will die.”

When Duan Feng heard Uncle Wang, his heart was pounding. He was moved and touched by the old man's words.

But it wasn't the same for Lin Feng who felt his heart grow colder and colder. How could the old man be so shameless and that

impudent?

“Meng Qing guessed right and we found evidence that you are the traitor. Do you think that a few emotional phrases will be enough to forget everything?” said Lin Feng which made the old man shiver.

“Lin Feng, young man, this affair has nothing to do with you. You don’t need to act like this.” said Uncle Wang.

“Nothing to do with me?” said Lin Feng while taking his long sword out which made Uncle Wang look at him in shock. Lin Feng then added: “Didn’t you say that you wanted to die a moment ago? Now that we have irrefutable facts that you are a traitor, why do you no longer say that you want to die? Do you think that we will let you play as many tricks as you want?”

Uncle Wang could already feel the deadly Qi from Lin Feng’s sword pressed against his body. He was shaking from head to toe with fear. The pressure alone sent shivers down his spine.

“Young master.” said Uncle Wang while looking at Duan Feng who was his last hope at life.

“No need to beg him. Even if he tells me to let you off, I won’t. I will kill you no matter what to avenge all those who have died because of you, especially all these young guards. They will be able to rest in peace when you die. Who cares if you die?”

When Lin Feng finished talking, his long sword stuck down on the old man. Blood splashed through the air and filled it with the scent of death. That old man was an impudent and a shameless liar, how was it possible to let him continue living?

“Pheewww.....”

Duan Feng took a deep breath. He looked very sad at the betrayal and death of Old Wang. He turned around and said: “Lin Feng, big brother, I’m sorry for everything.”

“It’s alright. You were just misled by him, that’s all.” said Lin Feng. Lin Feng didn’t blame Duan Feng at all. Duan Feng was still young, only about fourteen years old and Uncle Wang was the closest person to him. Therefore, trusting Uncle Wang was a normal thing for Duan Feng.

“Thank you, Lin Feng. I hope that you will not refuse to continue travelling with me to the Imperial City.” said Duan Feng as if he had already forgotten the events that just occurred but his eyes still revealed his sadness.

They were about to head for the Imperial City together. Only Duan Feng, Jing Yun, Lin Feng and Meng Qing were left. It was the first time that Duan Feng experienced the cruelty which people were capable of.

What scared him the most is that the people who had tried to kill him were troops from the army and thus protectors of the Xue Yue Country.

“Hmmm... no problem.” said Lin Feng while nodding. He then asked to Duan Feng: “Do you still want to continue on your journey and go to the Imperial City?”

“Since we already left, there is no need to escape to another place.” said Duan Feng whose eyes were started to look less heartbroken. Suddenly, his facial expression changed as if he had an epiphany and said: “Lin Feng, big brother, you don’t need to travel with us though.”

“The large road that leads to the Imperial City is filled with all kinds people. We just need to find another road and we should be fine.”

Lin Feng knew what Duan Feng meant and shook his head.

“Hmm, I have looked at the map but I don’t know how many roads lead to the Imperial City. Let me drive the carriage.” Said Jing Yun.

Duan Feng was troubled because of all the things that had just happened but still said worriedly: “Jing Yun, sister, don’t push yourself too hard.”

The four of them moved towards the carriage and Jing Yun drove the carriage while the others sat inside the carriage. Lin Feng and Duan Feng were having a discussion inside the carriage.

“Duan Feng, there is one thing that I would like to ask you.”

“Go ahead and ask me.”

“Uncle Wang accused me of having betrayed the Yun Hai Sect and of being sent by Duan Tian Lang to kill you. What does Duan Tian Lang have to do with you? Why would he want to kill you?”

When Duan Feng heard Lin Feng’s question, he made a wry smile.

“I’m sorry, I may be too inquisitive. You don’t have to answer.” added Lin Feng.

“If I am still alive, it is thanks to you. There is nothing too inquisitive when coming from you.” said Duan Feng while shaking his head. He then said: “It’s just that it is a very complex matter. Family matters are always complicated I guess.”

“My family name is Duan, you already know that. What might be less clear to you is that it is the name which belongs to the Imperial Clan. I am also a member of that clan.”

“But because my grandparents made mistakes, we ended up in the Yun Yang. Nowadays, there is nothing that distinguishes me from the ordinary people in that small town.”

Duan Feng was speaking slowly as he told his story. Lin Feng was calmly listening to him. He was amazed because he would have

never thought that Duan Feng was related to the Imperial Clan.

“Lin Feng, did you know that the Duan family are the Imperial Clan at the head of the Xue Yue Country?”

“Yes. They are extremely strong and respected by everyone within the Xue Yue Country.” replied Lin Feng.

“However, I don’t know for how many years the Duan Clan has been at the head of the country and how long they will be able to reign over the country in such a prosperous way.” said Duan Feng.

Lin Feng was surprised. He had never asked himself that question. Reigning over a country and keeping it prosperous was a difficult task but the Duan Clan had been in charge of the country for a long time. It wasn’t possible for them to reign over the country indefinitely but until now, they had always been the strongest clan at the head of the country.

“Spirit!” suddenly shouted Lin Feng. Lin Feng thought of a possibility. The probability to inherit one’s ancestors’ spirit was extremely high so maybe all the members of the Duan clan were extremely strong because of the spirit they inherited.

“That’s right. That’s precisely it, our spirits. More precisely, it’s the blood spirit.” replied Duan Feng while nodding.

“Blood spirit? I’ve never heard of that before.” said Lin Feng surprised. He had never heard about any blood spirit before.

“Lin Feng, brother, the Blood Spirit is as rare as phoenix feathers and unicorn horns. It’s a rarity of rarities. It’s that way in the entire Tian Long Region. It is normal that you have never heard of it.” explained Duan Feng. Even in the vast and almost boundless Tian Long Region, the blood spirit is extremely rare so it was even rarer in the Xue Yue Country, which was only a small country within the region.

“It is said that the possessors of a Blood Spirit are extremely powerful. It is also said that all their energy can circulate freely into their blood system. This kind of ability greatly enhances the cultivation practices of the Blood Spirit possessors. Younger generations almost systematically inherit that spirit but in some cases it becomes weaker through the generations.”

“Systematically inherit a Blood Spirit. How terrifying.” said Lin Feng.

“It is indeed terrifying. I don’t understand all the benefits that come with a Blood Spirit though.” said Duan Feng making a wry smile. He was still too young. His strength was nothing in comparison with adult cultivators within the clan who possessed a Blood Spirit.

“Lin Feng, after all my explanations, you probably understood why the Imperial Clan rules over this country without question.”

Chapter 105: The Sealed Doors

“The Duan Clan members all have it. My grandparents and my father had it.” Lin Feng was astonished. No wonder that they could reign over the country for such a long time. They can circulate their energy into their blood and the special strength which is created is transmitted onto the next generations.

The possessors of that strength could increase their natural abilities many times over. They were not like ordinary people. They could increase their own power and that of their next generations.

“Because the strength which is created by the Blood Spirit, the natural abilities of a person also change. If natural abilities are increased and that they are systematically transmitted onto the next generation, it means that their power increases each time it is passed down. However, because the power can also be weak in some children, it is important for the male cultivators possessing the Blood Spirit to have many concubines and many children to ensure that there is greater chance of a pure lineage.”

Lin Feng was stupefied and smiled wryly. Because some children didn't get the purest power and had a weaker spirit, the Duan Clan members decided that having multiple offspring would increase the chances at stronger generations. They only needed at least one genius to be born and that would be enough. Lin Feng was not sure that he understood the logic of this properly, he could not think on the same wavelength.

“Because of that, there are many problems which were created

between the members the Duan Clan... That is what happens when too many people live together in one place. Besides, it is also a harsh environment in which the competition is often extremely oppressive. There is a lot of pressure to be the strongest. If you are weak in the Duan Clan, you are almost sure to get rejected by the clan. A moment ago, I told you that my grandfather had left because he had had some problems with other members but I am convinced that he might had been rejected or expelled because of he was too weak. That wouldn't be impossible considering the situation and rules of the clan. There are so many people who get expelled from the Duan Clan because they are too weak."

Duan Feng continued to talk while Lin Feng was calmly and attentively listening to him. If the members of the Duan Clan had many concubines, it was normal for them to have many children. But it wasn't possible for the Imperial Clan to have hundreds of millions within the clan so getting expelled from the Duan Clan was a normal thing. Besides, too many people were hard to manage and that often led to chaotic situations.

"Every single child of the Duan Clan inherits strength from that Blood Spirit but those who are expelled leave and try to stay hidden while never revealing their identity. However, there are always people who follow them closely and then if they become extremely strong then the Duan Clan will accept them as members again."

When Duan Feng was speaking, he suddenly made a pause and continued: "Lin Feng, I also hid the truth from you. I told you that it was my big brother who had recommended me to the Celestial Academy. Well, he is like a brother to me but he is not my real brother, his status is quite important. He is the second Prince of

the country. He is his Majesty's second son. He is extremely talented and knows many mysterious and mystical things. He is monstrously powerful."

His Majesty's second son? Lin Feng wouldn't have thought that Duan Feng knew such illustrious people.

"Duan Feng, it seems like you have extremely high natural abilities as well as the inherited strength from the Blood Spirit," said Lin Feng while smiling at Duan Feng. Duan Feng had been invited to come to the Imperial City by His Majesty's second son personally. Obviously, Duan Feng was extremely talented and possessed a purer Blood Spirit which had greater strength and energy within.

"It is impossible to determine how much of strength one has. It is essential to practice a lot, to develop one's own abilities and get to know one's spirit perfectly. But the blood spirit can't be extremely strong directly at the beginning. You need to develop its power. I can release my spirit but it is still too weak. I am extremely far from the second prince's abilities. But there is someone even more powerful than His Majesty's second son. He is the same generation as us but he is a true genius. In the entire history of the Duan Clan, geniuses as powerful as him are rare. Besides, it had been at least one thousand years since the Duan Clan had someone with such a powerful Blood Spirit."

Lin Feng was captivated by Duan Feng's words. From what Duan Feng had said, it already seemed like the second son of His Majesty was one of the strongest members of the Duan Clan but that other young man seemed to be even stronger.

“That person is the crown prince himself. He is destined to rule the country in the future. He is regarded as the Genius of the Millennium in the Duan Clan. He is so strong that amongst the eight high officials of the Xue Yue Country, there has never been anyone who could take the first place in the rankings from him. It is probably normal for a crown prince to be extremely powerful. His abilities are endless and his bloodline is pure. His name is Duan Wu Dao.”

“Duan Wu Dao is a real genius, always cold-blooded, strong and smart. He has killed many people. It is said that when he became strong, he challenged his teacher... and then killed his own teacher. He seems to think that if a teacher is weaker than him, then he isn't qualified to be a teacher any longer. Many people hate him bitterly but nobody has ever dared to disobey him. He would kill anyone who dares to disobey him.”

Killing his own teacher... how cruel and heartless. He really has no moral values.

“If the crown prince is a genius and there is nobody stronger than him, it is a difficult situation but his brother the second son could also become tremendously strong. He is younger than the crown prince right now but he could become one of the eight officials in the future. He also seems to be a modest person who is appreciated by many.”

Lin Feng was slightly nodding as if he understood much more of the inner workings of the Imperial Clan as the discussion continued. Lin Feng now had a general idea of how things worked

in the Imperial Clan.

Duan Feng continued: “The crown prince is a genius that nobody dares disobey but the second sometimes will go against his brother. It is said that the two are not on the same wavelength but I don’t know too much about it. I heard these things from my father when he was still alive. You were talking about Duan Tian Lang. He is very close to the crown prince.”

“So that’s how it is.” said Lin Feng while nodding and then added: “So when Uncle Wang said that Duan Tian Lang had sent me it was because he was trying to destroy our new friendship. Because if I was close to Duan Tian Lang, I was indirectly on the side of the crown prince.”

“Precisely. That must have been his reasoning.” said Duan Feng while nodding.

All this trouble had happened because the second prince had recommended Duan Feng to help him study at the Celestial Academy.

Duan Feng had been in danger a few times yet the second prince had never shown himself.

“The second prince seems to be very smart. Please be careful.” warned Lin Feng.

“Hehe, there is nobody who dares disobey the crown prince.

Even if the second prince disobeys him, it doesn't mean that he can prevent him from doing things. Thus, the crown prince had most likely ordered people to kill me and that is within his power. However the second prince wouldn't try to help me and that's normal. I'm too unworthy for him to fight with the crown prince. That could lead to a disastrous situation between them for nothing." said Duan Feng while smiling wryly. He looked sad.

"Maybe the second prince and the crown prince never go out. Their way of handling affairs is to delegate tasks to various people. This is their way of doing things, that's all."

Lin Feng was still nodding. Lin Feng was really captivated by Duan Feng's words. Lin Feng was also impressed and astonished to hear such a young man talk with such eloquence. He was very smart for his age. He was right after all, the second prince and the crown prince were at the head of such a huge powerhouse filled with members ready to obey their orders at any given time.

"I have a question though. If all the members of the Duan Clan have a blood spirit, how come Duan Tian Lang and his son both use swords?"

"This is what I meant when I told you about the fact that the blood spirit could weaken from generation to generation. This is also why the Duan Clan members want to have so many children because they need to be sure to have at least one with a strong Blood Spirit which is dominant. If the Blood Spirit weakens, then the cultivator would have another spirit which would normally be dominant. That dominant spirit will combine itself with the blood spirit in its weakened state. That is probably what happened in

their case and why you noticed that they both use sword spirits.”

“So, even if the strength of the Blood Spirit is weak, they will all have dual spirits. How terrifying.” thought Lin Feng who felt a shiver run down his spine.

“As far as the Blood Spirit and its special strength are concerned, there are some extremely gifted cultivators who inherit a pure and unadulterated Blood Spirit whose strength can increase infinitely.” said Duan Feng. He looked strange at that moment and added: “Lin Feng, brother, I inherited from a pure and unadulterated Blood Spirit which is why I attracted the second prince’s attention.”

Lin Feng slightly nodded. Lin Feng had already guessed that Duan Feng was a prodigy and probably has a Blood Spirit that was extremely powerful. That is why he attracted the attention of two people: one who wanted to help him and considered him important and another who wanted to kill him.

Duan Feng smiled and said to Lin Feng: “Lin Feng, big brother, could it be that you don’t know what kind of spirit the Blood Spirit is?”

“I have never heard about the Blood Spirit before. I have never even seen Duan Tian Lang and his son use it. It doesn’t seem to be something that its possessors seem to enjoy showing to strangers.” said Lin Feng while smiling.

“Lin Feng, big brother, you saved my life twice already. We are not strangers anymore. You are like my family. Have a look at my

Blood Spirit!”

When Duan Feng finished talking, a strange Qi enveloped his body and then his spirit appeared behind his back.

There were three black doors floating calmly above his body. They diffused an extremely ancient Qi which felt like the Qi of a long dead era. These doors were open and they led into endless dark holes. It was impossible to see the end by looking at them.

Lin Feng was blankly staring at these three doors. Then, a strangely familiar impression invaded him.

“Lin Feng, big brother, if you ever meet members of the Duan Clan in the future then you really have to be careful. Our spirit is called Sealed Doors. It can confine and seal other people’s power and strength behind these doors and even seal their life. The more seals you have, the stronger and the more powerful your spirit and your strength becomes. The second prince personally has five seals. He is extremely powerful. It is said that one of our ancestors could seal the souls of five thousand people in a single strike.”

“When a cultivator uses this ability, a seal appears on the opponent’s body as a personal mark of the one who carried out the attack. Then, either his strength or his spirit is sealed.”

Duan Feng was speaking slowly... and Lin Feng was shaking. Meng Qing and Duan Feng were suddenly astonished and were staring blankly at Lin Feng.

“That is... the Sealed Door!” Lin Feng was speechless. A strong Qi was emanating from his body. Suddenly, he remembered where he had felt that Qi. It was when he was a child and the victim had been his father, Lin Hai. The seal had appeared between his eyebrows!

Chapter 106: The Prodigy of the Duan Clan

If Lin Hai had the mark of a Sealed Door between his eyebrows, it meant that Lin Feng's father had come into conflict with a member of the Duan Clan.

Before leaving Yangzhou City, Lin Hai had told Lin Feng that he was going to the..... Imperial City.

Lin Feng's memories were a bit chaotic but he remembered that his father hated the members of the Duan clan and vice-versa. Lin Feng's father probably hadn't gone to the Imperial City for pleasure or for a short holiday. It was most likely he was going to settle a conflict.

“Did you run into danger for me father? This time, I'm coming to the Imperial City and I will definitely find you.” Lin Feng didn't know how his father had provoked the Duan clan. He also didn't know why there were tensions between them and his father. If he found his father, he would definitely try to understand what had occurred in the past between him and the Duan clan.

Lin Feng had suddenly remembered that his father had never told him about his mother. Lin Feng found that it was very strange.

“Lin Feng.” Meng Qing was looking at Lin Feng and thought that he was acting strangely which is why she called out to him. Lin Feng was lost in thought but at that moment came back into consciousness. Lin Feng's thoughts were agitated because of all the

questions and possibilities. Lin Feng was surprised by Meng Qing and then said: “I’m alright. Duan Feng, when will we arrive in the Imperial City?”

“If we keep travelling at this speed and there are no problems on the road, then it should take another five or six days at a minimum.”

“I’ll drive the carriage later to let Jing Yun have some rest. We’ll make even quicker time that way.” said Lin Feng. Even though Duan Feng didn’t know what Lin Feng really meant, he still nodded. He was wondering why Lin Feng had been acting so strangely after he had seen the sealed doors.

But Lin Feng didn’t tell Duan Feng what was going through his head and Duan Feng wasn’t going to ask.

Duan Feng was right, even at full speed while travelling day and night, they would really need at least five or six days to arrive in the Imperial City.

Because they had taken another road to the Imperial City they had not come across any attackers. Maybe it was also because no one knew Duan Feng’s location any longer due to them removing the spy.

The Imperial City was vast but roads leading to it weren’t numerous. Actually, the entire city was surrounded by huge barriers and there was only one gate to enter it.

The gate was gigantic and majestic. It was made of incredibly strong precious materials. The gate had a width and a height of several hundreds of meters. At the top of the gate, there were multiple guards with spears.

The Imperial City was encircled by a huge moat filled with water and the only gate was accessible only after crossing a large stone bridge. This was the only way to access the city.

However the entrance gate of the Imperial City was securely closed. It would only open during the day for a few hours.

Pedestrians weren't bothered by that because outside of the Imperial City, there was another city which wasn't as big but still had millions of inhabitants. It was quite famous.

At that moment, a carriage had arrived outside the Imperial City. Lin Feng was the one driving it. They were precisely in the city next to the Imperial City. There was a myriad of restaurants and shops. The city was incredibly lively. Lin Feng thought that it was much better of an atmosphere than when inside Yangzhou City.

"There are so many people!" said Meng Qing who had opened the curtain inside the carriage and was looking out of the window.

"We are not in the Imperial City yet. This is the periphery but we're still close to the Imperial City so obviously there are many people." said Lin Feng while laughing from outside. Lin Feng was also convinced that there were so many people in the region at the moment because many of them hoped to be chosen to practice

their cultivation at the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue.

For the inhabitants of the Xue Yue Country, the creation of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue was a unique moment in the history of the country. It was going to change the life and destiny of thousands of people.

At that moment, nobody was paying attention to their carriage. Everybody was young and hoped to assist in the inauguration of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue and eventually be taken to study there.

“Meng Qing, you must be exhausted because of the long trip. Considering the gate isn’t open yet, it would be best to have a break and eat something.”

Lin Feng stopped near a restaurant. Duan Feng and Jing Yun came out of the carriage as well. The four of them entered the restaurant. In the middle, there was a huge tree and that tree was growing through the roof of the restaurant. There was a hole in the middle of the restaurant so you could also see the first floor. It was filled with people and many of them were either drinking tea or wine.

They immediately headed to the wooden stairs and went to the first floor because the restaurant was very crowded. What surprised Lin Feng though was that the restaurant, even though it was filled with people, was very calm. There were many people but they weren’t talking loud at all to the extent that you could almost perfectly hear the musician playing the guqin on the first floor.

“What a peaceful and serene restaurant. No wonder it has such a good reputation.” whispered Lin Feng. Even though that place wasn’t a luxurious one, it still looked elegant and refined. The decoration was also done with taste which gave its customers a perfect environment to taste their tea and wine in peace. It was definitely a perfect atmosphere.

“Lin Feng, big brother, there is one free table over there. What a coincidence.”

Duan Feng noticed a table near a window. The four of them went and sat there.

“Hello, how may I help you?” asked a waiter who had to come the four of them while smiling.

“We’ll have a big pot of the best wine that you have as well as your best tea, and some pickles.” ordered Lin Feng. Since Lin Feng was in that world, he hadn’t really tasted good food and drinks. At that moment, he had the opportunity so he seized it.

“Noted. Please wait for a moment.” said the waiter and left.

Lin Feng was listening to the other people’s conversations. Even though they were almost whispering, Lin Feng had the strength of the Ling Qi layer and his sense of hearing was thus extremely developed, and in general nobody would be revealing secrets in such a public place.

It seemed that everyone was only talking about thing: the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue. Lin Feng also heard that some people were mentioning the crown prince and the second prince.

“Bro Han, you’re saying that the Yun Hai Sect has been annihilated? Who could benefit from the destruction of the Yun Hai Sect?”

At that moment, a conversation drew Lin Feng’s attention. Surprisingly, there were some people who were talking about the Yun Hai Sect.

“Well, the Yun Hai Sect and the Hao Yue Sect didn’t get along that well. It had been that way for several years already. The destruction of the Yun Hai Sect was thus a great reason to celebrate for the members of the Hao Yue Sect. The Ice and Snow Mountain Village, whose disciples all have an ice or snow spirit, as well as the Wan Shou Sect, whose disciples all have a beast spirit, could also benefit from it in a way because they will have more influence and attract more disciples. Besides, the Hao Yue Sect must be really happy now because they can clearly be defined as the strongest sect.”

“Hehe, Brother Han, you were right. So then Duan Tian Lang went to annihilate the Yun Hai Sect himself...That is the price to pay when you refuse to send outstanding disciples to the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue like all the other big sects did. Duan Tian Lang is really powerful.”

These people sounded proud and arrogant. They also seemed to be happy and excited about the destruction of the Yun Hai Sect. They were talking very loudly.

At that moment, many people stopped talking and started staring at them. These two people were laughing loudly while talking but when they noticed that almost everyone was staring at them, they stopped smiling.

“Ridiculous.” A voice filled the restaurant. Suddenly, everyone turned around and stared at the people moving towards the flight of stairs. Three silhouettes had appeared. One of them was a woman. She was extremely beautiful and was wearing very luxurious clothes. She also had a lot of jewellery made from precious stones all over her body and she was wearing a cheong sam. She was holding a soft black iron staff in her hand and she looked extremely domineering.

Behind her were two men who looked extremely calm.

“You are only a mouse who can only see an inch... yet still thinks it can perceive both the past and future. How ridiculous.”

Everyone was surprised by the woman talking so loudly. She shouted: “Young people don’t understand anything and never know when they should talk about certain things. Then they never want to bear the consequences of their actions and don’t want to be punished for their mistakes.”

“Face Slap.” said the woman. Immediately, an illusion appeared

behind her back and slapped the owner of the voice who had just contradicted her. Blood was spilling out of the corner of his mouth.

“He only annihilated the Yun Hai Sect, that’s all. The big sects have all taken the techniques that the Yun Hai Sect used to have. Not only has it enabled a great deal of people to acquire great skills and techniques but it also helps other sects gain more influence. It is also a good thing for everybody that the Yun Hai Sect doesn’t have too much power in the country. Those who have been chosen to go to the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue will also be able to use some of those skills and techniques that they have taken from the Yun Hai Sect. Besides, there are also some former disciples of the sect who have betrayed it and can also use these skills and techniques. Nobody cares about the Yun Hai Sect.”

The woman was looking at the other man. That man didn’t look good but he kept listening to the woman and didn’t dare interrupt her or even refute her statements. Therefore, he only nodded wisely.

“Most of the sects accepted to send some of their disciples to the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue, not because they were happy about the benefits it would bring to them but rather because they were scared of the consequences it could have. They were scared to end up like the Yun Hai Sect and vanish from the maps of the country. They all understood that there was no way out. That is why they accepted to help and destroy the Yun Hai Sect. That is how everything happened.”

“But even if the Yun Hai Sect has already been annihilated, it won’t last long before the other sects have to go through the same

thing. In the Xue Yue Country, there can only be the Imperial Clan. There isn't enough space for other spheres of influence especially when they have power. Sooner or later, the last group of people who will exercise authority in the Xue Yue Country will be the Imperial Clan."

Lin Feng heard the woman say those things and laugh. What she said was partially true but was also too partial. It seemed like she was a supporter of the Imperial Clan.

"Since the Imperial Clan is so strong, why do they need to resort to such underhanded methods? Why do they need to annihilate sects if they are already so powerful?"

A voice spread in the atmosphere. Lin Feng was astonished. The one who had said that surprisingly was Jing Yun. She really took the woman's words to heart and decided to contradict the woman.

The woman slowly turned around and stared at Jing Yun. She smiled coldly and said: "You are right, anyone who contradicts them should be annihilated... like what you're doing now....."

When the woman finished talking, a soft black iron staff shadow appeared and moved straight towards Jing Yun's cheek.

When Lin Feng saw that that woman was attacking Jing Yun, his pupils shrank and he was staring at that rude woman. Lin Feng then said to the woman: "She only said that randomly. Are you not overreacting a little bit?"

“There are some things which cannot be said. If someone says such things, they have to pay the price for it because most of the time, people who say such things are worthless.”

The woman was coldly looking at Lin Feng and continued: “You! you don’t have the qualifications to talk that way either.”

Chapter 107: To Slap or Not to Slap?

When Lin Feng heard the young woman, his expression became even colder. He had never needed anyone's permission to speak.

What was wrong with that young woman? Saying over and over again that other people didn't have the right to express themselves? What about her? Why would repeatedly attacking people with her staff give her the right to express herself?

"That woman is as vicious as a viper. Even though she's beautiful, her beauty is hidden by that disgusting behaviour of hers."

Lin Feng had bitter feelings. He didn't bear a grudge or hate her but he was exasperated by the fact that Jing Yun was going to be punished for having said an innocent sentence.

Lin Feng had to block the woman's attack even if she attacked him afterwards because of it.

She kept contradicting other people but she didn't want to allow other people to contradict her. She was extremely rude.

"You want to die." shouted the young woman furiously. Her staff whistled the atmosphere.

"First Ling Qi layer and she thinks that she has the power to bully others?" thought Lin Feng surprised.

Lin Feng lifted his hand and started his eight strikes of desolation. Six intense and violent strikes spread through the atmosphere. He didn't need to carry out a full eight strikes against her. Six strikes were enough for her to be completely overwhelmed.

Lin Feng's Eight Strikes of Desolation was an extremely powerful attack which had stopped the staff moving forwards.

"Little sister, be careful!" shouted the two young men behind her as they launched attacks towards Lin Feng's Eight Strikes of Desolation. When the combined attacks of the staff and the two men collided with the six strikes, they vanished. People in the restaurant were frightened by the exchange and started moving away.

"It seems like these people have a high status in society. They are so young and yet they have all reached the Ling Qi layer.

The crowd was surprised because these people had all broken through to the Ling Qi layer. They were stupefied. In the Imperial City and its periphery, cultivators of the Ling Qi layer weren't considered as extremely strong cultivators. However, considering the age Lin Feng, the young woman and her two guards, it was a very high achievement. The young woman's two guards were about twenty years old. Lin Feng and the young woman were about sixteen years old, yet they had all reached the Ling Qi Layer. They were probably geniuses.

“You surprisingly dare to attack me?!” said the young woman who had been projected backwards by Lin Feng’s attack. She looked furious and was fixedly staring at Lin Feng.

Lin Feng groaned. He stood up and suddenly, an extremely oppressive Qi started spreading through the restaurant.

“You want to kill me and I’m not allowed to retaliate, is that what you mean?”

Lin Feng thought that it was ridiculous. In the world, there were some people who constantly humiliated and bullied other people but they couldn’t stand being provoked themselves.

The young woman’s two guards were vigilantly staring at Lin Feng. They could feel that Lin Feng was a dangerous existence.

“If you want to live, slap yourself and get the hell out of here.” Shouted the young woman. The young woman’s face looked evil. She had never been humiliated in the outer part of the Imperial City.

“If I want to live? I don’t know what you mean.” said Lin Feng while smiling coldly and started walking forwards. At that moment, a strong Qi pierced the atmosphere straight towards the young woman.

“You say that I am not qualified to open my mouth but I would like to ask you a question. What gives a useless piece of trash like

you the right to humiliate other people? Constantly slapping other people and even slapping those who are close to you.”

When Lin Feng finished talking, he moved his hand and carried out another Eight Strikes of Desolation attack. This time, seven brutal and violent strikes rushed forward.

“How dare you!” said the two guards whose expression had drastically changed. Suddenly their Qi and force emerged from their bodies. They were using all their strength to stop these seven strikes.

A vortex spread throughout the atmosphere and made rumbling sounds. Everybody was staring at them. That young man was extremely powerful. That young woman had provoked him without thinking about the consequences.

“Get the hell out of here!” shouted Lin Feng. His Eight Strikes of Desolation attack was moving at full speed through the air. It looked nobody could resist such an attack.

“BOOM BOOM BOOOM...!”

The atmosphere was filled with an extremely loud rumbling noise as if there was an earthquake which had just been summoned forth. The young woman’s two guards were blown into the air and then heavily fell down onto the floor. Everybody was astonished. Not only was that young boy only sixteen years old but he was also extremely powerful. Saying that he was a genius was definitely not an exaggeration. It seemed like the external part of the Imperial

City was also home to some crouching tigers.

The young woman was blankly staring at her two guards who were had been sent flying by the attack. Her evil expression had disappeared from her face.

“You.....” said the young girl looking at Lin Feng who was walking towards her. She wanted to talk but the words wouldn’t come out of her mouth.

“Answer my question. You say that I am not qualified to express my opinion, well, what about you?” Lin Feng was walking towards her. He didn’t like bully or threaten other people but he could not stand seeing other people get bullied.

Lin Feng knew what kind of person that young woman was. He was used to such people. If you gave her an inch then she would take a mile and besides, she would definitely bully other people even more. Could Lin Feng tolerate the fact that Jing Yun had been humiliated by such a person?

Lin Feng had no choice but to get involved.

Lin Feng wasn’t a person that you could bully or humiliate without regard. He had a strong personality and would resist anyone if they were unfair.

“Don’t you know who I am?” The young woman was terrified by Lin Feng’s Qi. She was slowly stepping back. She hated herself for

not having brought along stronger guards.

Of course, she also wouldn't have thought that anybody would surprisingly dare oppose her like Lin Feng. She thought that Lin Feng was probably a foreigner.

“Who you are? What does that have to do with me?” said Lin Feng while smiling coldly and then added: “Only a piece of trash relies on their social status to bully and attack other people. What you don't know though is that if you attempt to slap the wrong person, they might slap you back.”

“Slap me? That's a joke. Nobody has ever dared to slap me.” said the young woman coldly.

“Is that so?” said Lin Feng with a cold smile on the corner of his mouth and then added: “What an honor, I will become the first to slap you.”

“You would dare to attack me?” said the young woman looking angrier and angrier. She continued: “If you touch me, you will die such a tragic death that you will not even need a grave for burial.”

“There are some things which cannot be said, otherwise one has to pay the price for it. You said that a moment ago, do you remember?” said Lin Feng with the same ice-cold expression on his face. He then made another step and added: “Besides, there are some things which you cannot do without regard for other people. Now you will have to bear the consequences of your actions and be punished for your mistakes. You want me to slap my own face?

Well, Then I will slap yours.”

“Would you dare?”

“Why wouldn’t I?” said Lin Feng who had finally arrived in front of the young woman. He then lifted his hand into the air.

“Stop.” said a sudden voice.

The crowd then looked at who had spoken. It was a lithe and graceful woman. She was carrying a guqin. She was on the second floor and was heading to the flight of stairs. She looked so graceful and elegant that it seemed impossible to criticize her.

Many people were looking at her. She was the owner of the place. Her name was Qing Xin. She looked like such a pure and innocent person, however she was also stunningly beautiful. Her restaurant definitely had a well-deserved reputation.

That woman looked more mature than the arrogant young woman which made her even more beautiful and glamorous.

“It seems like the battle is not going to happen.” Many people were looking at the beautiful woman who was personally getting involved. The tensions had definitely been started because of that arrogant young woman. Nobody liked her but considering her social status, it was hard to oppose her.

At that moment, Lin Feng turned around and looked at that

woman. She was about twenty. He thought that thd woman was particularly attractive.

But Lin Feng's expression didn't change much. Even if that woman was very beautiful, Meng Qing was much more beautiful than her. Besides, Lin Feng had been spending so much time with Meng Qing and they got along really well, so Lin Feng was started to be immune to other women's beauty.

"Is there a problem?" asked Lin Feng calmly yet sounding cold and indifferent.

Qing Xin looked at Lin Feng. She looked angry. People who talked to her coldly and indifferently were rare.

"You shouldn't touch her." said the woman in a soft and gentle tone which was hiding a certain authority. Lin Feng knew that that woman wouldn't accept any other answer than a positive and agreeing one.

"Is it an order?" said Lin Feng on the same cold and detached tone while frowning.

When she heard Lin Feng, Qing Xin was surprised. Immediately, she started smiling and said: "No, it's not an order."

"Just don't make me lose face. How does that sound?"

"I understand." said Lin Feng while smiling indifferently. He

then asked: “But do we know each other?”

“Huh?” Qing Xin was looking at Lin Feng with the same gentle smile on her face and said: “Well, this is the first time we meet, but.....”

“Alright, we don’t know each other it seems.” said Lin Feng while interrupting Qing Xin and then said: “If we don’t know each other, why should I care about you losing face?”

Lin Feng’s words astonished everybody. That guy was so aggressive! How could he talk to Qing Xin that way? Besides, she was so beautiful.

Obviously, Lin Feng didn’t know what everyone was thinking and he then continued: “When she started provoking my friend, you didn’t come out at that moment, right?”

“When she was provoking and slapping other people or when she ordered me to slap my own face, you also didn’t come out, right?”

“She’s been acting arrogantly and setting herself above everyone else this whole time. She’s been humiliating and bullying a whole bunch of people. She wanted me to slap my own face... so now, what are you doing? Why did you suddenly come out? What do you think you’re doing?” continued Lin Feng. Qing Xin was speechless.

Lin Feng’s words resonated through the entire restaurant.

Everybody was speechless. They were all thinking about what Lin Feng had just said. Maybe that he was right. A moment before, they had thought that because Qing Xin had come out, Lin Feng had to be quiet and respectful to her. However, at that moment, nobody thought that way anymore because everybody agreed with Lin Feng.

Why had she suddenly come out? Why hadn't she come out earlier when that arrogant young woman was harassing the others?

Qing Xin had been slapped by Lin Feng but it was an invisible one. Lin Feng's words had slapped her in the face. She hadn't respected Lin Feng by coming out at that moment. She had even attempted to humiliate Lin Feng.

"People need to show respect if they want to continue living in dignity." said Lin Feng with a resplendent smile on his face. Suddenly, he landed a thunderous slap against the young woman's cheek. Under the crowds amazement he slowly lowered his hand.

This was a real slap with a shocking sound on impact.

Chapter 108: One Terrifying Step!

Qing Xin's restaurant was suddenly invaded by a heavy silence.

Everybody was staring at the young woman's cheek. Lin Feng's hand had left a big red mark on her cheek. One could even see each of his individual finger marks on her face.

Nobody would have thought that Lin Feng would actually slap such a beauty. He had slapped without the least bit of hesitation and with a good amount of force.

He hadn't only humiliated the young woman by doing this. He had also made Qing Xin lose face.

The crowd was blankly staring at the young woman. She slowly raised her hand and then touched her cheek. She had the feeling that her cheek was on fire.

Her family name was Duan. She was a member of the Imperial Clan. Nobody had ever dared slap her and at that moment, Lin Feng had slapped her. She had totally lost face.

She looked so furious that her face had turned grotesque.

"You shouldn't have done that." said Qing Xin breaking the heavy silent that had invaded the restaurant. She was still looking elegant and graceful. It seemed like she never lost her temper.

“What you mean is that I should have let her humiliate everybody without doing anything?” said Lin Feng while staring at Qing Xin. He sounded just as calm as her but that was Lin Feng’s temperament. He was actually boiling with fury inside.

“Even if she attacks you and humiliates you, you cannot fight back. Besides, it hadn’t even gone that far yet.” replied Qing Xin.

“Well, sorry for having disappointed you.” said Lin Feng coldly and ironically. Lin Feng thought that Qing Xin was a fake. She looked graceful, elegant, pure and innocent on the outside but she was actually arrogant and unfair. Lin Feng didn’t like her at all.

“The problem is not about me being disappointed or not... it is actually close to what you said earlier, there are some things you cannot do unless you are ready to bear the responsibility for it and pay the price.”

“You are wrong.” said Lin Feng while shaking his head and then added: “Not only are you wrong but you are also extremely stupid. In the eyes of people like you, you think ordinary people like me are worthless. You can humiliate, bully and attack us while we are not allowed to strike back. Even if we don’t do or say anything, the situation is always the same, you bully us ordinary people. Attacking or not attacking, it’s all the same since the consequences are the same. The consequences are not that serious anyway. What should I have done then anyway? Escape after having been humiliated?”

“Could it be that...? Do you really think that you will be able to leave without paying the price for what you have done? The

consequences, unlike what you're saying, will be serious."

"I know that there is a price to pay for such actions but I will not be the one to pay the price, I can guarantee that." Lin Feng glanced at the young woman when he said that he wouldn't be the one paying the price. He was talking extremely calmly which surprised everybody.

What Lin Feng meant was clear to everybody. If she kept provoking him, the young girl should first think about her own safety and escaping this place alive!

Even Qing Xin was surprised and was blankly staring at Lin Feng. Was he really only a sixteen year old boy? He was so cold, so mature...

"Are you threatening me!?" said the young woman who had understood what Lin Feng meant. The mark left by Lin Feng's hand on her cheek still hadn't disappeared.

"Oh, you are not as stupid as I thought... you understood that I was threatening you. Congratulations!" said Lin Feng sarcastically.

Lin Feng thought that the young woman was pathetic. She was walking around and acting like a warlord. She was probably doing that everywhere. Lin Feng thought that relying on the social status of one's family was stupid if one wasn't strong enough to protect their own life. If one met a madman, one would be in a critical situation regardless of social status. Not everyone was able to brave death, most people would rather cling to life which is why she had

not been punished before. For some people though, dignity and honor were more important than life.

“Maybe when you know who she is, you will not be as calm and serene as now.” said Qing Xin. She wanted to scare Lin Feng. She wasn’t used to seeing such young people remain so calm and have so much self-control.

“Tell me.”

“Her family name is Duan.” said Qing Xin while fixedly staring at Lin Feng. She had the impression that Lin Feng was going to react even a little and give himself away.

At the same time, the young woman was staring at Lin Feng was well. She hoped that Lin Feng would be terrified and would kneel down.

Unfortunately for them, they were going to be disappointed again. Lin Feng’s expression eventually didn’t change and he still looked as cold and detached as before.

“A member of the Imperial Clan?” Lin Feng didn’t look scared at all. Instead, he had a big smile on his face. He then said: “I also have a friend whose family name is Duan. He’s sitting there at our table. Even though he is a member of the Imperial Clan, he is much more modest and amiable than her. He doesn’t take advantage of his power to bully other people. He has not weak so he doesn’t need to manifest authority to feel superior. He knows that acting that way would just be a humiliation for the Duan Clan.”

The young woman's face suddenly changed. She had tried to humiliate Lin Feng again and in the end, she had been humiliated yet again.

Qing Xin was also puzzled. She looked at the people sitting at Lin Feng's table. One person drew her attention. It was Meng Qing. Meng Qing was wearing a fine veil on her face so Qing Xin believed even more that Meng Qing was the member of the Duan Clan. Her posture and other small things made Meng Qing look very elegant and noble.

There was an aura of nobility which emerged out of Meng Qing which really made her look like a member of the Duan Clan. Qing Xin seemed less confident after having looked at Meng Qing.

Suddenly, Qing Xin turned around and looked at the second floor. On the second floor, there was a small room. She was the only one who could go there.

But at that moment, it seemed like there were people in that room.

“We have never seen them.”

It was a simple sentence but it made everyone feel frightened.

We have never seen them?”

Lin Feng had said that he had come with a friend whose family name was also Duan. A second after, a mysterious voice came from the room on the second floor had said that they hadn't seen them. That was probably referring to Lin Feng's sentence and these people had probably said that to refute what he had said.

“Seems like the rumors are true. Qing Xin is his wife.” whispered some people surprised.

It was surprising that Qing Xin had played the guqin for everybody. Usually, she only played for him.

When the young woman heard these words, the arrogant expression had disappeared from her face. That was him!

In front of him, she was nothing. She was too insignificant too mention. He was like the sun and she was just the candle light.

When Qing Xin heard that sentence. She slightly nodded. Since he had never seen them, then these people were not important.

“Do you have anything else to add?” asked Qing Xin while looking at Lin Feng in a cold and detached way as if she was waiting for Lin Feng to explain what he had said.

Lin Feng slightly shook his head.

Qing Xin said: “Since you are in my restaurant, I would like to “invite” you to leave now. Thank you.”

When she Qing Xin finished talking, she started playing music loudly as if she wanted people to forget about that story. At that moment, two people appeared, one was standing on her left and the other on her right. Lin Feng was still standing calm looking calm and suddenly an oppressive force crashed onto his body.

These two silhouettes belonged to the people who had been talking in the room on the second floor.

“Extremely strong. I do not want to get involved in a fight with them.” Lin Feng could feel how strong these people were. He then looked in the direction of the second floor and suddenly thought that the people he encountered could be the people that Duan Feng had told him about.

Lin Feng was only trying to guess. Could it be that these people were friends with the cruel and evil crown prince? Or with the warm and friendly second prince?

“Who is annoying my daughter?”

At that moment, a strong and loud voice spread through the atmosphere. It was coming from the room on the second floor. A silhouette then appeared and came down the stairs from the second to the first floor. That person looked incredibly imposing. He was only standing there and people could already feel oppressed by the Qi emerging from his body.

It was a middle-aged man. Qing Xin nodded and he then

immediately looked at the two people standing next to her. They slightly moved their head and then stopped. For a moment, it seemed like nothing had ever happened.

“Daddyyyy!” said the arrogant young woman. She wanted to walk towards him but realized that she couldn’t. A strong and cold Qi was enveloping her body and she was couldn’t move at all. It seemed like if she tried to resist, she could die at any moment.

“How audacious!” said the middle-aged man walking towards Lin Feng, while releasing some oppressive Qi.

At that moment, the entire restaurant was filled with an oppressive Qi. Some of the people were ready to collapse because of that extremely strong Qi and many were trying to move farther away.

Lin Feng’s body was being more and more oppressed with each passing second. He had the feeling his bones were going to crack. He had the feeling that he was carrying an object of several tons on his back.

“Do you regret now?” said Qing Xin cold and detached. She hoped to see Lin Feng express negative emotions and feelings such as fear or resentment.

“There are some things, when you do them, you never regret them.” said Lin Feng while smiling unperturbedly. He sometimes looked and sounded like a noble hero.

“Being drunk, singing, talking loudly etc... all of these are humane things to do. But human beings need dignity, otherwise life is useless.”

There were some things which had to be done even if they were wrong.

“Even if you regret, I will not give you any chance.” said the middle-aged man when he saw the mark on his daughter’s cheek. More strong and oppressive Qi emerged from his body and moved straight to Lin Feng.

“Getting drunk, singing and talking loudly, etc.” whispered Meng Qing repeating Lin Feng’s words. She looked perplex.

Meng Qing stood up and went towards Lin Feng. She then stayed behind him. She was looking at all these people attacking and oppressing Lin Feng’s body at the same time. A light flashed in her eyes.

“So many people attacking a single person, is that a normal thing for you people to do?” said Meng Qing slowly. In the blink of an eye, she moved at the speed of light and appeared in front Lin Feng in one step.

At that moment, an incredibly and astonishing energy invaded the atmosphere and made everything and everyone in the restaurant freeze. People’s hearts were pounding. They were terrified and frozen in terror.

“Everybody else, get lost.”

The atmosphere was getting colder and colder. People were shaking from head to toe in fear.

Chapter 109: Luo Xue the High Official

“How powerful! That’s the strength of the Xuan Qi layer!”

The entire crowd had the feeling that they were literally frozen. Especially the arrogant young woman who was stood close to Meng Qing. A layer of ice had appeared on her body and it was slowly getting thicker with each passing second. This power could make an entire lake or river freeze solid. What a monstrously terrifying power!

In the entire Xue Yue Country, any cultivator of the Xuan Qi layer was considered as an amazing talent and an extremely powerful cultivator. They could easily become elders in the biggest sects of the country or in some sects... Patriarchs.

Even the fine veil that was covering Meng Qing’s face was covered with ice. The Qi emerging from her body was extremely pure. How old was she? Nobody had paid attention to that detail. Suddenly, her eyes looked even more beautiful than usual.

Qing Xin felt a shiver run down her spine. She had tried to scare Lin Feng but it hadn’t worked. However, at that moment, her face underwent a drastic change. She suddenly looked frightened and her face had filled with terror. Qing Xin had noticed that Meng Qing was amazing when she first laid eyes upon her. Some people didn’t need to talk to display their abilities, they gave an aura which allowed people to sense their strength unconsciously. Meng Qing was one of these incredibly powerful people. She was fascinating.

But the scariest thing was her strength. Everybody could feel the cold sweat dripping down their backs, with a single movement they could all die. She had taken one terrifying step and it seemed that the entire restaurant was about to completely freeze.

Lin Feng was standing behind Meng Qing but he couldn't feel any of the cold Qi emerging from her body. However, he had been able to sense how powerful Meng Qing was from the Qi within the atmosphere.

Lin Feng was astonished. Not only was this girl extremely beautiful but she was also extremely strong. How was such a thing possible? Besides, she didn't seem to be aware of how incredibly strong she was.

"I knew it. She's been living in the Black Wind Mountain for her entire life. She obviously had to be extremely strong." Thought Lin Feng while smiling. Such a monstrously beautiful and strong woman was travelling with him. It seemed like the future was going to be brighter for him.

But a girl had come to protect him. How could he not feel slightly disturbed by that?

"Yu Er!" shouted the middle-aged man loudly. He took a few steps towards the arrogant young woman, grabbed her and moved far away from Meng Qing.

That girl was terrifying.

“What the hell are you still doing here?” said Meng Qing coldly. The middle-aged man’s pupils shrank and his facial expression looked extremely hideous.

“Let’s go.” said the middle-aged man while moving his hand as a sign that it was time to leave. They left using the window and not the door on the ground-floor.

“You two, get lost too.” said Meng Qing looking at the two men on Qing Xin’s left and right. Her voice was cold as always. She didn’t seem like she was losing temper at all.

“This is my restaurant.” said Qing Xin.

“We have been disrespected in your restaurant so I don’t really care whose restaurant it is.”

Meng Qing took a step forward and raised her slender white hand in the air. At that moment, an extremely strong yet cold Qi invaded the atmosphere of the entire restaurant. It suddenly seemed like the entire restaurant was caving in under the pressure. There was no sound but the restaurant was being buried into oblivion. Suddenly, multiple rays of sun could be felt by the people standing inside the restaurant.

Meng Qing had barely moved her hand and the entire restaurant had been completely destroyed. There hadn’t even been a sound and the restaurant crumbled. Lin Feng was amazed by her power. His mouth was wide open but he was speechless.

This girl was way too strong!

Outside on the road, the crowd could see that Qing Xin's restaurant had been destroyed. Rays of light and a strong Qi had invaded the atmosphere around the restaurant. Many people stopped by and were looking at the restaurant.

“What is going on? Has Qing Xin's restaurant been attacked?”

“How audacious, suddenly daring to destroy Qing Xin's restaurant.”

Everybody was looking at the restaurant and was astonished. Qing Xin's back was soaked with cold sweat. That girl was so strong. Revenge would be impossible.

But it still wasn't a good idea to provoke the people on the second floor.

At that moment, a silhouette fell from the sky where the second floor used to be and landed on the ground.

That person was wearing black clothes and had a grave yet stern face. He was coldly looking at Lin Feng and the others.

“Duan Feng said that the crown prince was aggressive, brutal, heartless etc. but this man doesn't seem to be such a person so he can't be the crown prince. Besides, the second prince is supposed to be warm, friendly and smart but the Qi emerging out of his body

doesn't fit with that nature of person. So who could that person be?" thought Lin Feng. He was convinced that this person wasn't either the crown or the second prince but he was probably another member of the Duan Clan.

"Xuan Qi layer." whispered the man in black clothes. He then said firmly: "You are strong but being a cultivator of the Xuan Qi layer doesn't allow you to do whatever you wish in the Imperial City and its surroundings. I will not tolerate such actions."

When Meng Qing heard him threaten her, she made a very strange face and said: "What the hell are you still doing here?" When she finished talking, Meng Qing raised her hand again.

"Let's go." said the man in black clothes immediately grabbing Qing Xin and leaving.

"Speaking so much bullshit." said Meng Qing while putting her hand down. The man in black clothes heard her from the sky and was extremely furious.

Lin Feng was laughing. That girl really didn't like talking, instead she directly attacked. Some people were laughing at the man who had just left because he had threatened them but in the end had retreated like the rest. He probably did not have the strength to back up his words against Meng Qing.

Meng Qing turned around and looked at the others. The rest of her group were looking at her as she was a monster.

“Meng Qing, sister, you are so... incredibly strong.” said Duan Feng while making a wry smile. He already thought that Lin Feng was monstrously skilled but Meng Qing was surprisingly even stronger. It was almost as if she wasn’t a human being. How was she practicing her cultivation?

Jing Yun’s beautiful eyes were wide open in shock. Immediately after, a sorrowful expression appeared in her eyes. She felt ashamed of her inferiority. Meng Qing was stronger and much more beautiful than her.

“Are you a human being or a monster?” whispered Lin Feng. That girl was way too amazing.

“Nie Xiao Qian.” whispered Meng Qing looking strange. Immediately after, she walked towards the table and sat down.

“.....”

Lin Feng was speechless.

“Lin Feng, big brother, who is Nie Xiao Qian?” asked Duan Feng looking confused and staring at Lin Feng.

“The sister of a supernatural entity.” whispered Lin Feng which made Duan Feng shiver from head to toe.

Lin Feng sat down next to Meng Qing and whispered: “You are so amazingly strong, why have you never told me?”

“You never asked.” replied Meng Qing which made Lin Feng’s eyes roll... He felt depressed.

“Well, how strong are you?” asked Lin Feng.

Meng Qing looked at Lin Feng. A light flashed in her eyes and she said: “I’m not telling you.”

“.....”

“But I should be strong enough to protect you from any dangers.” added Meng Qing which made Lin Feng feel much better all of a sudden. Such a wonderful and beautiful woman said she would protect him. That wasn’t a bad idea.

“But after this, you should tell me at least five stories a day from your home.” continued Meng Qing which stupefied Lin Feng. Five stories a day....

When Duan Feng and Jing Yun heard Lin Feng and Meng Qing’s conversation, their minds were filled of questions. Nie Xiao Qian? The sister of a supernatural being? Lin Feng’s home?

Jing Yun was feeling particularly bad to see that Lin Feng and Meng Qing were already so close and intimate. Besides, she couldn’t understand anything from what they were saying. Jing Yun felt her heart grow sick.

“Maybe only a girl like Meng Qing can make Lin Feng fall in love with her.” thought Jing Yun. Suddenly, a smile appeared on her face. For Jing Yun, Lin Feng was an outstanding genius.

The people who were in the restaurant were leaving one after the other. Lin Feng and the others, against all expectations, were calm and unperturbed. They ate their fill, drank a lot and then left what remained of Qing Xin’s destroyed restaurant.

At that moment, a myriad of people were moving towards the Imperial City. The gate of the Imperial City was about to be opened.

Lin Feng was driving the carriage towards the Imperial City. A short time after, they arrived in front of the magnificent and grandiose gate.

“That gate and the gate of the Yun Hai Sect really have nothing in common.” whispered Lin Feng. There was a huge queue on the stone bridge leading to the gate of the Imperial City.

“Look! There are some people entering from the sky! How strong!” the entire crowd, who was queuing on the ground could not help but stare at them with envious eyes. They had raised their head and could see people were entering the city from the sky.

Lin Feng raised his head and saw gigantic black wings in the sky. They were creating whirlwinds in the air as they moved through the air.

“It looks like a Legendary Roc? Could it be Chu Zhan Peng?” thought Lin Feng surprised. The person on the bird looked at the crowd on the ground and then entered the Imperial City at full speed.

“Chu Zhan Peng is really extraordinary. Looking down at the gate of the Imperial City like this and then directly entering into the Imperial City.” thought many people. He was extremely strong. Wherever he was, he was respected. Even the Imperial Clan members respected him. He could even enter the Imperial City like this and nobody would prevent him from doing so.

Those who were strong enough to fly had enough power to do as they wished. They could all enter the Imperial City without waiting.

“Chu Zhan Peng, wait for me!” said a distant voice in the sky. At that moment, snowflakes started falling from the sky. That person was wearing snow-white robes. Immediately after, that person followed Chu Zhan Peng and entered into the Imperial City.

“The high official Luo Xue!” said the crowd surprised. The Xue Yue Country had eight high officials. Six of these high officials were from the Imperial City and two were external. There was one in the Hao Yue Sect and one in the Ice and Snow Mountain Village. If the two external high officials came to the Imperial City, it meant that all of the high officials were going to have a meeting.

Chapter 110: Behind the Heavy Curtains

In the very center of the Imperial City there was a huge and magnificent palace.

Around the palace, there was a myriad of guards walking around.

That palace was the core of the Imperial City but also of the entire Xue Yue Country. That palace belonged to the Imperial Clan.

The rumors say that there are 8100 checkpoints in the palace. These checkpoints had heavy curtains which would need to be passed through. Only those who managed to go through all of these checkpoints could reach the inner palace.

At that moment, there was a silhouette walking inside the palace. That person was walking normally as if they were walking on a normal street. Nobody was obstructing their way.

That person was wearing black clothes. That man's facial expression was rigid and motionless like a mountain.

That man passed through various heavy curtains and arrived in front of a pond. By the pond, there was a bench where someone was sat as they fished in the pond.

That person was wearing simple white robe and looked very friendly. He was about twenty years old. The man in black clothes

and the one in the white robe looked similar. The man in the white robe was sitting on the bench and fishing, looked quite enigmatic.

The man in black clothes had arrived behind the man in the white robe and didn't say anything.

An instant later, the man in the white robes who was fishing suddenly started shaking, especially his hand and with a quick pull he suddenly pulled a silver fish out of the water, which landed next to him in his bamboo basket. The fish was about half a kilo. The way the man in white robes had caught that fish was both graceful and elegant. Immediately after that, a big smile had appeared on his face.

“Nan Shan, come, sit down.” said the young man in white robes to the man in black clothes while smiling warmly.

“Your Majesty.” said Nan Shan while bowing. He didn't sit down.

“Nan Shan, I haven't seen you in a while. What brings you here?”

“Hehe.” smiled Nan Shan while nodding his head and then said: “Your Majesty, Chu Zhan Peng and Luo Xue are here.”

“The Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue is about to be inaugurated so this is not at all surprising. You probably haven't come only to tell me this.”

The young man still had a warm and friendly smile on his face but he also looked very wise.

“His Majesty has a sixth sense and can see the future with supernatural accuracy. Today, Qing Xin’s restaurant was destroyed. I also met with two very interesting people.”

“Qing Xin’s restaurant? Her restaurant is quite a nice place to go. Nan Shan, Qing Xin is not a small girl anymore. When do you intend to marry her? I will gladly arrange for your wedding.”

The young man didn’t seem to be interested in what Nan Shan was saying. He rather changed the subject and started talking about Nan Shan’s private life.

The young man in black clothes looked grateful. His Majesty always unconsciously moved the hearts of other people. He was indeed a very kind man.

Qing Xin was the woman he liked so if the young man approved their union, the woman’s family had no choice but to accept it, no matter how illustrious they were. Therefore, the young man’s sentence had been enough to make Nan Shan’s heart beat faster with joy.

But Nan Shan thought that it wasn’t the right moment to talk about his wedding.

“Your Majesty, today, Duan Yu went to Qing Xin’s restaurant.

She acted childishly and made a scene and when she came across a sixteen year old young man, he slapped her.”

“Huh?” The young man smiled and said: “Well, that is a funny and interesting story. People who would dare slap her outside of the Imperial City are indeed rare. I am sure that Duan Lie helped her to deal with this situation. It is also unlikely that Qing Xin watched with folded arms, right?”

“Your Majesty, you are right. Everybody got involved but in the end, it wasn’t enough and the restaurant ended up being destroyed. I also had to escape with Qing Xin. There was a young teenager of the Xuan Qi layer.”

Nan Shan smiled which made the young man look even more interested in his story. The young man then said: “A teenager of the Xuan Qi layer. It’s impossible. What clan could he be from?”

“Your Majesty, I didn’t express myself clearly. There was indeed a teenager of the Xuan Qi layer but it was a young girl. She is extremely beautiful. She looks very delicate, innocent and graceful. The clan she comes from... Hmmmm.....”

Nan Shan was deliberately trying to make his story sound more interesting which made the young man laugh. The young man then said: “Nan Shan, you know how to keep me in suspense but that young girl of the Xuan Qi layer, what is her social status?”

“I really don’t know. I’ve never seen her before but I think that Your Majesty will definitely be more interested in that young

man.”

“Oh?” the young man was really curious at that moment. Who could be more interesting than a young girl of the Xuan Qi layer?

“What’s his name?”

“Lin Feng.” replied the man in black clothes.

“Lin Feng.” whispered the young man. “On the day when the Yun Hai Sect was destroyed, one of the disciples was saved and I’m pretty sure his name was Lin Feng.”

“Indeed. That’s him. The story of his life is even more interesting.....” said the man in black clothes keeping the young man in suspense.

“Tell me!” said the young man with excitement flashing in his eyes.

“Lin Feng is from Yangzhou City.” said the man in black clothes.

“Yangzhou City.... Lin Feng....” repeated the young man in a low voice. He thought for a few seconds and then his face became rigid. His eyes were sparkling and then he said: “Her son?!”

“Indeed. Her son.” nodded the man in black clothes.

The young man seemed fascinated and then said: “I’m indeed really interested in him. Please tell me more. By the way, Nan Shan, you should not tell too many people about this.”

“Your Majesty, I know what to do.” replied Nan Shan while smiling.

Lin Feng didn’t know that people were talking about him at that moment. One important thing was that Lin Feng didn’t have a social status in Yangzhou City or in the Imperial City. He was just an ordinary person with no powerful background to protect him.

The four of them got out of the carriage and were looking at the gigantic Celestial Academy. There were many cultivators walking by. Most of them looked excited and incredibly arrogant.

The name of the academy was written in huge, bold and flamboyant cursive calligraphy at the entrance of the city.

Under the arch of the entrance gate. There were some old men sitting on chairs and had tables in front of them. On the tables, they had ink and brushes.

People who arrived next to them gave them a letter which the old man signed. After that, the cultivators happily entered the Celestial Academy.

“Raaawwrrr.” At that moment, a ferocious beast roared which drew the attention of many people.

Everybody turned around and saw a woman in red robes sitting on a ferocious beast.

That ferocious beast was a Brown Goblin Lion. Its hair was thick and looked like flames. Its roaring sufficed to make anyone feel intimidated.

“Sitting on a Ling level ferocious beast. How imposing.”

Some people were amazed. Some of them looked jealous, some others looked envious.

“Zhong Ling!” At that moment, an illusion flew through the air and arrived behind the woman in red robes.

“A Moon Wolf... another ferocious beast of the Ling level.” the eyes of the people in the crowd shrank. They could only see a young man sitting on the back of that ferocious beast. The young man was about sixteen years old.

“The Celestial Academy really deserves its reputation.”

Everyone was astonished. Even though the Celestial Academy wasn't well known in the Imperial City, its reputation was obvious at that moment. It was also known for accepting only extremely outstanding disciples as well as disciples coming from the best clans and families of the country.

Of course, some of them weren't paying attention to the ferocious beasts. Some of the people only had eyes revealing determination and willpower to succeed.

“Duan Feng, it seems like we look a bit downtrodden.” said Lin Feng who was driving the carriage. They could feel the Qi released by the ferocious beasts. Suddenly, the horses of their carriage stopped. They refused to move further, scared of the ferocious beasts. Lin Feng smiled wryly and tried to make the horses move forward.

“Lin Feng, brother, I came here to practice cultivation and not for fun.” said Duan Feng while shaking his head and smiling.

At that moment, some people turned around and, while looking at Lin Feng, Duan Feng and the others, they said: “Another group of beggars has arrived. They look so miserable.”

Chapter 111: Conflicts

Lin Feng and the others coldly looked at those who were saying these things about them. They only saw that these people were smiling.

“What are you guys saying?” asked Duan Feng coldly.

But contrary to one’s expectations, Lin Feng immediately said: “Duan Feng, let’s go. Go and enter your name on the list.”

When he finished talking, Lin Feng continued driving the carriage forwards.

“Lin Feng, big brother.” said Duan Feng who was surprised while looking at Lin Feng who was smiling and shaking his head.

“There are so many idiots, can you afford wasting your Qi against so many idiots?”

Duan Feng was surprised. He hadn’t expected such a funny answer. He laughed and shook his head.

However, Lin Feng’s words made these people angry and they made a hideous face when they heard his words.

“You filthy beggar, if it wasn’t forbidden to make trouble near the Celestial Academy, I would cripple your cultivation.” said a

young man coldly.

However, Lin Feng just ignored him. He was starting to get used to idiots in this world.

“Zuo Qiu, whom are you arguing with?” said a voice which had come from behind Zuo Qiu. At that moment, Duan Yu’s staff had appeared.

“Nobody, a mere beggar, that’s all.” said Zuo Qiu indifferently. At that moment, Zuo Qiu jumped down from his Moon Wolf.

Even though Duan Lie’s status wasn’t high in the hierarchy of the Duan Clan, their family name was still Duan and they required respect from other people.

The vision they had of life was that people could be classified into different classes: lower, middle and upper classes. Their thoughts were strictly confined into that system. That was why they had insulted Lin Feng when they saw that Duan Yu had arrived.

Therefore, they could show that their social class was lower than that of Duan Yu but still higher than that of Lin Feng.

“Since he’s a beggar, there’s no need to get angry. Go and enter your name on the list.” said Duan Yu coldly. At that moment, the mark left by Lin Feng’s hand on her cheek had disappeared. Her house had enough pills so it was easy to cure such a small injury but her dignity had been affected and he had wounded her deep

within her heart. An emotional injury wouldn't be easy to cure.

One of the most horrible things for her is that such news spread quickly in the Imperial City. What would other people think about her?

Duan Feng arrived at the desk where the old men were. One of the old men immediately said: "Please give me your recommendation letter."

"Alright." replied Duan Feng and handed it over to the old man. The old man looked surprised, he raised his head and asked: "Your family name is Duan?"

"Indeed." replied Duan Feng.

"Oh, ok. Go over there and get your card then you can enter the academy. Of course, some people will welcome you when you arrive." said the old man while pointing at the place where Duan Feng could get his student card. Duan Feng nodded.

"Lin Feng, big brother, let's go inside." said Duan Feng to Lin Feng. Right after, the old man said: "How many people are you? Where are their letters of recommendation?"

Letters of recommendation?

Lin Feng and the others didn't have a letter of recommendation, how could they? Lin Feng shook his head and said: "We are just

accompanying him. We don't have letters of recommendation."

"If you don't have a letter of recommendation, you don't belong to the Celestial Academy and if you are not members of the academy, you are not allowed to go inside. Even family members cannot go inside. You can leave on your own." said the old man calmly but still sounding strict as if he was giving them an order.

Lin Feng had just realized that many people who had come there were of noble families but that nobody was accompanied by their group. That was probably because of that rule.

"Bloody beggars who can't understand the rules. They don't even have a letter of recommendation and are making fools of themselves." said Zuo Qiu who had arrived near them and heard the old man.

"Zuo Qiu is right. Where are these filthy beggars from? Such a disgrace." said a girl next to him whose name was Zhong Ling. All the words she said were harsh and poignant.

"Duan Yu, what do you think?" asked Zhong Ling to Duan Yu. She knew that Duan Yu was the most arrogant of all of them. She also thought that Duan Yu wouldn't hesitate and slap these lowly beggars.

But at that moment, Zhong Ling noticed that Duan Yu was staring at a certain young man's back. She was shivering in fear. She looked strange and was both angry and frightened at the same time.

Lin Feng turned around and saw Duan Yu. Lin Feng smiled which surprised Duan Yu.

“As expected from people who would be your friends. You and your friends are the same type of trash. Only bullshit comes out of their mouths just like it did from your mouth.” said Lin Feng coldly which made Zhong Ling and Zuo Qiu furious.

That beggar had suddenly dared to provoke them? Besides, he also dared to provoke Duan Yu, how audacious!

But Zhong Ling and Zuo Qiu looked at Duan Yu and saw that apart from looking embarrassed, she didn't look like she was planning to act. Duan Yu was usually so proud and easily lost her temper... but at that moment, she remained silent. Zhong Ling and Zuo Qiu were very surprised and found the situation extremely strange.

“Whose mouth are you talking about?” said Zhong Ling while staring at Lin Feng, when she saw that Duan Yu wasn't talking. The Lion on which she was sitting roared in anger.

Ling ferocious beasts were extremely smart and could feel their masters' emotions.

“No intelligence, stupid as hell... I really don't understand why the Celestial Academy would accept such trash.” said Lin Feng while shaking his head. He had humiliated them twice already. Lin Feng could tolerate certain things but these people really seemed

insatiable. He couldn't bear their ignorance anymore.

“A beggar like you who doesn't even have a letter of recommendation dares call in question the decisions of the Celestial Academy. You are really shameless. Today, even though the academy doesn't allow such things. I will slap you.” said Zhong Ling coldly. Nobody had ever dared called her a trash.

“That's enough! Today is the registration day of the Celestial Academy. Get lost.” said the old man who looked furious.

“Teacher, here is my letter of recommendation. Please.” said Zhong Ling who walked over to the old man. She was standing next to Lin Feng and gave her letter of recommendation to the old man.

When the old man saw the signature on her letter of recommendation, he seemed surprised. He then immediately said: “You can go and get your card over there. Then, you can enter the academy.”

“Don't be impatient.” said Zhong Ling while looking at Lin Feng. At that moment, Zuo Qiu also went to the old man to hand over his letter of recommendation.

The old man looked at it careful and said, while nodding his head: “Not bad, not even seventeen years old and already at the second Ling Qi layer. That Zuo Clan has given birth to a good young man.”

“Thank you, honorable teacher.” said Zuo Qiu while smiling and looking proud.

“Zuo Qiu.... However, don’t get too excited. There are many geniuses in the Celestial Academy... and next time, try and refrain from making the Zuo Clan lose face.”

“Of course, I understand. I won’t.” said Zuo Qiu while shaking his head. He then immediately glanced at Lin Feng and said coldly: “However, teacher, right now there is someone who deserves to be punished.”

A light flashed in the old man’s eyes while glancing at Lin Feng.

“Even though today is the registration day of the Celestial Academy and it is forbidden to create a disturbance, fighting against the people who don’t have letters of recommendation is indeed possible.” said the old man which surprised Lin Feng and the others. He then added: “The power and influence of the Celestial Academy is very wide.”

“If I don’t slap your filthy mouth, I don’t deserve to be a member of the Celestial Academy.” said Zuo Qiu while smiling. After all, those people didn’t even have a letter of recommendation and they were acting recklessly. They were asking for trouble.

At that moment, more and more people were coming closer to see what was going on. They wouldn’t have thought that some people would be causing trouble while next to the academy.

“Beggars will be beggars. They should be punished for being shameless.” said a young man in the crowd. He was wearing magnificent clothes and sounded extremely arrogant. These people thought that ordinary people should never be accepted to the Celestial Academy even if they were strong cultivators because cultivators who belonged to rich and powerful clans had more resources and more money to invest in cultivation goods. Therefore, poor cultivators, even if they were strong, could never reach the level of rich cultivators.

“What a bunch of trash. Only taking advantage of their power to bully other people. Apart from being able to buy extremely expensive pills to increase one’s cultivation power, what’s the point of being that wealthy?” said a voice in the crowd who contradicted all that the others were saying. That person was, on the contrary, despising cultivators who came from wealthy and noble clans. Two more people agreed with him. Different views and opinions were suddenly emerging amongst the people in the crowd.

In the Imperial City, there were many cultivators who came from wealthy and prestigious clans and families. Many of them were really arrogant. As time passed, conflicts and tensions were rising between the different social classes. That was something specific to the Imperial City. In other cities, such things almost never happened.

Chapter 112: Who's Slapping Who?

“Hmph, what is the point of talking so much shit? A good fight would be the best way to find out who is stronger than whom.” said some wealthy and noble cultivators in the crowd. There were some people who knew the Zuo Clan and its most outstanding junior cultivator, Zuo Qiu. Because he wasn’t even seventeen at the time and had already broken through to the second Ling Qi layer, Lin Feng, who wasn’t seventeen yet either, could never hope to defeat him.

“Hmph, challenging him, who doesn’t even have a letter of recommendation, is that really fair? People like us shouldn’t challenge weaker people.” said Zuo Qiu. He felt secure in the knowledge that he had backing.

“If you don’t dare, just say it and don’t try to find excuses. Zuo Qiu, just slap that guy a few times and show to the wealthy and noble cultivators that these beggars cannot compete with us.” said a young man in the crowd who had already been talking for a while about how strong the noble cultivators were. The young man who was talking was wearing yellow clothes and looked unbelievably arrogant. He seemed to be about eighteen years old.

“Don’t worry, Bai Ze. No need to tell me this. Even without you telling me this, I would still slap him and make him close that filthy mouth of his.” said Zuo Qiu while smiling.

“Haha, everything’s alright then. You just can’t afford to make the Zuo Clan lose face.” said Bai Ze with an enigmatic smile on his face. Even though Zuo Qiu was strong and had been accepted into

the academy, he still didn't attack Lin Feng even though he just had to stretch out his hand and slap him. Bai Ze was just wondering why Zuo Qiu had required so much time to act.

“Is it even possible for the Zuo Clan to lose face” said Zuo Qiu with his head held high and while looking at Lin Feng in a disdainful way. He then coldly said to Lin Feng: “If you slap your own face, I will not attack you.”

“I've rarely met such a moronic group of people.” Said Lin Feng while exasperated. He didn't even pay attention to Zuo Qiu. He was looking at Duan Yu who didn't even try to warn Zuo Qiu of the danger. Instead, she was calmly watching the scene and was waiting for the show to start.

Everybody was quickly going to learn about the fact that Lin Feng had slapped her but if Lin Feng showed his strength then at that moment, she wouldn't lose as much face because everybody would see how strong he was and people wouldn't think that she had been slapped by a random nobody.

“Moronic?” The crowd found Lin Feng intriguing and were getting more and more interested.

“Zuo Qiu, the one you called a beggar has just called you a moron.”

“Hehe, Zuo Qiu, seems like you're intimidated by this young man.” said another voice. These brutal comments had made Zuo Qiu look angrier.

“Not only I will slap your face but I will slap their faces too. I will teach you and your friends a good lesson.” said Zuo Qiu looking at Meng Qing and Jing Yun. This had made Lin Feng furious. He didn’t like provoking people but people always decided to provoke him. Why did these nobles always look down on those they thought were weaker than themselves.

“Are you still not done talking utter nonsense?” said Lin Feng coldly making Zuo Qiu even more enraged.

His body shivered, he raised his hand with the palm of his hand wide open. The Qi emerging out of it created a whirlwind in the air.

He swung his hand directly towards Lin Feng. Such a strong slap sufficed to send anyone flying on impact.

A cold and indifferent smile appeared on Lin Feng’s face. He raised his hand as fast as a lightning and stopped Zuo Qiu’s hand halfway.

“Huh?” said Zuo Qiu surprised. That guy was not weak if he was able to stop his hand like that.

“Do you think that using all your strength to block a slap is useful?” said Zuo Qiu coldly. Suddenly, flames emerged from his body. Immediately, he opened his mouth and spat out fire. Suddenly, the flames began to rush straight towards Lin Feng.

“What a strange skill.” said the crowd surprised. Lin Feng was definitely unlucky and It didn’t look good for him if he took this surprise attack.

But at that moment, Lin Feng used his other hand to carry out an attack. An incredibly strong Qi emerged out of his palm and moved straight towards Zuo Qiu’s flames extinguishing them and then continuing towards Zuo Qiu.

Immediately, Zuo Qiu retrieved his other hand and then joined both his hands to release an incredibly powerful flame which moved straight towards Lin Feng attack.

The air was hot and heavy but Zuo Qiu’s eyes were ice-cold. He had greatly underestimated Lin Feng and had been forced to use his full power to protect himself.

But Lin Feng’s had attacked again. Even though Zuo Qiu had blocked Lin Feng’s first slap, his eyes were wide open and fixedly staring at a palm moving towards his face at full speed.

“Retreat.” thought Zuo Qiu surprised but... wasn’t it too late?

“CLAP!” At that moment, a clear and loud clapping noise spread in the atmosphere. The entire crowd was dumbfounded.

He wanted to slap Lin Feng but he had been slapped by Lin Feng in return...?

Lin Feng had not used much of his strength. Zuo Qiu was still standing there but his dignity had been hurt more than his cheek. His dignity had even been completely trampled over and he had completely lost face.

“You dared to hit me?!” said Zuo Qiu who didn’t realize what had just happened. He touched his cheek. It was burning... and he had a large bruise on his face.

“What gave you the first clue?” said Lin Feng in reply to his stupid question.

“You have tested my patience enough today. I’m tired of your ignorance. Get lost.” said Lin Feng while raising his hand and slapping Zuo Qiu again. That time, Lin Feng didn’t restrain himself from using his strength. The palm of his hand immediately crashed onto Zuo Qiu’s face which sent him flying several meters backwards.

When the crowd heard Zuo Qiu’s body heavily fall down onto the ground, they shivered for a second. That slap... how cruel!

Lin Feng turned around and looked at Zhong Ling. She looked surprised and made a step back.

“You deserve the same thing.” said Lin Feng. Zhong Ling’s pupils shrank. She looked incredibly scared. What a humiliation.

“I WILL KILL YOU!!!” suddenly shouted Zuo Qiu furiously while slowly standing up.

“WHISTLING MOON WOLF!” yelled Zuo Qiu. Zuo Qiu’s whistling moon wolf was moving towards Lin Feng at an incredible speed. It looked like it was travelling faster than light. It emitted a dazzling light as it moved and seemed like it was tearing the atmosphere apart.

“Animal.” said Lin Feng. A bright light flashed between the wolf and Lin Feng. Suddenly, there was no light remaining between them and no sound could be heard. The Moon Wolf’s body fell heavily onto the ground with no sign of life.

“That light came from a sword. It was definitely a sword.” said some people in the crowd. It had been an extremely quick and agile sword attack. One sword strike and he had killed the Ling level Moon Wolf.

“YOU.....” said Zuo Qiu extremely furious. His face looked demonic.

“If you don’t want me to close your filthy mouth for eternity then don’t force me listen to your bullshit again.” said Lin Feng while emanating a ruthless killing intent. Obviously, Zuo Qiu quickly closed his mouth but still looked extremely furious. No matter how furious he was, he did not dare say a word.

“Hehe... and they are so arrogant. Noble and wealthy cultivators really are such a joke. They’re not even able to withstand a single

attack. Such a bunch of trash.” said someone in the crowd. Those who had been encouraging Zuo Qiu to attack Lin Feng. Not only had Zuo Qiu not managed to slap Lin Feng but he had been slapped twice. That had caused a great humiliation for all of the wealthy and noble cultivators who had previously been acting arrogant. They had the feeling that they had been slapped themselves.

“Zuo Qiu, you’re the disgrace of the Zuo Clan.” said Bai Ze coldly which made Zuo Qiu feel embarrassed at his own actions. Zuo Qiu had already been humiliated but Bai Ze was ruthless with his insults. Zuo Qiu was furious.

But when Zuo Qiu thought of how strong the Bai Clan was, he controlled himself and continued to endure the torment.

At that moment, Lin Feng was fixedly staring at Bai Ze which made Bai Ze wonder what Lin Feng wanted. Bai Ze’s pupils shrank and he looked at Lin Feng.

“A moment ago, are you not the one who said to Zuo Qiu to slap me a few times?” said Lin Feng to Bai Ze indifferently. The crowd suddenly quieted down again.

Lin Feng wanted to fight yet again?

Lin Feng was starting to grow angry and impatient when he saw that Bai Ze wasn’t replying at all.

“You ordered him to slap me but he failed. Shouldn’t you try it

yourself now? Shouldn't you show to everyone that you were right about the fact that wealthy and nobles cultivators are the best?" said Lin Feng whose words were resonating throughout the crowd. At that moment, all the cultivators who were not from wealthy and noble families started giggling and laughing at Bai Ze.

"Bai Ze, a moment ago, you provoked and humiliated someone, what are you doing now? Could it be that you are scared?"

"Bai Ze, weren't you saying that wealthy and noble cultivators were a million times better than ordinary cultivators? Why can you not prove your statements with your actions? Give us evidence. Show it to us. Could it be that the only thing the wealthy and noble cultivators possess is a big mouth?"

All of these harsh words were stabbing into the ears of the noble and wealthy cultivators. Everybody without exception, noble and ordinary cultivators were staring at Bai Ze looking forward to hearing his response.

Chapter 113: One Finger

Bai Ze was standing in the middle of the crowd. His magnificent clothes could not hide the evil expression on his face. He had a gruesome and bloodcurdling facial expression. He looked like an evil monster.

Lin Feng's words had made him extremely angry. If he didn't fight, people would ridicule him to death.

The fight between Lin Feng and Zuo Qiu had made it impossible to determine Lin Feng's real strength. They did not even have a chance to see Zuo Qiu's level of strength. The only thing people could be sure about is that Zuo Qiu was weaker than Lin Feng.

"He is about sixteen years old but he is already very strong. He is most likely at the peak of the second Ling Qi layer and he is much stronger than Zuo Qiu." thought Bai Ze as he tried to reassure himself. Bai Ze had already broken through to the third Ling Qi layer and could easily defeat Zuo Qiu if he wished.

Initially, he thought that Lin Feng was a mere beggar but Lin Feng's strength as well as his personality left Bai Ze perplexed. He was puzzled. For him, his downtrodden appearance didn't correspond to his personality and strength.

Bai Ze was not convinced because for him, no matter if he won or lost that battle, there would be no benefit for him in the slightest.

If he won, nobody would acknowledge his strength. Indeed,

winning against a beggar was something normal and obviously expected from him. Nobody would think it is a glorious thing for him to win against a nobody. Some people would even think that he abused his power to bully the weak. However, if he lost, he would lose face and would maybe be regarded as someone not worth mentioning. He would maybe lose everything that he had worked so hard to build all of his life.

“Are you sure that you want me to show you how strong I am?” asked Bai Ze in an extremely evil tone. His manner of speaking reminded Lin Feng of Wen Ren Yan. Bai Ze also sounded like a snake, or more precisely, an evil and venomous snake.

“Yes, I am sure.” replied Lin Feng while nodding.

“Have you thought about the consequences yet?” said Bai Ze looking even more evil. “If I show you my strength then you will be sure to regret it forever.”

“Hehe.” laughed Lin Feng while a sharp light flashed in his eyes. He then coldly said: “You, rich and wealthy cultivators have really filthy mouths. I’m starting to get used to how much you guys like to talk. You don’t need to keep talking. I have heard enough bullshit already today.”

At the same time, while talking, Lin Feng glanced at Zuo Qiu. Zuo Qiu and Bai Ze looked the same to him.

“Haha, did you hear that? Bai Ze should stop talking about other people.”

“Yeah, absolutely. These rich and noble cultivators seem to be extremely strong when you listen to them but if you challenge them, they cannot withstand a single attack.”

Ordinary people were excited but the cultivators coming from wealthy and noble families looked more and more furious, especially Bai Ze. He felt like killing Lin Feng on the spot.

“Are you sure that you clearly understand the consequences of your actions?” said Bai Ze while walking out of the crowd. He really sounded like a snake.

“Have you thought of the consequences each time you called me a beggar?” said Lin Feng while taking a step forward. Sharp and brutal Qi started emerging out from his body.

“I am a noble, I am rich, I am a member of the Bai Clan in the Imperial City, I am not even eighteen years old yet I have already broken through to the third Ling Qi layer. I have a high status in society. I am a genius. I am extremely strong. I have everything that I want. What’s your problem? Is it wrong to say that you’re a beggar? Is it not the truth?” said Bai Ze while making another step. A brutal and cold Qi moved towards Lin Feng. It seemed like the purpose of the attack was to damage Lin Feng’s internal organs. Bai Ze used all the strength he had after breaking through to the third Ling Qi layer.

“I was born as an ordinary person, never had much money to invest in resources and always relied on myself to progress. I just

turned sixteen and I've already broken through to the third Ling Qi layer. Can you compete with me?" said Lin Feng whose words were sharp as a sword. Suddenly, an incredible sword Qi and force whistled through the air.

The earth and the sky were emitted rumbling sounds. The crowd was stupefied. Lin Feng had just turned sixteen and was at the same level as Bai Ze. They had both broken through to the third Ling Qi layer. However, Bai Ze had grown up in a much better cultivation environment than Lin Feng. Bai Ze had had everything he needed to increase his cultivation. Besides, he was about two years older than Lin Feng. The difference was too big.

"Such an outstanding disciple doesn't have a letter of recommendation for the Celestial Academy?" said some people in the crowd who thought Lin Feng was incredibly talented.

Zuo Qiu, who was standing next to Zhong Ling, wasn't saying anything. He didn't know what to think. He had criticized Lin Feng about the fact that he wasn't a wealthy and noble cultivator... he had also made fun of him for not having a letter of recommendation. But at that moment, he realized that Lin Feng had many more natural abilities and was more gifted than them. Even Bai Ze had lost his splendour in front of Lin Feng.

The path of cultivation is full with such events. Cultivation was about being stronger than the others, no matter what their background. The goal was to stand high above all mortals.

When the force released by Lin Feng crashed into Bai Ze's body, Bai Ze felt that he was losing in strength. He said he was a genius

so he couldn't lose so easily. He took a few steps backwards and released his force in an attempt to make Lin Feng's attack collapse. He hadn't thought about the fact that he was probably going to embarrass himself. Lin Feng's force was much more powerful than his. It was sharper and more violent.

"On the path of cultivation, apart from one's speed of progress, one must also understand skills and techniques. That is indispensable. However, of course, the spirit is the most important thing. The spirit belongs to the soul. I have a beast spirit, more precisely, a White Snake Spirit. How could you even compete with me?" said Bai Ze who was oppressed by Lin Feng's force. He was not going to accept losing to a beggar. He released his spirit. Immediately, a snake shadow and two hideously bestial eyes appeared above his body. They were evilly staring at Lin Feng.

"As expected, it's a beast spirit." said Lin Feng while smiling. The eyes of the white snake staring at him reminded Lin Feng of Wen Ren Yan's pupils, as expected as they both had snake type spirits.

"Indeed, the spirit belongs to the soul but there are some people who, regardless of their spirit, can't withstand a single attack." said Lin Feng indifferently. He used his moonlight feather agility technique to immediately appear in front of Bai Ze as he raised a single finger.

"You want to die!" said Bai Ze while smiling coldly. Lin Feng despised him that much that he was attacking with a single finger.

Bai Ze started moving his hand to block the attack and his white snake spirit followed suit. At that moment, Bai Ze was suddenly

surprised. An extremely strong and powerful Qi crashed onto his body. It seems like Lin Feng's finger had become as sharp as a sword. The atmosphere was filled with a deadly Qi. It was terrifying.

"I cannot dare face that finger attack head on." thought Bai Ze. He suddenly started to panic. He had the feeling that that a single finger was going to rob him of his life.

Lin Feng's Qi was present in the atmosphere yet was invisible to the extent that the crowd had no idea what was going on at that moment. But for Bai Ze everything was clear, he was surrounded by sword Qi. He had the feeling that he would be completely crushed at any moment.

"Crrrack."

Bai Ze had an extremely painful sensation in his hand on which a thin mark of blood appeared. He couldn't stand the pressure of the attack any longer. His entire body was being crushed and bruises had started to appear all over his body.

"Retreat." Bai Ze was about to collapse under the pressure and decided to retreat but Lin Feng's finger was still releasing even more terrifying force.

"Die." Lin Feng said only word. Then, Lin Feng's finger started emitting a bright light and powerful energy immediately lacerated the atmosphere.

Cracking noises spread through the air. Bai Ze groaned. His white snake spirit started releasing strong a strong Qi. But at that moment, his white snake spirit dispersed and disappeared. Bai Ze was kneeling down on the ground.

Everybody was stupefied and was blankly staring at Bai Ze. The atmosphere became entirely silent.

“Splash, splash.” at that moment, the crowd saw blood dripping out of Bai Ze’s head.

Lin Feng’s finger, how terrifying!

Lin Feng’s meaning was that some people used their spirit but couldn’t withstand a single attack while some others didn’t use their spirit but were still extremely strong. The crowd knew that Bai Ze had used his spirit but still couldn’t withstand a single attack because Lin Feng didn’t need to use his spirit which proved he was stronger than Bai Ze.

At that moment, Lin Feng was looking at Bai Ze kneeling down on the ground. He was surprised. He wouldn’t have thought that one finger would be enough to bring down his opponent, so he was very satisfied of himself.

“I am still not able to completely unite with the power of the sword. Only some parts of my body can use sword force. I recently started using forces. It’s not been such a long time. That’s why my body and my sword force can’t completely unite but being able to use a finger to harness sword force is already a great achievement

and was enough to make Bai Ze kneel down. How powerful will I be when I fully unite with my sword?" thought Lin Feng. A moment before, he had managed to make his finger and his sword force fuse together. It had been an extremely powerful attack.

Lin Feng had made great progress as a sword master. He was much stronger than before and also understood much more about the way of the sword.

"I am still far from being able to make my body and the sword force fuse together but I need to understand how it is meant to work first." It was clear to Lin Feng that he was still far from being able to achieve such a incredible feat but he needed to progress slowly, step by step so he could base his strength on solid foundations.

"Cough, cough." Bai Ze was coughing blood. He was still unable to stand up.

He had been so arrogant a moment before and had sounded as if he was levels above Lin Feng. Lin Feng was smiling. Lin Feng had used only one finger to defeat Bai Ze after he released his spirit. There would be nowhere within this world where he could hide away from his shame.

Lin Feng was cruelly looking at Bai Ze. His eyes didn't express the least bit of compassion.

Lin Feng suddenly said: "You say that you are a genius. You are extremely proud of coming from a wealthy and noble clan. You

called me a beggar. Well, what do you intend to do now?” said Lin Feng indifferently. Lin Feng’s words made Bai Ze feel like he was being slapped. That slap was much more painful than Zuo Qiu’s one as it stabbed into his pride.

Besides, not only Bai Ze was humiliated but all the others noble and wealthy cultivators who were making fun of him. Each and every single one of them was making a hideous face. They had all been indirectly slapped by Lin Feng.

Chapter 114: The Menacing Old Man

Not so long before these events, they were all arrogantly calling Lin Feng a beggar.

At that moment, not only had the beggar slapped Zuo Qiu and humiliates Bai Ze but he had also slapped all of them, indirectly. All of them had lost face from their arrogant words.

If Lin Feng was a beggar, what were they?

“You are all a band of arrogant and presumptuous brats. I don’t know if you are even able to learn from your mistakes.”

These few words made the rich and wealthy cultivators even more furious.

“Shut the hell up. Let me fight against you.” said a cold voice suddenly which surprised everybody.

“Rong Yan, don’t challenge someone who’s stronger than you as it will surely lead to death. What do you think about having a fight against me?”

People in the crowd were starting to argue. At that moment, the old man said: “Let me talk!”

Everybody stopped talking when they heard the old man’s voice.

In the Celestial Academy, every teacher was extremely strong. The wealthy and noble cultivators didn't dare make teachers lose face.

In the Imperial City, there were a great number of wealthy and noble cultivators. There wasn't a single teacher of the Celestial Academy who didn't previously have a great reputation or wasn't famous in the past. After all, these teachers educated cultivators coming from the extremely wealthy and noble families. They could only be the highest class of individuals.

"Stop making a scene. Don't forget what day it is today." said the old man glancing at the crowd. Everybody quieted down.

The old man walked towards Bai Ze and coldly said: "Stand up."

Bai Ze raised his head and looked at the old man. Bai Ze looked ashamed. After all, he had been defeated by a single finger. He had completely lost face. Everybody would laugh at him for the rest of his days because of this event.

"Teacher." said Bai Ze while standing up. He was looking at the ground. He really had completely lost face.

"Hmph, you still have the face to call me teacher." groaned the old man making Bai Ze turn even a brighter shade of red. The teacher despised him for causing such a humiliating scene.

"The path of cultivation is partially about being strong and being a good fighter but that is not the only goal of cultivation. Another

important aspect is to be strong in one's heart. In the continent, there is a myriad of extremely strong cultivators. Nobody should ever consider themselves as the strongest cultivator in the world, no matter their natural abilities or how strong they are. There will always be someone stronger than you. The most important is to be strong in your own heart and true to yourself. Winning a battle isn't about glory, it's about one's personal goals and achievements, losing isn't about being humiliated, it's about learning how to improve yourself. Even in case of defeat, one should remain determined and not give up. Especially after losing a battle, one should be even more determined to become stronger." said the old man to Bai Ze. Bai Ze's heart started to beat faster. These words were resonating in his heart like the evening drum and the morning bell.

"Teacher, I understand." said Bai Ze while bowing in front of the old man as a sign of respect and gratitude.

"If you understand then that's good. Please go back for now and don't forget to search your soul. Introspection is essential." said the old man indifferently. Immediately after, the old man turned around and looked at Lin Feng.

Lin Feng was also staring at the old man and was surprised. These teachers were extremely wise and would benefit the students greatly. He had only said very few sentences and he had easily made Bai Ze change his state of mind. If he had not done so then Bai Ze may have struggled to advance on his path of cultivation.

However, even though the old man was an amazing teacher, he

was still working for the academy and Lin Feng wasn't a student here. Besides, he had humiliated students of the academy.

“During our registration day, you come here and cause trouble. I would like to ask you, what is your motive behind all of this?” said the old man while looking at Lin Feng. Lin Feng was surprised.

Lin Feng had been causing trouble? He had been trying to ignore these evildoers from the beginning.

“Why do you come provoke and insult my students in front of the academy?” asked the old man again on an extremely cold tone.

The wealthy and noble cultivators had a smile on the corner of their mouth. The teachers of the academy were not only teachers, they were also normally members of wealthy and noble clans.

Lin Feng was out of luck. He had made the teacher angry.

The students who came from ordinary clans and families knew that the teacher was trying to turn things into a bad situation. They knew that he was trying to accuse Lin Feng of things he hadn't committed. However, nobody could say anything. After all, the old man was a teacher at the academy and he was much stronger than all of them. His social status was much higher as well. All they could do was observe how Lin Feng would be dealt with after reaching the end of his luck.

Lin Feng looked exasperated. He thought that the old man was

ridiculous. He looked at the old man and said: “I remember that when Zuo Qiu said he was going to teach me a lesson, you said that it was possible because I didn’t have a letter of recommendation. You didn’t have any objection when he decided to attack me... and now you are saying that I came to cause trouble and that I humiliated the academy... I would like to ask you, is this what you teach to your students? Unfairness and injustice? You teach them to bully the weak?”

“How audacious.” shouted the old man. He looked furious and said: “I know exactly what I’m doing. Who do you think you are? Do you think that you are my teacher? What do you intend to do? How insolent.”

Lin Feng was smiling coldly deep in his heart. Only because the old man had the strength to do so, he wanted to bully Lin Feng.

Initially, the old man thought that Zuo Qiu could defeat Lin Feng so he hadn’t prevented him from fighting but Lin Feng had won so that was a humiliation for the academy. Therefore, the old man was angry.

“Old man, how can you be so unfair? The others provoked him first.” said Duan Feng. He was going to spend a lot of time in the academy in the future and obviously hoped that it was a good place to study. He hadn’t thought that there would be a conflict on the first day.

Besides, the teacher himself was causing the trouble.

“You shut up! Don’t forget that you are also a student of the Celestial Academy, or could it be that you do not wish to be one of its students anymore?” said the old man coldly looking at Duan Feng and threatening him.

Duan Feng was about to say something else when Lin Feng interrupted him and said: “Duan Feng, you are also a student of the Celestial Academy. This thing has nothing to do with you.” When he finished talking, Lin Feng looked at the old man and said: “So, after saying these things, what do you intend to do?”

“Damaging the reputation of the academy is a serious crime and you should die for that. However, because today is the registration day, it is an auspicious day, therefore I will just cripple your cultivation.” said the old man sounding like he was saying something normal but his eyes revealed murderous intentions.

Lin Feng was a genius and had extraordinary natural abilities but how was he supposed to compete with the old man. He was still young and too weak. The old man could easily cripple Lin Feng’s cultivation if he wished.

Lin Feng was extremely gifted and he wasn’t joining the academy, this made the old man want to cripple his cultivation even more. This way, the academy would have one less rival in the future. Lin Feng might have wanted to go and study at the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue.

“Cripple my cultivation? It sounds like a rather easy task when you say it.” said Lin Feng in an ice-cold tone. When these extremely strong people said such things, they meant it and

usually applied what they said without hesitation. If they wanted to kill, they killed, if they wanted to cripple someone's cultivation, they crippled their cultivation. There was no way to change their mind. In front of such people, no matter how gifted someone was, if that person wasn't useful to them then they would dispose of those people without hesitation.

This world was about being the strongest. Academies, sects, etc. were all the same. Only strength mattered. But Lin Feng didn't feel scared anymore since Meng Qing was with him. She had already shown him that she could protect him. She was incredibly powerful. Therefore, Lin Feng was not even slightly worried.

Besides, Meng Qing had promised Lin Feng that she could protect him. Meng Qing didn't like talking, especially to say superfluous words. So when she said it, she definitely meant it.

"Teacher, is it necessary to be so furious?" said an indifferent voice at that moment. A silhouette came out of the crowd and continued: "This young man is a real genius. If he agreed to join the academy, he could definitely become an extremely strong and powerful person."

It was a young man. He had beautiful long hair. His voice was soft and gentle which surprised a lot of people. Besides, his face looked graceful and delicate to the extent that the word "pretty" could be used to refer to his facial features. His face looked even prettier than that of an ordinary woman.

His name was Wen Ao Xue.

“What are you doing?” said many of the crowd when they saw Wen Ao Xue. They were surprised. When the old man saw and heard Wen Ao Xue, he nodded at him.

“And you? What do you think about what he said?” asked the old man to Lin Feng. Everybody was stupefied. Wen Ao Xue said a single sentence, it had been sufficient to change the old man’s mind.

“What? About me joining the Celestial Academy?” asked Lin Feng to Wen Ao Xue. Lin Feng immediately shook his head and said: “I’m not interested.”

“Huh?” the old man was astonished. He glanced at Lin Feng and said: “You are definitely not able to recognize what’s good for you. I gave you a chance, the chance to join the Celestial Academy and you refused it. Well, since it’s like that, don’t blame me.”

Chapter 115: Joining The Academy

“Teacher, don’t be angry. I will persuade him.” said Wen Ao Xue. He looked so clean. His clothes were unstained by even a speck of dust. Nobody would think that he was actually a man.

“The Celestial Academy is not very famous but if you became one of its students then you would understand how great it is. You could fully exploit your natural abilities and you would greatly improve your skills as a cultivator. You shouldn’t doubt at all that it would be greatly beneficial to you.” said Wen Ao Xue to Lin Feng. His beautiful eyes were staring at Lin Feng. He had a big smile on his face.

“It doesn’t look like it when I see your teacher.” replied Lin Feng indifferently. Everybody was stupefied. Each and every single one of the wealthy and noble cultivators pulled a long face. Lin Feng was attacking their dignity and making the academy lose face.

The teacher was also stupefied. A murderous light flashed in his eyes. He thought that Lin Feng didn’t know how to behave in such a delicate situation. He was acting much too bold and was being completely reckless.

“Your opinion is too biased. Your vision of the situation is unilateral.” said Wen Ao Xue while shaking his head. But Lin Feng as before, was not convinced. Academies and sects had the same purpose even if they didn’t work the same way.

The entire Yun Hai Sect had been annihilated and everyone had

sacrificed themselves for him so his main mission was to rebuild the Yun Hai Sect and make sure it does not repeat any of its past mistakes.

“Wen Ao Xue is right. What you see is only the tip of the iceberg. I hope that you can join the academy.” said another voice. A silhouette which looked like an illusion suddenly jumped from a distant place towards the crowd. It was an old man. When the people saw him, Everybody was surprised and looked at him with eyes filled with worship and respect.

That old man was the vice-principal of the academy. The vice-principal of the academy was personally inviting Lin Feng to join the academy. Everybody was astonished.

“Could it be that Lin Feng is already so powerful that even the most influential people of the academy have an eye on him?” whispered some people in the crowd. Some of the people much like Zuo Qiu and Zhong Ling, were furious because Lin Feng didn’t have a letter of recommendation... but Lin Feng, who didn’t even need a letter of recommendation to join the academy, wasn’t even interested in joining it... and because Lin Feng wasn’t interested in joining, even the vice-principal himself was trying to convince him to join.

“You are right. There are some really pathetic students in the academy. They are good-for-nothings, but you have already humiliated them which was a fitting punishment. As far as the teacher is concerned, he is very narrow minded. I will make him apologize to you for his actions.” said the vice-principal to Lin Feng. Immediately after, he looked at the old teacher with a look

which made the crowd shiver.

The vice-principal was going to make the teacher apologize because of Lin Feng?

Lin Feng was stupefied as well. He knew that he was a good cultivator but the academy was full of outstanding students as well. Even if he had defeated Zuo Qiu and Bai Ze, it was only the tip of the iceberg, why would the vice-principal attach so much importance to him?

“Vice-principal.” said the old man stupefied. The vice-principal frowned which scared the old man.

Then, the old man turned around, looked at Lin Feng and said: “Please accept my most sincere apologies. I acted without thinking.”

“Be kinder and more sincere!” said the vice-principal who wasn’t satisfied with the old man’s apology. The entire crowd and especially the old man could not help but be surprised at such actions.

Was Lin Feng so strong that the vice-principal needed to be that kind to him? Did Lin Feng actually come from an incredible background? That was hard to imagine. All the teachers were personally invited by the academy. They were all famous and extremely strong. Surprisingly, the vice-principal was forcing the teacher to apologize to Lin Feng even though Lin Feng hadn’t even made such a request. Everybody was trying to understand why.

“Why?”

The teacher that had just apologised pulled a long face. He hated the looks that he was receiving from everyone but when he saw the vice-principal's face, he had no choice but to look at Lin Feng and he then said: “I am sincerely sorry. I am worthless and I hope that you forgive me, Your Excellency.”

“What do you think?” said the vice-principal looking at Lin Feng. Lin Feng looked at the vice-principal. Lin Feng had the impression that the vice-principal had something in mind but Lin Feng was unable to guess what it was.

Lin Feng wanted to say something but then the vice-principal interrupted him: “If you are not willing to join the Celestial Academy, I can propose something else for you. I can give you a special permit to enjoy all the advantages of a student without restrictions but also without the obligations. Nothing would bind you to the academy but you could even have a personal teacher, you could benefit from all the resources of the academy for free. You could also leave whenever you want. You would have the same status as a student of the academy without restrictions. There would only be the advantages for you and absolutely no disadvantages.”

These words made the hearts of the people in the crowd start to pound. They were all astonished. Lin Feng could leave whenever he wanted. He could benefit from all the advantages of the academy. Besides, these words came from the vice-principal himself. He had made a promise to Lin Feng which meant there

was no hidden intention and it was not something that he could take back.

“Could it be that his family name is Duan?”

“Maybe his family is Yue? Or Yu?”

Said some people in the crowd, but if his family name was Duan and he was this much of a genius then everybody would have already heard about him. Besides, every single person in the Yue Clan was way too arrogant and would never join the academy. They were as strong as a powerful sect and wouldn't study outside.

The thoughts of the people in the crowd were moving at full speed in their brains. Even if Lin Feng was a outstanding genius and was extremely strong, that still wasn't enough for the vice-principal to be this generous to him. The crowd was puzzled and really didn't understand how such a thing was possible.

Lin Feng was even more confused than the people in the crowd. Lin Feng couldn't bear it anymore and had to ask: “How could I be so lucky? How is this possible? I really want to know why you would give me such an opportunity. Why?”

“It is actually a strike of luck. You don't even have the possibility to refuse because everything will be decided by you.” said the vice-principal with a big smile on his face before adding: “I can only tell you that I had similar experiences in my life. I was also supported by others along the way.”

“Supported by others?” thought the crowd who still didn’t understand. Lin Feng knew nobody in the Imperial City, why would the vice-principal be so good to him?

Besides, Lin Feng couldn’t refuse because there was no obligation when joining the academy. He could go there whenever he wished and leave whenever he wished as well. How could he refuse something that was only benefits and completely under his control?

If the vice-principal had malicious intentions then he wouldn’t have acted like that. He could have easily eliminated him. After all, Lin Feng had only broken through to the Ling Qi layer.

“Maybe I really do have good luck.” thought Lin Feng. He then smiled and said: “My friends and I will join together. We must be able to stay together.”

“No problem. You can bring anyone as long as you are close with them. Besides, you don’t have to respect our rules and regulations but the others including your friends will have to.” said the vice-principal honestly.

“Of course.” replied Lin Feng while smiling.

“That’s great. Then, everybody can disperse.” said the vice-principal. Suddenly, he stretched his hands over to Lin Feng and gave him something. The entire crowd was dying from curiosity. They didn’t know what the vice-principal was giving to Lin Feng.

“Welcome to the Celestial Academy.” said Wen Ao Xue. Lin Feng nodded and then the group began to enter the academy.

They walked under the arch of the gate to discover wonderful and magnificent palaces.

“Oh my...” when Lin Feng saw these parks, palaces and rivers, he couldn’t help but be amazed. Everything was perfect. Besides, the architecture of each palace had its own magnificent style.

“You can explore all of these places in depth during your stay here.” said Wen Ao Xue. Lin Feng was really amazed at sight of the palaces.

“Celestial Academy...!”

The main palace, the name of the academy was written in huge letters. It looked like it was really a unique place within this world.

“Welcome to the academy. You will not regret it.” said Wen Ao Xue while smiling.

Lin Feng looked at that boy who looked like a beautiful woman and asked: “Why did you defend me?”

Wen Ao Xue shook his head and said: “For the same reason as the vice-principal.”

“What I mean is that we’ve never met before. We don’t know each other, why would you help me?”

“There are some people who are so mysterious that you see them for a few seconds and you instantly know that you like them. You are that kind of person.” said Wen Ao Xue whose cheeks had turned red. Lin Feng stared at him stupefied by his response.

When Wen Ao Xue saw that Lin Feng was making a strange face, he also made a strange face.

“Get lost. I’m not one of them.” said Wen Ao Xue which made Lin Feng laugh. Of course, there people in this world who were attracted to the same sex. Some people liked that type of thing but Wen Ao Xue obviously didn’t even though he looked the type.

.....

At that moment, in a distant place, the vice-principal and the teacher were walking together on a path within the territory of the academy. The vice-principal saw that the teacher didn’t look like he was feeling at ease. Who liked having to apologise to a junior cultivator in front of all the students? Of course he would not be happy about such an event.

“Are you still angry?” asked the vice-principal indifferently to the teacher.

“I would never disobey your orders. You are the vice-principal.”

said the old man. He had actually been invited by the vice-president himself all those years ago.

“Haha, no need to react that way. You should understand that I never do things for myself but I understand your reaction.” said the vice-principal and then added: “I did things this way for a reason. You remember that skill which you were telling me about? Go and take it. Just say that it’s an order I gave you.”

The old man was surprised. Then, the sadness his face expressed was replaced with joy. He looked overjoyed.

Chapter 116: The Third Category

While walking within the academy, Lin Feng found out that some people were as friendly as him while some of the people were not friendly in the slightest.

For instance, Lin Feng had come across a girl who had a resplendent smile on her face which was lit with innocence yet some of the other girls had similar smiles which were filled with evil intentions.

He had come across another young man whose body released a sharp and cold Qi. He seemed incredibly evil and dangerous.

“Have you seen anything peculiar?” asked Wen Ao Xue with a faint smile on his face when he noticed that Lin Feng looked strange as he looked around. He looked particularly strange as he stared at the different people.

“The Qi they release is quite strange.” replied Lin Feng. Lin Feng wasn’t the only one who had noticed it. Duan Feng and Jing Yun both agreed with him and nodded.

“You’re right. This is because they are very weak. This is why the Qi they release is so strange.” said Wen Ao Xue while nodding. Immediately after, he raised his thin white womanly hand up and pointed at some distant palaces. He then said: “In the Celestial Academy, there are three different categories of people within the academy. Each has their own path of training. This is one of the choices which you are confronted with after entering the academy.

Depending on the type of cultivator that you wish to become, I will show you where to go.”

“Three types of people?” thought Lin Feng, he was perplexed. He then asked: “What are these three types of people?”

“The ones who are able to fight on a battlefield while commanding troops. These are the cultivators who are not afraid of bloodshed and violence. They are the first category.”

“Commander.” thought Lin Feng surprised. The first type of training the academy delivered was surprisingly of military nature. These people were able to command troops, were not afraid of blood and had to have great wisdom in the art of war.

“The second type of training you can get teaches you how to become a great leader. It teaches you how to control and manipulate a group of people from the shadows.”

“That sounds alot like me.” thought Lin Feng whose pupils shrank. Wen Ao Xue seemed to be that kind of person.

“What about the third one?” asked Lin Feng. He was very curious. Surprisingly, the two first two types of people the academy trained were those who wished to become commanders or leaders. Lin Feng had a good impression of the academy.

“The third category is about learning how to move as swiftly as the wind at night. It teaches you how to become invisible as if you

were in the middle of the fog. This is the most mysterious and mystical category but also the most dangerous. Usually, people don't see them but if they do see them then blood will flow." said Wen Ao Xue slowly. Lin Feng was amazed again. The third category was an assassin type of training.

"Who built the academy?" wondered Lin Feng. They trained military commanders, political leaders and assassins. These three categories were all that is required to lead an entire country. Who could have such a wild ambition?

"Could it be the emperor?" asked Lin Feng to himself. He then immediately refuted that thought. If the emperor had built the academy, why would he have allowed Duan Tian Lang to build the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue? However, if the emperor was really at the origin of the academy, why would he have created such a dangerous place?

"Who is the principal of the academy?" asked Lin Feng to Wen Ao Xue. Wen Ao Xue was surprised. His beautiful eyes stared at Lin Feng and he said: "Many people want to know but it seems like the academy only has the vice-principal. We have never seen the principal with our own eyes. There is only one thing that we can be sure about. The principal must be a member of the Imperial Clan. He must have an amazingly high status. I think that you should clearly understand that."

Lin Feng slightly nodded. If it had been built by a member of the Imperial Clan then it was made to train people who would later serve the country.

“This is precisely why the academy prefers to remain discreet and doesn’t accept people who don’t have a letter of recommendation. It has many students who have a prestigious background. They all happily joined the academy and to know the others students. They know that the academy is an extremely good learning environment. That is why I can assure you that you will have no regret for having joined the academy.” said Wen Ao Xue while nodding.

“Oh, by the way, you probably already know my name but I don’t know yours.”

“Lin Feng.”

“Lin Feng, that’s a nice name.” said Wen Ao Xue. He then said: “I just told you about the three categories of training which can be chosen in the academy. The academy has a lot of students who come from wealthy and noble families, therefore a great majority of them choose the second category because they want to do things similar to their parents. They want to have more responsibilities when they go back to their families. There are many ordinary people who try to learn these skills but later on, when they want to occupy such functions, they often face a great deal of difficulties.”

“The hot blooded young men of both noble and ordinary families tend to choose the first category and become military commanders. The third category is the one which people choose the least. This is the most dangerous category. Nobody really knows what they do there and it is shrouded in mystery.”

Lin Feng was carefully listening to what Wen Ao Xue was telling

him. Ordinary people wanted to quickly rise up in the hierarchy. It was very difficult to rise up in the hierarchy for a cultivator who didn't already have a specific background. They required contacts and political influence to gain a higher position.

As far as the third category was concerned, it was a difficult choice to make considering that whenever an assassin came out, his life was at stake.

“Of course, there are other factors to take into consideration. The spirit as well as a student's natural abilities play an important role in their decision. However, no matter what a student chooses, the most important thing is that he is definitely going to greatly improve his strength. If a cultivator is not strong then everything else is useless because strength and willpower are extremely important on the path of cultivation. No matter what you learnt, if you have to fight against someone who is strong then you will die if you are weaker than them.”

Wen Ao Xue looked at Lin Feng and said: “Lin Feng, now you have to think carefully, what cultivation category would you like to choose?”

“The first one.” replied Lin Feng immediately.

Lin Feng didn't like the second category because it came down to fighting and plotting against people. He wasn't interested in using other people for his benefit. Besides, he thought the third category was useless. Therefore, the first category seemed to fit him the best. He could use these skills in real battles.

“The cultivators of the first category need to be brave, hot-blooded and loyal.”

“Hot-blooded and brave, no problem... but loyal? Loyal to whom?” asked Lin Feng to Wen Ao Xue. He was surprised.

“Don’t look at me that way. I don’t know either.” replied Wen Ao Xue with a womanly expression in his eyes.

“Lin Feng, I will bring you to the place where you ought to go.”

“And you? You haven’t told me to which category you belong?” asked Lin Feng to Wen Ao Xue. Wen Ao Xue looked like a girl and he obviously came from a noble family but he didn’t look as arrogant as the others. He also didn’t look very brave and did not seem hot blooded.

“Try and guess.”

“The third one.” replied Lin Feng without hesitation which surprised Wen Ao Xue. Immediately after, the latter smiled but remained silent.

“Duan Feng, what about you?” asked Lin Feng. Lin Feng hadn’t forgotten that he was there because of Duan Feng. He would have never thought he would join the academy before that.

“Me?” said Duan Feng while smiling. “I will choose the same one as you, Lin Feng, the first one.”

“That’s great. Let’s go together then.” said Lin Feng while smiling.

A short time after, they arrived on a huge square. Many people were sitting upright. Some guqins could be heard.

“If you want to become one of the first category then you first need to pass a test. Only if you succeed will you will be admitted as a student of the first category.” explained Wen Ao Xue while looking at Lin Feng.

Lin Feng said: “If the first category requires a test, what about the two other categories? Is it the same?”

“The second category doesn’t require any test but the third one requires passing a test and it is by far the most difficult one.” said Wen Ao Xue while smiling. Lin Feng was surprised. Most people were absolutely not interested in the third category but its exam was the most difficult. Lin Feng was puzzled. Besides, it seemed like the first category in which a great majority was interested was also the easiest one.

On the square, there were many new students but some old students as well. Some of the people who noticed Wen Ao Xue smiled at him.

Lin Feng, noticed that many people who passed by or saw Wen Ao Xue were avoiding him as if they were terribly scared of his presence!

Lin Feng found that very strange!

Chapter 117: The Zither

“It seems like they’re scared of you.” said Lin Feng to Wen Ao Xue. What was surprising was that a boy who was as beautiful as a girl scared other people to the point that they avoided him.

“Maybe they just hold me in awe and veneration.” replied Wen Ao Xue while laughing. At that moment, Lin Feng and the others noticed that there were suddenly less people around them. The reason was obviously Wen Ao Xue.

“The exam is not so hard. It should be no problem for you to pass. Because the first category is the one in which most people are interested, it is also the category in which the students are the strongest. Every year during the registration and test week, we allow the older students to participate to see how much they have progressed.” said Wen Ao Xue to Lin Feng in a low voice while looking at the crowd which was getting bigger and bigger.

“Will the test be listening to music?” said Lin Feng while looking at a silhouette of an old man who was putting his hands on a zither. He was slightly closing their eyes.

“You’re right, the test is to listen to the melody that he will play.” replied Wen Ao Xue while laughing.

What? The test consisted in listening to a song? Duan Feng and Jing Yun were astonished as well. Listen to a song? What kind of test was that?

Only Meng Qing looked indifferent as ever as if the entire story had nothing to do with her.

“You will understand quickly enough.” said Wen Ao Xue who noticed Lin Feng, Jing Yun and Duan Feng looked really strange and seemed to be thinking very deeply.

In a short time, the number of people on the square rapidly increased to two hundred.

Some of the people, when they saw Lin Feng and Wen Ao Xue, looked very strange and even stupefied.

“It’s Lin Feng from the events that happened earlier, he must have surprisingly chosen the first category like us.”

“Hehe, he’s quite strong and has solid natural abilities. He could even defeat the noble and wealthy students, but will he be able to pass the test?”

“There should be no problem. You also saw how easy it was for him to defeat Bai Ze and Zuo Qiu. And you also saw how he didn’t hesitate and confront the teacher. Courage and determination will be no problem for him.”

Everybody, the ordinary but also wealthy noble disciples had seen how strong and brave Lin Feng was. Therefore, even if they didn’t necessarily agree on certain points, they still admired him and held him in very high esteem. Besides, he had the qualities

required to become a very good commander.

At that moment, those who were sitting upright opened their eyes and glanced at everybody else. They looked calm and serene.

“Alright, let the tests begin. Those who fail or miss the test start can come again tomorrow to attempt it again.” said the old man who was holding a zither. He was sitting and surrounded by students sitting as well.

The crowd slightly nodded. There were some new students and some old students. Of course, everybody knew the rule and immediately sat down cross-legged.

“Alright, sit down properly and listen to the zither tune.” said Wen Ao Xue to Lin Feng and the others with a smile on his face.

“Alright, let’s sit down then.” said Lin Feng and the others. Immediately after, they all sat down cross-legged.

“Alright, let’s start.” said the old man while starting to move his fingers over the strings of the zither.

But Lin Feng’s eyes stopped on the old man’s hands. They looked as thin and delicate as Wen Ao Xue’s hands. They actually looked very similar.

Every single note emitted by the zither was harmonious and melodious. It seemed like the atmosphere had stopped. A short

instant later, there was no other sound except that of the zither. Absolute calm reigned over the atmosphere.

Progressively, more and more people were closing their eyes and were enjoying the music. It was as if the air they were breathing was completely fresh and contained boundless joy.

Lin Feng was almost closing his eyes too but each time he felt like dozing, he couldn't help but struggle and remain cold-blooded.

“Hypnotize!” Lin Feng suddenly understood. The goal of the tune was to hypnotize people.

“How powerful. It must be a mysterious skill.” thought Lin Feng and then immediately closed his eyes. He was falling asleep even though he was struggling. He really wanted to see how powerful the skill was so eventually stopped resisting.

Suddenly, he had the impression that he was alone in the world.

Maybe the skill was too powerful or had Lin Feng voluntarily fallen asleep without the hypnosis taking effect. On his side, there were suddenly many cavalry holding their long daggers. They were releasing an overpowering killing intent and it was clear they wanted to kill him.

Blood was splashing everywhere.

At that moment, blood started splashing all around him. There

was even blood splashing over his face and body. Blood began to cover everything in sight.

Suddenly, a head without its body flew towards him. The huge eyes on that head were still wide open in shock.

Very quickly, he was surrounded by a bunch of bones, flesh and blood. The corpses were piling up endlessly.

Under the setting sun, a crying woman's voice spread through the atmosphere.

All these departed spirits were demanding vengeance for the grievance of their death. Under the pale light diffused by the moon, they walking around in an apocalyptic landscape of blood and death.

At that moment, a certain number of people on the square opened their eyes. They were breathing heavily and were still in shock. Their clothes were soaked with cold sweat.

Those who had just woken up with a start were hurriedly looking around them at everyone else taking the test. They noticed that some of the other students still had their eyes closed, especially the older students who seemed completely immersed in their dreams.

Lin Feng's back was also covered with cold sweat. Who could stay that calm and serene with such nightmarish visions? Besides, the melody which emanated out of the zither strangely made the scene

look especially real.

A strong and intense feeling invaded Lin Feng's heart again. He had the feeling that his brain had been struck once again. He could feel the cold sweat flowing down his back.

“An illusion. That zither... what a great power...” The melody of that zither could surprisingly make people fall asleep and have nightmarish visions out of which it was almost impossible to free one's self. How horrifying!

If the one who was playing the zither intensified the strength of his melody, couldn't it be possible to make the sleeping victims go insane and collapse?

Around Lin Feng, Duan Feng was still tightly closing his eyes but he was slightly shaking. Regarding Jing Yun, she had already opened her eyes and her heavy yet erratic breathing gave the impression that she was previously suffocating.

Otherwise, many other people had already opened their eyes while some others were still closing them. However, the bodies all of those who had their eyes closed were already reacting to the music.

“That's an intense exam...” thought Lin Feng. He had a strange smile on his face. A moment before, because he was immersed in the dream, he hadn't had the time to think too much but at that moment, he understood the purpose of the exam. It seemed like by opening his eyes he had failed.

A short time later, the melody of the zither stopped. Everybody started opening their eyes, one after another.

The musician looked at the crowd and said: “The purpose of the exam was to test your endurance and your determination. If that kind of environment is unbearable for you and that you hastily woke up, it means that it would be hard for you to be on a battlefield. Therefore, those who woke up a moment before, please leave. You cannot become commanders.”

“So that’s how it is.” thought Lin Feng making a wry smile. However, Lin Feng actually hadn’t woken up because he couldn’t bear being in that place. He had woken up because his spirit made him unable to become the prisoner of the illusions and he had broken free.

Many people seemed very disappointed and were leaving one after another. They clearly understood that staying was of no use. Besides, some of them already doubted that they could become commanders and thought that their choice wasn’t the correct path for them.

The musician looked around and saw Lin Feng. He then asked: “You, why are you not leaving?”

“Eh?” those who knew Lin Feng were stupefied. Had Lin Feng failed the test?

Wen Ao Xue was astonished. Could it be that Lin Feng couldn’t

stand bear seeing such a horrible scene? The exam wasn't easy but it initially didn't seem impossible for someone like Lin Feng. After all, he had already demonstrated his strength.

“Teacher, I wasn't woken up by the horrible visions.” said Lin Feng smiling wryly and shaking his head. When he finished talking, many people were looking at him and he felt oppressed by all these eyes staring at him. The teacher was supposed to have an outstanding level, how come he hadn't noticed that Lin Feng hadn't been woken up by the horror of the vision? Besides, the way he was looking at Lin Feng even looked like he was despising him.

“If you really want to become a commander, don't give up and come back tomorrow at the same time.” said the teacher.

“Tomorrow?” Lin Feng was annoyed. The inauguration of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue was taking place on the day after.

“Teacher, let me try again.” said Lin Feng with the same wry smile on his face while shaking his head.

“You're really shameless. You just had a chance. Come back tomorrow. No need to be impatient.” said the teacher which surprised Lin Feng. Everybody was looking at him.

Lin Feng shook his head, smiled and said again: “Teacher, I beg you, give me a second chance.”

The teacher looked at Lin Feng in a strange way and said in a low

voice: “Determined and motivated as you are now, it is hard to believe that you couldn’t pass the test. I will make an exception and break the rule for you and let you try again today.”

Chapter 118: The Holy Courtyard

As a cultivator, keeping face was important but it wasn't always the way it seemed. Lin Feng had been asked to leave for failing the test but he hadn't. Everybody was looking at Lin Feng in a strange way. Even if some people found him ridiculous and thought that he was humiliating himself, Lin Feng kept smiling and asked for a second chance. That smile showed that he didn't care about the fact that he was losing face by requesting a second attempt.

However, the teacher understood that Lin Feng wasn't acting this way because he didn't care about dignity. On the contrary, Lin Feng was stubborn and only stubborn people persevered and never gave up.

The crowd was surprised. The teacher had suddenly accepted and gave Lin Feng a second chance. On top of that, the teacher's voice sounded like he really had faith in Lin Feng's future due to his stubborn beliefs.

"Thank you very much, teacher." said Lin Feng while nodding his head. Lin Feng had a good impression of the teacher. He seemed friendly and easy to approach. Besides, he didn't look arrogant at all.

"I'm going to start playing the zither again, this time you are the only one who is going to listen to it." said the teacher indifferently. Immediately, he started playing again. However just as he said, the crowd couldn't hear the music at all. The teacher could surprisingly control the flow of his music to make it audible to only the people whom he selected.

“How strong.” thought the crowd stupefied. The teacher had never displayed such a masterful control in front of them before. At that moment, Lin Feng had the feeling that the melody was a river flowing into his ears. He could already feel that his eyes were starting to feel heavy under the hypnosis. He focused his entire attention on the music and tried to abandon himself to the illusion. He could feel himself slowly drifting into the illusion with each passing moment.

However, something strange was happening.

“How cruel... if my celestial spirit remains like this then I will not be able to fall into the illusion.” thought Lin Feng. A cold Qi had invaded into Lin Feng’s body and he no longer was affected by illusion and the music had no power over him. Everything around him was extremely clear and calm, his eyes were wide open.

Even though the melody was the same as before, his eyes remained wide open and were staring at the teacher playing the zither.

“Huh?” the teacher was astonished when he saw that Lin Feng was surprisingly not falling asleep and was not struggling to stay awake in the slightest. He suddenly started playing a completely different tune. This time the rhythm was faster and the power was much greater. However, Lin Feng’s eyes were wide open as before.

He had been staring at the teacher from the beginning. He still wasn’t falling into the illusion. The teacher played another tune

with an even faster rhythm and its power was on another level compared to the original test. His fingers were moving at full speed above the strings of the instrument as they elegantly created the music. Lin Feng seemed completely unperturbed and unaffected. A short moment after, the teacher smiled as he started playing slower and slower and finally stopped.

He then looked at Lin Feng and asked: “What’s your name?”

“Lin Feng.”

“It seems that you didn’t fail the test originally. Congratulations on passing the test.” said the teacher. The crowd was stunned. Lin Feng had passed the test? Why and how was that even possible?

Why hadn’t Lin Feng been hypnotized even though the teacher had played for him. What did that mean?

“Thank you for having given me a second chance, teacher.” replied Lin Feng with a big smile on his face. If the teacher hadn’t given him a second chance, he would have had no other solution.

“Teacher, what does that mean? He woke up from the dream the first time. Why did he pass? Besides, he insolently asked for a second chance. How could you let him pass after being so shameless!” asked a tall and robust guy walking towards the teacher.

“The thing that you do not understand is that during the first test

he hadn't fully fallen into my illusion and could not be fully hypnotised. He had just closed his eyes and fallen into a very light sleep, at most it would have only given him a brief look into the illusion, and he was never under its control. The second time, he wasn't even affected by the melody and stayed awake the whole time even when I increased the strength of the melody. This is the first time I have seen such a remarkable display and I have been working in the academy for many years." said the teacher while smiling and shaking his head.

"He wasn't affected by the melody?!" asked the people in the crowd stupefied. They were strangely looking at Lin Feng wondering if he was even a human being. Wen Ao Xue couldn't imagine it either. He was really puzzled at how Lin Feng had rejected the hypnosis.

The tall and robust guy's eyes were wide open. Immediately after, he scratched his head and walked towards Lin Feng before saying: "I'm sorry. I said unpleasant things about you without thinking. I have misunderstood you. If you are angry at me then please tell me what I can do for you to forgive me."

Lin Feng raised his head and saw the huge guy standing before him. Lin Feng wasn't angry at him. That guy was really huge though, almost as big as Han Man. He was probably like Han Man and spoke without thinking because he was one of the simple and honest types. When Lin Feng thought about Han Man, a cold feeling invaded his heart. Duan Tian Lang... Duan Han...

"What did you say a moment ago? I have already forgotten." said Lin Feng while smiling. That tall and robust guy was surprised and

then smiled. He stretched his big hands towards Lin Feng and said: “Yuan Shan.”

“Lin Feng.” Both of them shook hands and smiled at each other.

“Perseverance, willpower, courage and strength are the required skills to become a great commander.” said the teacher while nodding his head. He packed up his instrument and said: “Lin Feng, if you want to learn how to play the zither or the guqin. Come to me and I will teach you.” When he finished talking, he turned around and left.

Lin Feng was stupefied as well. He was smiling and, while looking at the silhouette of the teacher in the horizon, said: “Teacher, I will do my best to show you that you did not make the wrong decision.”

Everybody in the crowd was staring at Lin Feng with eyes full of admiration and envy. These musical cultivation skills were extremely powerful.

“Lin Feng, congratulations. I’ve always wanted to learn how to play the zither or the guqin but the teacher will not teach me his methods.” said Wen Ao Xue while smiling at Lin Feng.

“I’m just lucky.” replied Lin Feng while shaking his head and smiling.

“It seems like you are often very lucky.” said Wen Ao Xue and

added: “Now, you are also a student of the academy. I will show you where we sleep.”

“Alright. Thanks.”

“I’m coming too.” said Yuan Shan who seemed to be very easy going.

“Alright, you are also a student of the academy, I do not see why you cannot join our group of friends.”

Wen Ao Xue brought them to the next palace. They quickly went inside, Lin Feng raised his head and was amazed. That castle had about twenty floors. From the center, one could see the sky through the open roof of the palace in the center.

“These are all rooms for the students. You should choose your rooms first. The middle is dedicated to practicing cultivation under the open sky.”

The palace was huge. There was a lot of free space within. Lin Feng found out that all the rooms were extremely large and had multiple living quarters inside as if it was a large house, it even had a large living area which was shared by the multiple living quarters within that room.

“All the rooms are the same. If you want to choose a room where nobody else is occupying a living quarters, that is not a problem. Do as you wish inside the palace. There’s only one thing that you

should note. Men and women all live here so please be respectful. Besides, there are some people who like peace and do not enjoy being disturbed. Don't move yourself into the same shared living space as them until they have given you their permission. Doing so is forbidden."

"Of course." said Lin Feng while nodding. He didn't have any special requirement when it came to his living quarters. He hoped to find a place with a few empty rooms though so that he and his friends could live next to each other.

"Let's choose this one. I want this room." said Lin Feng pointing at a stone door. Jing Yun and Duan Feng chose the living quarters which were next to that of Lin Feng. Yuan Shan chose the living quarters which were next to Duan Feng's.

"What about you?" asked Lin Feng to Meng Qing.

"I can stay with you. It's not as if space is lacking here." said Meng Qing indifferently. She sounded calm as always. However, Lin Feng was surprised.

Wen Ao Xue looked at Lin Feng while smiling. The expression in Wen Ao Xue's eyes made Lin Feng feel very uncomfortable.....

"Hahaha, that's not a bad idea!" laughed Yuan Shan wholeheartedly. Lin Feng glanced at him and felt even more uncomfortable.

“Alright, that’s a good idea. I will be able to take good care of you.” said Lin Feng. Duan Feng was astonished. Lin Feng wanted to take care of Meng Qing?!

“Lin Feng, big brother, you’re truly great.” thought Duan Feng but the words didn’t come out of his mouth.

“If we live together, you will be able to tell me at least ten stories a day.” whispered Meng Qing which made Lin Feng’s legs go weak to the point that he almost fell down. What a cruel girl!

.....

The next day during the morning at the Celestial Academy, people kept arriving one after another but there were less people than the day before.

In the Imperial City, there was a large public square where people were gathering. There was already a large group of people but people continued to rush over.

At the end of that public square, there was a huge gate which had a few words engraved: Xue Yue Holy Courtyard.

That was precisely the day on which the inauguration of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue was occurring. After the news had spread, a myriad of people had rushed over to that place. Some of them were hoping to study at the Holy Courtyard while some others had just come to watch the ceremony. The creation of the Holy Courtyard

of Xue Yue was a grand event in the history of the country. It would possibly change the destiny of the Xue Yue Country.

This day was probably not going to be a tranquil one!

Chapter 119: Magic! The Gathering

“It looks like the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue attracts many more cultivators than the Celestial Academy.” Lin Feng was standing in the middle of that sea of people. He was wearing his bronze mask to conceal his identity. Meng Qing and the others were all standing next to Lin Feng. Wen Ao Xue and Yuan Shan had followed the group as well. They wanted to see how popular the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue was with their own eyes.

Jing Yun was looking at Lin Feng’s bronze mask. Her heart was frantically pounding. He probably had a good reason for wearing a bronze mask. It obviously meant that he didn’t want other people to recognize him. It reminded her that she still didn’t know what had happened to him during the destruction of the Yun Hai Sect.

Sunlight passed through the clouds that were in the sky and shone down upon the crowd. It felt warm and comfortable, it was truly a good day for the ceremony.

“Look, they came out. How majestic!” said a multitude of people in the crowd one after the other when they saw the valiant silhouettes passing under the huge gate of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue. They were all wearing magnificent white robes. Two words were sown into their robes: “Holy Courtyard”. The letters looked splendid and luxurious. Their robes gave the impression that they were ready to do battle at any given moment. There were hundreds of them who were all wearing the same robes. They were all extremely young cultivators. A short time later, they had all passed through the gate of the courtyard and walked towards the extremely vast public square. Within the public square, there was a huge stage which they would all climb up, one after the other.

They then looked at the crowd in a cold and detached manner. They all had extremely arrogant and domineering expressions on their faces.

These were the first people chosen to study at the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue. They came from each corner of the country to this location. At that moment, they were standing on the huge stage in front of millions of people. They couldn't help but feel extremely proud.

Lin Feng looked at them through his bronze mask. His heart was growing colder and colder until it had become completely ice-cold. Amongst all these people, he already knew many of them.

“Ling Hu He Shan... Tu Fu... Wen Ren Yan...” These people used to be extremely popular in the Yun Hai Sect... they were all considered as outstanding geniuses and were very important for the prosperity of the sect. When the Yun Hai Sect had been destroyed, they had betrayed it and sided with Duan Tian Lang... and at that moment, they were standing with him on the stage and sharing his joy.

Other than these three people, Lin Feng recognized other people from the Yun Hai Sect. They were all ranked disciples who had gratefully accepted Duan Tian Lang's offer.

There were not only disciples of the Yun Hai Sect. There were also disciples from other big sects as well. He noticed his cousin Lin Qian from the Hao Yue Sect as well as Lin Hong from the Ice and Snow Mountain Village.

“Hahaha, Lin Rui, look at Lin Qian and Lin Hong, they’re already students of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue. Their future will be bright and wonderful. We will become the strongest clan in Yangzhou City and annihilate all the other small clans in no time.”

Lin Ba Dao, Lin Feng’s uncle was surprisingly there and was loudly speaking about such matter without regard for those around him. He was surrounded by members of the Lin Clan. Lin Rui was there as well.

“Indeed. I think that Lin Qian and Lin Hong are definitely reliable. They will definitely become the most important pillars of our Lin Clan in the future.” replied Lin Rui while smiling. He was extremely polite to Lin Ba Dao. These days, Lin Ba Dao often relied on his two children to solidify his position. The higher they would rise, the greater his influence became.

“The problem is that Na Lan Xiong, Na Lan Feng was also accepted. That’s not too good. Na Lan Feng is currently studying at the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue.” said Lin Ba Dao while glancing at the crowd. He noticed many people from Yangzhou City, including the Na Lan Clan.

“No need to pay attention to them. Our Lin Clan has two disciples who are now students at the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue. Besides, Lin Qian is extremely strong and her spirit is incredibly powerful. Na Lan Feng could never compete with her.” said Lin Rui coldly. Of course, when Lin Ba Dao heard these words, a huge proud smile appeared on his face.

At that moment, Lin Feng was standing far behind the Lin Clan and could see their silhouettes. It seemed like they had all rushed over from Yangzhou City to the Imperial City.

The entire Lin Clan thought that the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue provided the students with an incredibly high social status. What they didn't know though is that someone whose family name was also Lin had refused to study at the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue. They also didn't know that the entire Yun Hai Sect had sacrificed themselves to save him and that was the person they had expelled from their clan.

“Haha. Today, so many people have come to see the inauguration of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue. This is a great honor for me.” said a loud voice from far away. Two silhouettes then climbed onto the high stage. They were Duan Tian Lang and Duan Han, who both still had faces filled with arrogance.

“It looks the rumors were not groundless. It is indeed Duan Tian Lang who created the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue.” thought some people in the crowd. In the past, when people didn't know who intended to create such a place, some people thought that its creator was going to be either Duan Tian Lang or Liu Cang Lan. At that moment, everybody finally knew that it was Duan Tian Lang who had created the Holy Courtyard.

“I, Duan Tian Lang, would like to say a few words. You all have travelled over huge distances to come and assist to the inauguration ceremony of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue. Some of you though have come with the hope to be able to join us and become one of our students. If that's the case, please note that you

should be young, outstanding and should at least have broken through to the Ling Qi layer. If you meet our requirements, please write your names on the list. If you are chosen to study at the Holy Courtyard, we will provide you with the best skills and techniques, many disciples will even have access to high quality Xuan level skills.”

When Duan Tian Lang finished talking, many people in the crowd were astonished. Xuan level skills were not easily obtained, especially high quality ones. Unless a cultivator was the disciple of one of the biggest sects or was very rich, obtaining such skills was extremely hard. Even in the biggest sects, disciples had to have reached a certain level before gaining access to such high level skills.

The crowd was extremely excited by Duan Tian Lang’s words. The only thing that annoyed some people was that one of the requirements was to have reached the Ling Qi layer.

“Besides, there is something that I would like to announce today. There are two people that everybody would like to see today at the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue.” said Duan Tian Lang with a weird smile on the corner of his mouth. The crowd was dying out of curiosity. Everybody wanted to see these two people? Who could they be?

Considering the way Duan Tian Lang had said these words, these two people were probably going to be extraordinary talents.

“You two, please come out.” said Duan Tian Lang. Everybody started shaking in anticipation.

There was a person who was falling down from the sky like a snowflake: slowly and softly.

“The high official Luo Xue!” said the crowd stupefied. How incredibly strong and powerful! He was the strongest disciple ever in the Ice and Snow Mountain Village. He was one of the eight high officials. Why would he come to the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue though?

At the same time, an extremely strong wind started blowing over the area. Snowflakes were fluttering in the air. Suddenly, the crowd noticed a shadow in the sky. It was a legendary roc that was flying through the air.

“Chu Zhan Peng!” The eyes of the people in the crowd shrank. The crowd was shaking in excitement and surprise. The two high officials Luo Xue and Chu Zhan Peng were there and were surprisingly going to join the courtyard. Nobody would have ever thought that.

Chu Zhan Peng was Chu Qing’s son and the future Patriarch of the Hao Yue Sect. Why would he want to join the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue?

“So that’s how it is, Luo Xue and Chu Zhan Peng came to join the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue. This is indeed a strange and wonderful event.”

“Duan Tian Lang is very famous and has a great deal of power.”

All sorts of comment were rising amongst the crowd. As expected, extremely famous people had come to join the Holy Courtyard.

Luo Xue and Chu Zhan Peng were standing on Duan Tian Lang's left and right. The Imperial Clan and the two external high officials were standing next to each other shoulder to shoulder.

“And now, let me announce the official opening of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue. I, Duan Tian Lang, am the first principal.” said Duan Tian Lang in such a loud voice that people could hear him for far away in the crowd.

“Duan Lie, congratulations.” said voices amongst the crowd. Many people in the crowd then took out golden ceremony boxes. They were presents for the godlike celebrities who were present.

“Bai Clan. Congratulations.”

“Zhong Clan. Congratulations.”

“Gu Clan. Congratulations.”

“.....”

People were unceasingly coming out of the crowd with golden boxes and rushed to hand over their gifts as if they had been waiting patiently this whole time to offer their congratulations.

Duan Tian Lang had a big smile on his face.

“Thank you everybody. Those concerned, please go ahead and take your gifts.”

Chapter 120: Justice

Those who were congratulating and offering presents were nobles of the Imperial City. The crowd understood that those at the origin of the creation of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue were the Imperial Clan.

It is useless to mention that those who could join the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue were extremely powerful.

Those who were offering the presents then slowly moved back towards the crowd. Duan Tian Lang had a big smile on his face expressing his satisfaction at the way things were turning out. Everybody knew that the next step was the recruitment of new disciples.

But at that moment, a strong Qi emerged from the atmosphere. Everybody had the sensation that the top of their head was suddenly under heavy pressure which made them raise their heads towards the sky.

“Arrow!”

Suddenly, coming from the heavens like a meteor whose trajectory had the shape of a beautiful and perfect arch was piercing through the air at full speed straight towards Duan Tian Lang on the high stage.

“What’s going on?” shouted people in the crowd alarmed. Someone was surprisingly attacking Duan Tian Lang with an

arrow on the day of the inauguration of the Holy Courtyard. How heartless!

Duan Tian Lang was surprised. The smile on his face vanished and was replaced with a cold and evil expression.

“Break!” A strong and powerful sword Qi spread through the atmosphere and blocked the arrow and causing it to fall down onto the ground. At the same time, a strong rumbling noise invaded everybody’s ears and the ground started shaking.

“Liu Cang Lan offers his congratulations for the establishment of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue.” said a loud voice which stupefied the crowd.

Liu Cang Lan, also known as Divine Arrow Liu Cang Lan, he had come and attacked Duan Tian Lang!

“Chi Xie Cavalry troops offer our congratulations for the establishment of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue.”

The reason for the rumbling noises and the shaking ground soon revealed itself. Far away in the horizon, the Qi of a multitude of Chi Xie armored cavalry suddenly revealed itself in the air. The entire crowd could feel the Qi growing nearer and nearer.

“What’s that? What’s going on?” cried out the crowd in alarm. Their expressions were drastically changing. Suddenly, a storm of arrows filled the sky above the crowd. The scene was strangely

beautiful.

Everybody was stunned. They couldn't help but blankly stare at all the arrows which were blotting out the sun. The sky was filled with so many arrows that the sunlight was struggling to pierce through.

Had Liu Cang Lan really come to congratulate the establishment of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue?

“How audacious!” furiously shouted Duan Tian Lang making an evil face. Duan Tian Lang suddenly jumped in the air while holding his sword which emitting a bright, resplendent light.

At the same time, many people jumped in the air as well releasing an extremely strong Qi and attacking the arrows in the sky.

Numerous arrows were falling down at that moment and people in the crowd chaotically tried to avoid being caught in the crossfire.

The Chi Xie armored cavalry quickly arrived and dispersed crowd. A strong wind surrounded them.

Their leader particularly attracted everybody's attention. He had long snow-white hair. He was very handsome and his clothes looked beautiful and clean.

“It's Liu Cang Lan! How come his hair has entirely turned

white?” said some people in the crowd while looking at Liu Cang Lan. Could it be that he had come to the ceremony of the Holy Courtyard to cause trouble?

The Chi Xie armored cavalry had stopped. There were about two hundred of them. Each and every single one of them looked determined and majestic. They all looked like battle hardened conquerors.

“Liu Cang Lan, do you know what you’re doing?” said Duan Tian Lang evilly while fixedly staring at Liu Cang Lan who was sat atop his Chi Xie armored horse.

“I have come in the name of justice.” said Liu Cang Lan sounding calm and serene yet extremely determined.

“Justice?” said Duan Tian Lang while smiling coldly. “Today is the inauguration of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue, it’s the biggest and most important celebration of the country... and you dare talk about justice whatever that is supposed to mean.”

“I have been serving our country for at least twenty years, I have fought on many battlefields and I have never complained about it, even once. Then, I even sent my own daughter to all the corners of the country to find outstanding disciples who could join the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue and become pillars of our nation.” Said Liu Cang Lan while raising his head towards the sky. His long white hair was floating in the wind.

“I dedicated my life to the country. I am the commander of the

army of Chi Xie cavalry... and you, Duan Tian Lang, asked me to lend you my army which I naively did. You then united with other large sects and used my Chi Xie cavalry to go and annihilate the Yun Hai Sect, the sect which made me into the man that I am today... the sect that trained me and cared for me. In one day, you exterminated all of them and left an unceasingly flowing river of blood behind you... and then, you dare say you don't know what I mean by "justice".

said Liu Cang Lan while slowly turning his head towards Duan Tian Lang. Liu Cang Lan's words were filled with a sharp coldness.

When the crowd heard Liu Cang Lan's words, they sighed with emotion. The Imperial Clan was indeed cruel!

Liu Cang Lan was an amazing person. He was a hero of the nation and surprisingly, the Imperial Clan had ordered the destruction of his sect, the Yun Hai Sect!

Nobody would have thought that Duan Tian Lang was capable of such a thing.

"The Yun Hai Sect disobeyed the order of the Imperial Clan and refused to send some of its disciples to the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue. This is what happens when one disobeys imperial orders. Therefore, the destruction of the Yun Hai Sect was a logical punishment for its defiance. Besides, today, you dare enter the Imperial City with the Chi Xie armored cavalry and cause trouble at the inauguration ceremony of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue. This is a serious offense."

said Duan Tian Lang while glancing at Liu Cang Lan coldly. He then added on the same ice-cold tone: "Besides, making the Chi Xie armored cavalry rebel against the

Imperial Clan is another serious crime.”

“Rebel against the Imperial Clan?” the crowd was stupefied. Duan Tian Lang was suddenly accusing Liu Cang Lan of being a rebel. However, Duan Tian Lang and the ones close to him looked calm and didn’t seem too affected by the series of events.

“So, asking for justice is a crime. I see. I, Liu Cang Lan, have a clear conscience and have nothing to be ashamed of when it comes to the Imperial Clan. However, I feel ashamed for my sect, for my brothers and sisters who died.”

“WITH OUR GENERAL UNTIL DEATH!” shouted the cavalry on their Chi Xie armored horses in unison. They had voluntarily followed their general. They were fearlessly defying death.

When the crowd heard the voice of the troops filled with righteous ardour and expressing loyalty to their general, they were all moved. The scene was so tragic and touching.

“What is the point in living such a life?” said Wen Ao Xue in the middle of the crowd. His eyes were filled with sorrow. He looked heartbroken.

Lin Feng was standing next to Wen Ao Xue. Under his bronze mask, his eyes were sparkling.

Liu Cang Lan had come to the Imperial City with his army of Chi Xie armored cavalry. He had come to fight for justice but it was

also clear to him that he could die at any moment.

Liu Cang Lan took a deep and desolate breath and glanced at every single member of his army.

“Since it’s this way, today is going to be our last battle. Too bad that we’re on that square in the Imperial City and not on a battlefield.” said Liu Cang Lan while grabbing his bow. He then put an arrow in it and aimed at Duan Tian Lang. However, Duan Tian Lang looked extremely calm and peaceful. He even had an evil smile on the corner of his mouth.

At the same time, many strong cultivators moved towards Duan Tian Lang’s side at the same time and released some intensely powerful Qi which seemed to be lacerating the atmosphere.

The situation was explosive. A great war was about to break out.

“Wait, wait!” shouted someone in the crowd. Immediately after, a silhouette started walking out of the crowd.

That person was wearing a bronze mask. It was impossible to see their expression.

Liu Cang Lan glanced at him and was about to attack him when he recognized the bronze mask. He was stupefied. He put his bow down.

“That’s him!”

Lin Feng had prevented Liu Cang Lan from crippling his own cultivation in the Yun Hai Sect. Back then, he had understood that that person who was wearing a bronze mask had been Lin Feng. Therefore, at that moment, he was able to recognize him.

The entire Yun Hai Sect had sacrificed themselves to protect and save Lin Feng's life.

"This has nothing to do with you. Get lost." said Liu Cang Lan coldly.

As if Lin Feng hadn't heard Liu Cang Han, he calmly shook his head and said: "General, let bygones be bygones. We cannot bring them back now. Why bother and come to the Imperial City?"

"For justice." replied Liu Cang Lan. He wouldn't have thought that Lin Feng would appear and start talking. Liu Cang Lan was already starting to be puzzled by this dilemma.

"Justice? But what is justice for the general is in other people's eyes considered as suicide. You just looked like a general who wants to die, nothing more. If justice is what you think it is, then it worthless." replied Lin Feng while shaking his head. He started moving towards Liu Cang Lan. Lin Feng then stood next to him and glanced at Duan Tian Lang.

"Duan Tian Lang, today is the inauguration of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue. May I ask some questions?"

Duan Tian Lang wouldn't have thought that Lin Feng would appear on that day. Considering that it was the inauguration day of the courtyard, he had to handle things cleanly and properly. Thus, he couldn't refuse and then said: "Go ahead."

"The Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue, why is it called the "Holy Courtyard"?"

"Because we want it to be a pure and holy place, a place where morally elevated people come to become great cultivators. People who are chosen to study at the courtyard should also have pure souls." replied Duan Tian Lang.

"Hm, I see." said Lin Feng while slightly nodding. He then pointed at the crowd and said: "In the middle of the crowd, there are people from the Hao Yue Sect, from the Ice and Snow Mountain Village as well as people from the Yun Hai Sect which you destroyed. Now you are saying that you want these people to rebel against their own sects to join the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue for the sake of purity and moral values. Is that right?" When Lin Feng finished talking, a complete silence invaded the entire area. Duan Tian Lang was stunned.

"A moment ago, you used the word "rebel" in a negative way but the Yun Hai Sect disciples who followed you after you destroyed their sect, are they not rebels of the Yun Hai Sect as well? But no, according to your logic, these rebels are considered as pure and holy because they joined the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue. That's a weird contradiction." said Lin Feng to Duan Tian Lang who remained silent. Duan Tian Lang opened his mouth but no words

came out. Lin Feng's poignant words made him speechless.

Chapter 121: What an Expression!

Lin Feng didn't care about Duan Tian Lang's facial expression and continued talking: "Duan Tian Lang, I really don't know if you are the one who chose the name "Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue" or if it was someone else."

"Of course it is my idea!" replied Duan Tian Lang immediately. He wanted to kill Lin Feng. He was evilly staring at him.

"What a skilful manipulator." Thought members of the crowd as they watched the scene unfold.

Lin Feng had just said that the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue didn't deserve such a name as it was recruiting rebels. Duan Tian Lang was unable to refute Lin Feng's words which obviously made the crowd agree with Lin Feng.

Lin Feng had just asked him whose idea it was to call it the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue. He obviously knew that Duan Tian Lang would reply that it was his, saying anything else would have been making the ones above him bear the responsibility for that and he didn't dare to accuse them. Besides, Duan Tian Lang had been unable to deny the fact that the courtyard didn't deserve its name which meant that he was recognizing that Lin Feng was correct in what he was saying. He had no argument remaining to defend himself.

"That's the way it is. You, Duan Tian Lang, convinced the biggest sects to hand over their best disciples to you and destroyed the Yun

Hai Sect then finally created the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue. How prestigious! But didn't you know that the Yun Hai Sect was General Liu Cang Lan's sect?" continued Lin Feng while Duan Tian Lang remained uncommunicative.

"That was a very smart move from your part, Duan Tian Lang because Liu Cang Lan was a disciple of the Yun Hai Sect. Besides, everybody knows how kind and honest Liu Cang Lan is. You knew that he would never tolerate your actions of destroying his sect. He would definitely come to you seeking revenge. That way, he would be forced to abandon his official functions and would come to the Imperial City to try and kill you. Then, you would be able to call him a rebel and damage his reputation and make him lose everything that he has built throughout the years. What a perfect plan... Your methods are absolutely perfect... but what was your agenda when you started to plot against one of the pillars supporting this country?" Lin Feng was speaking uninterrupted. Everybody was astonished by every single word that came from his mouth.

That's right. What Lin Feng said was entirely true. That was a demonically perfect plan. However, at that moment, many people thought that Duan Tian Lang probably wasn't the one at the origin of this plot.

Everybody was shaking. They were moved by Lin Feng's words. After everything that Liu Cang Lan had done for his country, who could have dared to plot against him? How tragic.

"Stop babbling nonsense. Shut up!" shouted Duan Tian Lang furiously. An ice-cold Qi which smelt like death suddenly

surrounded Lin Feng's body.

“Could it be that I am wrong? That you are not the author of all these horrors?” added Lin Feng who seemed like hadn't noticed that Duan Tian Lang wanted to kill him. Lin Feng's last remark shook up the crowd.

“Of course it was me who was the origin of all of these events! Are you done talking now?” said Duan Tian Lang unperturbedly admitting that he was the one who had undertaken all of this. But could it be that the people in the shadows were actually the ones who had come up with the ideas first?

However, there weren't many people above Duan Tian Lang in the hierarchy of the country so if he wasn't the one who had undertaken these horrors, who else could it be?

“Of course. I see. Since you admit that you are the who started all of this, I would like to ask you, since you plotted against General Liu Cang Lan and also hurt and killed so many people of the Xue Yue Country, are you not a rebel yourself? Is it not still considered a crime if a member of the Duan Clan rebels?” asked Lin Feng. He glanced at Duan Tian Lang and then at the crowd and said: “And all of you who have helped him do evil, haven't you also committed a crime against the country too?”

The crowd was stunned. Lin Feng was using the arguments, which Duan Tian Lang had used against Liu Cang Lan, but this time they were directed against Duan Tian Lang himself as well as the crowd. Lin Feng believed in justice and knew that he was right with what he was saying. Not the crowd or even Duan Tian Lang

could deny what Lin Feng was saying.

Those who had committed crimes were accusing the innocent people of being guilty. Lin Feng had just brought about a radical change in the situation and was exposing the truth. His tongue was sharp as a sword.

If it was another location then Duan Tian Lang would have killed Lin Feng without hesitation. But that was the inauguration day of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue in the Imperial City, so he had to be prudent and cautious about everything he did. People coming from everywhere in the country were paying attention to his words and behaviour. He couldn't attack Liu Cang Lan except if Liu Cang Lan behaved like he did a moment before when he was ready to attack him. If Duan Tian Lang took the initiative to attack, then that would definitely be a rebellion against the country. If Liu Cang Lan took the initiative, then the blame would fall onto him.

“Why did you come to talk nonsense today? On the day of the inauguration ceremony? What evil intentions have brought you here?” Duan Tian Lang seemed like he had completely forgotten Liu Cang Lan and was now getting excessively angry at Lin Feng. Besides, he had changed the subject completely.

“How am I causing trouble? I just spoke a few truths, that's all. If everybody thinks that everything that I said is unjustified and unreasonable, then I will leave.” said Lin Feng. Actually, he had come to the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue because he was really interested in disrupting the ceremony. Besides, he was hoping to be able to fight against some of its disciples for the sake of achieving enlightenment.

But reality had been different because Liu Cang Lan had appeared unexpectedly. How could Lin Feng let him carry out a suicide attack in the name of justice when his action would have had nothing to do with justice? Lin Feng found out that his words gave Duan Tian Lang the impression that he was being slapped in the face. Lin Feng was quite satisfied even if he thought that it was not near enough punishment for him.

“General, in this world, justice can be protected if you are powerful but for that you need to be alive. So please take care of yourself and at the right moment, you will be able to fight for justice.” said Lin Feng to Liu Cang Lan who was surprised.

“Remember to keep growing stronger. Take care of yourself... only then you can fight for justice...” Only those who could understand such things could be really free in the world.

Liu Cang Lan had come on that day to show that Duan Tian Lang had unfairly destroyed the Yun Hai Sect. Because of his past in the Yun Hai Sect, he felt like he had to avenge it. He thought that it was the right thing to do. However, in Lin Feng’s eyes, Liu Cang Lan’s behaviour was just blind devotion and nothing more.

If Liu Cang Lan acted recklessly and caused his own death then wouldn’t that make the enemy happy? How could that avenge those who unfairly died at their hands?

He was just acting like a desperate man with no other course of action.

“General, just leave.” said Lin Feng. At that moment, Liu Cang Lan slightly nodded.

“Would you like to come with me for a walk?” asked Liu Cang Lan to Lin Feng.

Lin Feng was surprised and then said: “Alright.”

“After all the trouble you caused today, do you think that you can leave that easily?” said Duan Tian Lang who looked furious. They had humiliated him and the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue.

“I’m taking him for a walk. Who will dare and oppose me!” said Liu Cang Lan while glancing at Duan Tian Lang. At that moment, Liu Cang Lan looked like the real Divine Arrow Liu Cang Lan.

At the beginning, Liu Cang Lan wanted to fight but hadn’t yet initiated a full blown conflict. Since Liu Cang Lan wasn’t provoking him anymore and hadn’t committed any offense, Duan Tian Lang couldn’t do anything.

“Liu Cang Lan, you came here without permission and on top of that caused trouble, don’t forget that these are serious offenses.” said Duan Tian Lang coldly.

“What makes you qualified to proclaim my faults? If His Majesty said that I had committed crimes and wanted to dismiss me then I would accept his decision, you however are not qualified to speak

against me.” said Liu Cang Lan indifferently. Duan Tian Lang pulled a long face.

Dismiss him? Liu Cang Lan was a very famous General with a great history on the battlefield. He had accomplished many wonderful things for the country.

“Give him a Chi Xue horse.” said Liu Cang Lan to one of his troops to his side. Immediately after A soldier jumped down from his horse and climbed onto the same horse as one of the other soldiers while Lin Feng took his horse.

“Let’s go.” said Liu Cang Lan to Lin Feng.

Lin Feng was sitting on the Chi Xie armored horse. Before leaving, he nodded at Meng Qing and the others. Lin Feng felt reassured because Meng Qing was there to protect them.

At that moment, Lin Feng passed near Lin Ba Dao and Lin Rui. He looked at them through his bronze mask. They were surprised and didn’t understand why that masked man was looking so deeply at them.

But at that moment Lin Feng and the other Chi Xie armored horses all left. Lin Ba Dao and Lin Rui who were confused just stared at these silhouettes while frowning. Their facial expression remained in an intense frown for a long time.

Chapter 122: Xue Yu

The armored horses were galloping at great speed on an old and ancient road. At that moment, two horses were gradually slowing down. Lin Feng looked around. Milky white smoke was could be seen coming from some chimneys in the distance. Surprisingly, they had come a small village. It wasn't that small either.

In the Continent of the Nine Clouds, cultivators were respected and had the power but there were many ordinary people who didn't have a spirit and who couldn't practice cultivation.

“Lin Feng, we have arrived at the border region of Duan Ren City.” said Liu Cang Lan to Lin Feng pointing at the city.

“We finally arrived.” thought Lin Feng seeing that they were getting closer and closer to the city.

The Chi Xie armored horses were extremely fast but as before the Xue Yue Country was still as vast as ever. Therefore, they had required six days to arrive in this city which was situated in the north of the country.

Duan Ren City.

“This road is weird. Everything is open and accessible. Anybody could attack and destroy it.” said Lin Feng to Liu Cang Lan.

“They don't even think about that.” replied Liu Cang Lan

indifferently which made Lin Feng shiver.

They didn't think about that?

In this city, it seemed like there were only ordinary people. They could easily be killed by even weak cultivators.

“Lin Feng, do you know how huge our continent is?”

“I'm not sure.” replied Lin Feng shaking his head.

“The Continent of the Nine Clouds is extremely vast and has many countries. There is the Imperial Country of Yu and our country, the Xue Yue Country, which is inside Xue Yu.” said Liu Cang Lan slowly and then continued: “Xue Yu has thirteen countries amongst which four of them are extremely large.”

Lin Feng was stupefied. He had never heard of Xue Yu. Thirteen countries... and the Xue Yue Country was inside Xue Yu... Lin Feng didn't really understand what that meant. He didn't know what these territories looked like on a map.

“All of our countries are interconnected. There are agreements in place and our Xue Yue Country also respects these agreements. We wouldn't attack each other. However, in case that something like that happened then the weak would probably become the prey of the strong. Being strong is one of the most important rules in the Continent of the Nine Clouds.”

“However, every ten years, the thirteen countries choose the most outstanding disciples of their country and organize the Great Competition of Xue Yu. The Great Competition of Xue Yu consists of battles between these disciples. It is said that the winner can win an incredible amount of wealth and items. Besides, the winner has the opportunity to go to a mysterious and secret location to practice cultivation. ”

“The Great Competition of Xue Yu... a mysterious and secret location!” Lin Feng was shivering. Maybe Luo Xue and Chu Zhan Peng had joined the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue for that exact reason. Lin Feng was wondering if there was a correlation between what Liu Cang Lan was saying and the fact that these two high officials had chosen to study at the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue.

“Nonetheless, there are some countries who wish they could become extremely strong and annex other territories. This is something that is made possible during the Great Competition of Xue Yu. Everything always comes down to power. If they manage to annex other territories, it means that they would gain power and have access to a greater number of outstanding talents. Many countries wish they could become the Imperial Country.

“I see.” Lin Feng would have never thought that countries would fight each other in the frame of a great competition.

“You should be able to understand now why they destroyed the Yun Hai Sect. That is why they are trying to put all their best disciples into one place: the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue.” said Liu Cang Lan. Lin Feng slightly nodded. They had built the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue because they needed more outstanding

disciples and they needed to greatly increase the strength of the disciples in the country.

“They want to kill me because the sphere of influence of my army is too large. They destroyed the Yun Hai Sect because they want to unify the country under one banner. The other sects have been magnanimous but at some point, the Imperial Clan will probably start paying more attention to them and their fate will be the same as that of the Yun Hai Sect.” said Liu Cang Lan while sighing.

Lin Feng was feeling angrier and angrier. They definitely had their prey in sight.

“General, get down from your horses and come drink some water.”

At that moment, there were two people who had come from the village and one of them was a woman. She was the one who had shouted these words to Liu Cang Lan.

“General, your hair.....”

“No time. We are in a hurry. We cannot stop.” replied Liu Cang Lan to the woman while smiling. At that moment, many people were coming out of their houses and looking at Liu Cang Lan. Their eyes were filled with respect and admiration. Lin Feng was looking at Liu Cang Lan the same way.

The masses had always feared the army but these ordinary people

were looking at Liu Cang Lan with respect and affection. He had managed to win the hearts of the people.

Lin Feng found it unfortunate that they weren't in the previous world. Lin Feng thought that a person like Liu Cang Lan could have become one of the most important people in his previous world. He could probably achieve great things.

At that moment, another small town appeared in front Lin Feng.

“General, you came back.”

“Quickly, open the gate.”

Many people, when they saw that Liu Cang Lan had come back, looked excited. A short moment after, a multitude of people came to the gate.

“General!” shouted the crowd loudly. They all knew that the Yun Hai Sect had been destroyed and that their general had left to the Imperial City because of those events. They were terrified by the idea that their general would maybe never come back. They were thus very happy to see him return safely.

When Liu Cang Lan saw all those people, he took a few deep breaths. His heart was filled with joy. These people were his people and their lives were in Liu Cang Lan's hands.

“I came back.” said Liu Cang Lan. He then urged his horse

onwards and galloped into the town at full speed. He was moving so fast that the wind around him created whistling sounds as he passed through the air.

Lin Feng's Chi Xie armored horse was closely following Liu Cang Lan.

This town wasn't exactly big and was only a small part of the territory. Liu Cang Lan lived in another region of the city near another gate.

Liu Cang Lan hadn't arrived yet but there was a silhouette on a horse was coming towards him. She was urging on her horse forwards using a whip. She was wearing fire-red robes.

"Father!" Liu Fei's eyes were red and full of tears.

Not many people understood why he had gone to the Imperial City. Liu Fei didn't understand clearly either.

When she heard that her father had come back, she rushed over to see him with tears in her eyes. Liu Fei was worried about her father and thought that he may not return alive.

"Fei Fei." said Liu Cang Lan. He seemed to be a very affectionate father as he looking lovingly at his daughter.

Liu Fei looked at her father and a few seconds later, said: "Liu Cang Lan, you're finally here. How could you be so stupid!"

“Eh!” A soldier next to Lin Feng was surprised and couldn’t help letting his shock escape his mouth. Liu Fei was really rude!

Immediately after, Liu Cang Lan smiled in an even more affectionate way. It was a wry smile though. After all, he was indeed really stupid sometimes.

“Alright, Fei Fei, I’m here, are you not happy that I have returned?”

“You are feeling happy that you have returned but I am still not happy.” She said galloped towards her father and said: “Father, promise me that you won’t do something like this again in the future.”

“I won’t.” said Liu Cang Lan while shaking his head. He then pointed at Lin Feng and said: “Fei Fei, you can thank him. He’s the one who saved your old father from making a mistake which he could not come back from.”

“Huh?” Liu Fei looked at Lin Feng. That young man’s robes were full of dirt because of the long journey they had taken to get here. Besides, his bronze mask looked terribly evil the more that one looked at it. The Qi emanating from his body was very strange as well.

“Father, who is this young man?” said Liu Fei while looking at Lin Fen with a perplexed face.

Liu Cang Lan laughed and said: “Don’t you recognize him?”

Liu Fei was stunned. Recognize him? She didn’t know anyone who went around wearing a bronze mask!

Lin Feng smiled and said as a joke: “What? Can you not even recognize your boyfriend?”

When he finished talking, he took off his mask. When Liu Fei saw his face, her lips started to tremble. She was overwhelmed with all different kinds of emotions but eventually a huge smile which was filled with warmth appeared and covered her face.

Chapter 123: Duan Ren Border

“LIN FENG!!!!” The one, who was wearing that bronze mask, surprisingly was Lin Feng! ...and he was the person who had saved her father’s life?

Liu Cang Lan looked at Lin Feng’s face. He had met Lin Feng only twice and both times, he was wearing a bronze mask. It was the first time that he saw Lin Feng without his mask.

He was smiling and seemed like a very good natured person. Despite his age, he looked mysterious and mature. Only his mouth revealed a frivolous and unruly smile which showed that he probably had a good sense of humour as well.

“How young!” shouted Liu Cang Lan stupefied and then whispered: “How mysterious he seems almost mystical.”

The first time Liu Cang Lan had seen Lin Feng, Lin Feng had pronounced a few deep and mysterious sentences which had deeply influenced his thoughts and opinions.

The second time that he had met him, Lin Feng had fearlessly contradicted Duan Tian Lang leaving him dumbstruck and unable to reply. He had also damaged the reputation of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue. The one who had taken such brave actions inside the Imperial City was this smiling young man.

These things didn’t only require intelligence. They also required a person to be courageous, fearless and quite audacious to dare

make Duan Tian Lang lose face in front of so many people. It also required a person to be quite unconventional and unrestrained.

Liu Cang Lan would have never thought that such an extraordinary person could be so young.

“Lin Feng, you just said that you are..... Liu Fei’s boyfriend.” suddenly said Liu Cang Lan recalling what Lin Feng had just said. He had a strange expression on his face and asked: “Is it true?”

Lin Feng suddenly became very shy and scratched his head while remaining silent. Liu Fei was staring at him stunned.

“Father, don’t listen to that bastard. He’s just a despicable pervert.” At that moment, she was angry at Lin Feng for having dared say that he was her boyfriend in front of her father. How embarrassing!

“A despicable pervert?!” Lin Feng looked very awkward after hearing such words. He then resolutely said to Liu Fei: “Fei Fei, are you not the one who asked me out and said that we were in a relationship in front of everyone the other day? If I’m a pervert, you are one as well!”

“.....” Liu Fei’s eyes almost rolled. What a crazy bastard!

Liu Cang Lan’s eyes were huge and wide open. He didn’t understand what was going on at all!

Lin Feng stared at Liu Fei's beautiful face making her blush. Why had she started calling him a pervert again?

While looking at both of them in such a strange situation, Liu Cang Lan couldn't help but smile and said: "Fei Fei, that's alright, I have seen enough. Let's go now."

Liu Fei angrily looked at Lin Feng and then made her horse turn around.

The three of them were riding their horses. Suddenly, many of the soldiers of Liu Cang Lan's army, when they saw Lin Feng with the group, started to approach them. The crowd suddenly knelt down and bowed to the extent that their heads made a loud thud when colliding with the solid ground.

Lin Feng was astonished and found it very strange especially that these people were not prostrating themselves in front of Liu Cang Lan... or Liu Fei... but in front of him!

"Thank you for having saved our General's life." The people in the crowd were thanking Lin Feng one after another. Lin Feng was stupefied.

"Please stand up. There is no need to do such a thing." replied Lin Feng. These people were incredibly strong and had experienced many extraordinary things throughout their lifetime. How could they bow and worship Lin Feng?

“Young Man, you didn’t save only our general’s life but you also saved two hundred Chi Xie armored cavalry soldiers. If our general died, our town would probably be in danger and might be invaded. It means that you saved and protected many people’s lives with your actions.” said a soldier looking solemn and grateful. Lin Feng was still surprised. He had never thought about these things.

“Oh I see but that’s enough, please stand up now.”

Lin Feng wasn’t an arrogant person and everybody could see it. Everybody stood up when Lin Feng told them. They could see that he looked embarrassed from having so much attention on him.

“That’s alright, everybody can disperse now.” said Liu Cang Lan while waving to everyone. Everybody then quietly left.

“Lin Feng, these people are not soldiers. They are officers. They are the best elements of my army. They can all lead groups of a few hundred people. I have only five hundred officers. I trust them more than anyone else in the world. The soldiers who came with me to the Imperial City are all guards. You saved their lives. In the future if there is an opportunity, they will be your assistants.” said Liu Cang Lan.

Lin Feng was surprised and replied: “My.... assistants?”

“Indeed, your assistants.” said Liu Cang Lan honestly while nodding. He then added: “You noticed that some people want to do me harm. At some point, they might succeed... If in the future you are also involved in these battles then they will all come to help

you.”

Lin Feng was smiling wryly. Who knew what would happen in the future?

Lin Feng noticed the other gate of the town and sighed. They were in the very north of the country at the border with another country. If there was an attack someday, even if it wasn't supposed to happen, Liu Cang Lan's territory would be the first one to be involved in battles.

“Fei Fei, you go first. Lin Feng and I are going on a walk.” said Liu Cang Lan to Liu Fei. Liu Fei was surprised and strangely stared at her father.

“Alright.” she said while nodding. She didn't ask her father for explanations and left.

“Lin Feng, let's walk to the gate.” said Liu Cang Lan while looking at Lin Feng.

Lin Feng was also surprised. He didn't know why Liu Cang Lan wanted Liu Fei to leave them alone.

“Alright.” said Lin Feng while nodding. They galloped towards the western gate of the city. There were lots of troops in that area. Even though they were looking at Liu Cang Lan, they didn't move away from their respective positions.

They got down off their horses and Liu Cang Lan then brought Lin Feng towards a flight of stairs on the left of the gate. The flight of stairs led to the gate tower which was very large. They went up all the way to the top of the tower, Lin Feng suddenly just felt an extremely strong and cold wind blowing on his face.

Lin Feng then looked at the landscape and was completely amazed.

“Duan Ren City, the city of a thousand blades!” thought Lin Feng.

In front of him was a vast field which looked boundless. There was a myriad of bladed weapons lying on the ground. Some of these weapons were already completely rusted and worn down over time.

“Since the battle, I have never given the order to remove these weapons from their positions. I rather prefer leaving them there in remembrance of those heroic souls.” said Liu Cang Lan slowly. He pointed his finger at the distance. It looked like a gigantic sword had cut a mountain into two. It strangely resembled the mountain where he could see sunlight shining in the Yun Hai Sect, the place where Liu Fei used to practice cultivation. That place was surrounded by a moat.

As that natural moat was surrounded by high hills, it was easier for Liu Cang Lan’s troops to shoot at people who would try and come from that location. They were extremely vulnerable if they came from that location.

“That place is the border. If you were to go there then there is a good chance that you will not make it back alive. It’s called Duan Ren Border.”

“Duan Ren Border... Logical.” whispered Lin Feng.

“This is the border with the Mo Yue Country. The Mo Yue Country and our Xue Yue country, are very different. In the Mo Yue Country, they don’t have sects and they are completely united. Therefore, they are much stronger than us as they have a combined power. They have a huge army which is under a single banner. If they weren’t scared of my army in Duan Ren City, they probably would have attacked a long time ago.” said Liu Cang Lan. That is why, Liu Cang Lan, a long time ago had spared no effort and had fearlessly led his army into great battles. He had emerged victorious and created a legend which brought fear to his enemies.

“Lin Feng, you saw how dangerous the situation is for me, someday, I will probably have my life taken from me and I’m not speaking carelessly when I say this...”

Lin Feng understood why Liu Cang Lan had abandoned the Yun Hai Sect in the past. He had left everything behind to protect his country from invaders. In the Xue Yue Country, there were internal and external threats. The situation was extremely complex.

“Lin Feng, there is something that I would like to ask you.”

Lin Feng was stupefied. He was staring at Liu Cang Lan. What

could Liu Cang Lan have to ask from him?

Liu Cang Lan slowly said: “Please take good care of Fei Fei.”

Chapter 124: Heartless Imperial Family

Take care of Liu Fei? Lin Feng first blankly stared at Liu Cang Lan and then smiled wryly. It wasn't that easy to take care of Liu Fei.

If only Liu Fei was similar to Meng Qing... But at that moment, Lin Feng was living with Meng Qing... what about Liu Fei? That was a difficult situation for Lin Feng. He didn't know what to do.

Besides, Meng Qing wanted to take care of him and wanted for him to tell her stories all the time.

“Uncle Liu Cang Lan, why do you trust me?”

“When the Yun Hai Sect was destroyed, they all sacrificed their lives to protect you. If I can't trust you, then there is nobody in this world that I can trust.” said Liu Cang Lan while fixedly staring at Lin Feng. He then smiled and said: “Besides, I think that Fei Fei and you are a very good match. If you want to take care of her forever, I have no objection to your union.”

“Ehhhh....” Lin Feng was really stunned. Liu Cang Lan was surprisingly trying to make Lin Feng and Liu Fei become engaged. Because of her incredible beauty this offer would be hard to resist for any ordinary man.

Of course, Lin Feng wasn't an ordinary man.

“Uncle Liu Cang Lan, I am not that kind of person but I have listened to what you have to say and I can promise you that I will do my best to take good care of her.” replied Lin Feng in a low voice.

“Liu Cang Lan smiled. He liked Lin Feng. He then said: “I understand. I know that you are not that kind of person. Lin Feng, it is Liu Fei who expressed this.”

When Lin Feng heard Liu Cang Lan’s ambiguous words, he felt like crawling into a hole and disappearing from the world. He was extremely embarrassed. Maybe Liu Cang Lan thought that what Lin Feng had meant when he said he was not that kind of person was that he wasn’t a talented enough when it came to women but Liu Cang Lan found it strange.

But did Lin Feng have a choice? If he refused Liu Cang Lan’s offer, It would be too suspicious.....

When Liu Fei had heard her father tell her that he wanted to spend some time alone with Lin Feng. She felt incredibly furious in her heart.

At that moment, Lin Feng and Liu Fei were in her house. Liu Fei angrily looked at Lin Feng and said: “What did you tell my father?”

She remembered that Lin Feng had said that he was her boyfriend in front of her father. It was very possible that her father had misunderstood Lin Feng. At that moment, Liu Cang Lan had asked Liu Fei to leave with Lin Feng without asking for her opinion

and gave her no chance to respond.

Poor Lin Feng. He didn't want to argue. He was just smiling wryly.

"Father, I'm not leaving." said Liu Fei while shaking her head and looking at her father.

"Don't make trouble, Fei Fei! I have made this decision and I will not change my mind. I told Lin Feng to stay in Duan Ren City for three days. Three days from now, you will both leave together." said Liu Cang Lan strictly. He was extremely firm and strict with his words.

"Father!" shouted Liu Fei who wanted to say something else but was interrupted by Liu Cang Lan.

"No! You have nothing to add! I am your father and you will listen to me."

Liu Fei was shaking while staring at her father which made Liu Cang Lan want to take back his words and give her a choice but he was convinced that Liu Fei had to leave so he did not take back his words and stayed silent.

"I'm sorry. I will not disobey." Liu Fei, didn't say anything else and ran towards her room with a bright red face.

When Liu Cang Lan saw Liu Fei run like this. He felt powerless.

Lin Feng felt powerless as well. Because of all the problems Liu Cang Lan had he would constantly be worried to death if Liu Fei stayed.

“Some people are really heartless...” thought Lin Feng.

.....

Three days later, dust rose all around the galloping horses. Several hundreds of Chi Xie armored horses were galloping on that ancient road.

“Uncle Liu Cang Lan, you can accompany us to here we should be fine from this point on.” said Lin Feng to Liu Cang Lan.

Their horses gradually slowed down and stopped. Liu Cang Lan looked at Liu Fei. He looked reluctant to part with them. He also didn't know when they would meet again.

“Father, you can go back now.” said Liu Fei reluctantly. She was gritting her teeth.

“Fei Fei, Please listen to Lin Feng.” said Liu Cang Lan while strictly staring at Liu Fei.

Even though Liu Cang Lan hadn't known Lin Feng for a long time, he knew that Lin Feng was extremely strong. He felt reassured to know that Lin Feng was there to take care of Liu Fei.

Liu Fei glanced at Lin Feng, nodded and said: “Father, I will.”

“Take care of yourself.” said Liu Cang Lan while turning around and galloping away.

“Lin Feng, please take good care of her.” shouted Liu Cang Lan from far away.

“Sister, have a safe trip.”

“Brother, have a safe trip.”

The cavalry on their Chi Xie armored horses shouted these words to Liu Fei and Lin Feng and left by following Liu Cang Lan.

Liu Fei stared at them for a while, motionless.

Lin Feng stayed next to her and remained silent.

“Yesterday, my father told me that he had abandoned the Yun Hai Sect in the past even though they had taught him so much. He thinks that he is responsible for the destruction of the Yun Hai Sect. He feels endless regret in his heart about the events which occurred.”

“My father also told me that during the great battle against Duan Ren Border, my mother had been killed. He hadn’t even talked to

her before she was killed. He feels extremely guilty.”

“My father also said that because of the issues with the Duan Ren Border, he hadn’t had time to take care of me which is why he had sent me to the Yun Hai Sect. Because he didn’t assume his responsibilities as a father, he also said sorry to me, his daughter.”

“My father also said that during the war of the Duan Ren Border, he had lost many of his troops, a hundred thousand or more... They are buried outside of Duan Ren City and he... is still alive. He feels regret in his heart that he could not save any of them.”

Lin Feng was calmly listening to Liu Fei. He found all these stories extremely complex.

“I know why my father wants me to leave. He doesn’t want me to get involved. He feels sorry and regrets many things but one thing I know is that the Xue Yue Country should feel regret for what they did and are doing to him. They are the ones who should say sorry to him.”

Lin Feng raised his head and looked at the sky while listening to Liu Fei. Even if the Xue Yue Country said sorry to him that would never be enough! If Lin Feng was strong enough, he would go to the Imperial City and ask the Imperial Clan how they feel about it. He was really curious to know how these people really felt from the bottom of their hearts.

Only those who were strong enough could influence others. In that world, if someone was strong enough, he could destroy an

entire country with a wave of his hand and no one would stand against him.

Lin Feng would never understand why strength was so important in this land.

“If you want to cry then you can go ahead. Its ok.” said Lin Feng to Liu Fei in a soft and affectionate voice.

Liu Fei had too much pressure. What a pity for such a beautiful sixteen year old girl.

When Liu Fei heard Lin Feng’s words, tears started unceasingly flowing along her beautiful soft cheeks. Suddenly, she started sobbing loudly. She was shaking. She could barely breathe from all the tears that endlessly fell from her eyes.

Lin Feng smiled wryly. Girls were all the same. Enough pressure would make them cry even though they tried to hide it.

Lin Feng made his horse go next to Liu Fei’s one and put his hand on her shoulder. He then jumped down from his horse onto Liu Fei’s horse and said: “It’s ok, you can wipe your tears on me.”

Liu Fei turned around, looked at Lin Feng with her eyes full of tears and then pushed her face into his chest while sobbing in his arms.

A while after, Liu Fei calmed down. She looked at Lin Feng and

said: “You’re a real pervert. You’re taking advantage of the situation.”

“Eh....” Lin Feng was stupefied. What a moody girl.

“It seems like someone is in love with me.” said Lin Feng.

Liu Fei looked at him and said: “Get over yourself.”

“You like manipulating people, don’t you?” said Lin Feng while laughing. He then jumped back onto his Chi Xue armored horse.

Liu Fei still had tears in her eyes and her face was red but she didn’t want Lin Feng to see her.

“Let’s go.” said Liu Fei to Lin Feng. The Chi Xie armored horses immediately left as if they were able to understand the ones riding them. They left at full speed. Lin Feng smiled.

Making Liu Fei listen to him was going to be such a difficult task!

On the old and ancient road, a picturesque scene unfurled of a young handsome boy and an extremely beautiful young girl galloping on their horses, swiftly into the horizon.

Chapter 125: When They Met!

Outside of the Celestial Academy, two horses had appeared. At that moment, the recruitment procedure had already finished.

A crowd formed and started getting bigger and bigger. People were staring at these two Chi Xie armored horses and the two people who were on top of them. They were particularly interested in Liu Fei.

“The Celestial Academy!” said Liu Fei looking at the large gate. She then asked Lin Feng: “Why the hell did you bring me here?”

“To practice cultivation, obviously.” replied Lin Feng and then added: “Let’s go inside.”

“I don’t have a recommendation letter... besides, I will not join the Celestial Academy.” said Liu Fei and then continued: “And you shouldn’t either, are you forgetting about the Yun Hai Sect.”

Liu Fei was Liu Cang Lan’s daughter so she obviously knew about the Celestial Academy.

“I haven’t joined it either and I can bring you in without a letter of recommendation.” said Lin Feng while shaking his head. He knew what Liu Fei meant. After so many people had sacrificed their lives to save him including some elders, studying in another place would be a kind of betrayal to the Yun Hai Sect.

“Don’t forget that your father told you to listen to me.” said Lin Feng. When he saw that Liu Fei wasn’t reacting, he urged the horse forwards and went into the academy.

Liu Fei looked at Lin Feng’s silhouette and then galloped behind him. She was shocked by the fact that nobody prevented her from entering in the academy.

“How did you do that?” asked Liu Fei. She clearly knew that the academy didn’t allow anybody to penetrate into the territory of the academy. She didn’t know why they would make an exception for her. How could it be that easy to enter? The only explanation was Lin Feng. Besides, he had said it himself a moment before, that she didn’t need a letter of recommendation to enter.

“Well, it’s nothing extraordinary considering who my girlfriend is.” Lin Feng said with a smile.

Liu Fei angrily stared at him.

“What are you looking like that for? I didn’t say that you’re my girlfriend. I’m sorry but it seems like your love for me is not reciprocated.” said Lin Feng while arrogantly looking at Liu Fei. That girl thought too much.

When she heard Lin Feng’s words, she started shaking in anger. That damn bastard!

It was the first time that Liu Fei went to the Celestial Academy.

She found that the scenery was majestic and imposing.

Lin Feng and Liu Fei had arrived outside of the palace where the students' rooms were located. He looked at Liu Fei and asked: "I guess you already know about the three different categories of cultivators that are studying at the academy."

"I know that it produced army officers, government officials and assassins. In Duan Ren City, my father's army is composed of many people who studied at the Celestial Academy. They are all very strong individuals. Many cultivators who studied here became strong Chi Xie Protectors."

Lin Feng looked surprised, looked at Liu Fei and said: "Chi Xie Protectors? Uncle Liu lets them become protectors that easily?"

The Chi Xie Protectors were Liu Cang Lan's closest troops. Besides, Lin Feng had asked himself before about the status of the people who graduated from the Celestial Academy. If they could become such prestigious cultivators, didn't it mean that the Imperial City had to be supporting it?

Liu Fei was looking at Lin Feng as if she was looking at an idiot: "Do you think that my father is that kind of person?"

Lin Feng smiled wryly. Indeed. Liu Cang Lan could easily recognize people with high abilities. He wouldn't let anyone become a Chi Xie protector.

“Here is the place where those who study military skills stay. Even though we are not students of the academy, we have the right to live here. We can study about military skills and techniques.”

Liu Fei was astonished. She was really wondering how Lin Feng had achieved such a thing. She had asked him already but he didn't reply. She didn't feel like asking him again so she just nodded her head.

When they arrived in Lin Feng's living quarters, Yuan Shan and Duan Feng were chatting. When they saw Lin Feng and Liu Fei, they were pleasantly surprised.

“Lin Feng, big brother!”

“Lin Feng, my friend!”

The two of them happily said Lin Feng's name in unison. Immediately after, they looked at Liu Fei. Yuan Shan looked at Liu Fei in an ambiguous way.

“Lin Feng, big brother, who is she?” asked Duan Feng while looking at Liu Fei in such a way that gave the impression he was worshiping her. Meng Qing and Lin Feng had already decided to live together. How could Lin Feng go out and come back with a new amazingly beautiful girl?

“Liu Fei!” said a voice behind Duan Feng. Jing Yun walked towards them. When she saw that Lin Feng and Liu Fei were

together, she made a strange face.

In the Yun Hai Sect, Liu Fei was considered as the most beautiful girl. A countless number of men were courting her. Since the Yun Hai Sect had been destroyed, Jing Yun had thought that Liu Fei had died like the others. She wouldn't have thought she would see her again, especially with Lin Feng..... Besides... on that day at the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue, hadn't Lin Feng left with Liu Cang Lan?

“Liu Fei, the girl who possesses the Divine Arrow spirit.” said Lin Feng. Duan Feng and Yuan Shan were stunned.

That exceptionally beautiful girl was Liu Cang Lan's daughter... No wonder Lin Feng was with her. Jing Yun was even more astonished. She didn't know that she was Liu Cang Lan's daughter until that moment.

“Hello.” said Yuan Shan whose expression had slightly changed. His eyes were suddenly filled with respect. Liu Cang Lan was one of the people whom Yuan Shan respected the most. Too bad that on the other day, he had only seen him from far away and hadn't been able to talk to him. He wished he could have followed Lin Feng and Liu Cang Lan. Yuan Shan wasn't the only person who was like that. Many disciples who were studying military skills also idolized Liu Cang Lan.

Who was a great general? Who could kill people from very far away with incredible accuracy using his arrows? Liu Cang Lan! Many boys were very excited even if they only heard Liu Cang Lan's name.

And Liu Fei was his daughter. When Liu Fei noticed Yuan Shan's fanaticism, her heart was filled with sorrow. Everybody knew how heroic and great Liu Cang Lan was but nobody knew how difficult the situation was for him. Nobody knew that some people in the country wanted to eliminate him and take all of the power for themselves.

"Lin Feng, I would like to rest." said Liu Fei calmly. Lin Feng sighed. He noticed that Liu Fei hadn't completely recovered.

"Here or do you want to choose your own place? There are many free apartments. Choose one for yourself." said Lin Feng.

"No need. I'm going to rest in your room." said Liu Fei calmly. Everyone was stunned.

Lin Feng was even more stupefied. He was speechless. At that moment, he thought that the most complicated thing to understand in the world was women's logic.

Lin Feng scratched his head and said: "It's not very convenient. You should definitely find your own place."

"Don't worry, I don't mind. Why would you?" said Liu Fei and continued: "Where is your place?"

"That one." said Lin Feng who had no alternative while pointing towards his own room.

At that moment, Yuan Shan quickly moved in front of Lin Feng's door and said while shaking his head: "You should choose another place."

When Lin Feng saw that Yuan Shan was obstructing the way to his room, he was surprised. Everybody had a suspicious expression on their face. Then, Duan Feng and Jing Yun nodded their heads indicating that they didn't approve Liu Fei staying in Lin Feng's room either.

Nothing worked though. They hadn't managed to convince Liu Fei.

"No need. I'll rest here." Liu Fei moved closer to Yuan Shan. Yuan Shan then said: "Lin Feng, my friend, you should get in there first."

"Alright." nodded Lin Feng. He moved towards the big stone door, opened it and entered his room. Liu Fei followed him.

"Who's that?!"

"What a terrifying strength." thought Lin Feng.

At that moment, an extremely strong Qi came out and crashed onto Lin Feng's body. He almost fell down. At that moment, Lin Feng understood why Yuan Shan had told him to enter first. How kind!

“It’s me.” shouted Lin Feng. Suddenly, the Qi disappeared.

Liu Fei was standing behind Lin Feng and shaking from head to toe. That oppressive Qi a moment ago had almost made her collapse. What a powerful strength!

Yuan Shan was outside of the room and had a wry smile on his face. Fortunately, he had asked Lin Feng to enter first. That rumbling sound emitted by the release of that strong Qi had resonated in the entire palace. His heart was still fluttering with fear. That girl was terrifyingly strong.

“How come you didn’t come back earlier?” asked Meng Qing coldly from the back of the room.

Meng Qing was still wearing a fine veil on her face as well as her beautiful white robes. She looked so divine, as if she was above the material things of this world.

She still looked extremely beautiful.

When Liu Fei saw Meng Qing, it seemed her eyes were about to pop from their sockets.

At the same time, when Meng Qing saw Liu Fei, her eyes shook for a second and suddenly her eyebrows seemed to indicate that she was extremely unhappy!

Chapter 126: Meng Qing's Pain!

But very quickly, Meng Qing stopped looking at Liu Fei and calmly looked at Lin Feng. Right after that, she went into a small room of the living quarters and closed the door.

Meng Qing's reaction made Lin Feng smile wryly. From Meng Qing's cold and detached reaction, Lin Feng couldn't guess what she was thinking. He had no idea what she was feeling in her heart.

“Lin Feng... you're a real bastard.....” Liu Fei was biting on her lips and looked at Lin Feng with her eyes filled with sadness. She then immediately left the living quarters.

“.....”

Lin Feng was puzzled. Millions of questions passed through his mind. Wasn't she a bit moody? How could she look at him with such eyes? She looked completely heartbroken. Could it be that she really liked him?

Lin Feng was lost and didn't understand anything anymore so he was just smiling wryly. Women's hearts were really incomprehensible for him.

Of course Lin Feng didn't understand Liu Fei's inner-thoughts. When Liu Cang Lan had asked Lin Feng to take of Liu Fei, his purpose was to make them more intimate by spending longer periods of time with each other.

Liu Cang Lan didn't know how long he would be able to stay alive. He was in great danger after all. The only person Liu Fei could rely on if he died was Lin Feng. Even though they didn't like each other at the beginning because of a few misunderstandings, afterwards Lin Feng had shown that he was the kind of person that she could believe in. He had displayed outstanding physical abilities and was very enlightened on spiritual matters. While getting to know Lin Feng, Liu Fei had gradually forgotten about all of the bad things she thought about Lin Feng originally. Especially, when he left the Yun Hai Sect on the day of the bloodbath, she only had only thought positive things about Lin Feng.

Liu Fei already had feelings for Lin Feng which is why she had accepted to listen to her father and follow Lin Feng. Besides, deep in her heart, she was starting to get used to being together with Lin Feng. Therefore, she found it very normal to live alone with Lin Feng.

But when Liu Fei opened the door of Lin Feng's living quarters, the first thing she was a girl and on top of that, an incredibly beautiful girl. She felt like her heart was broken which is why she had rushed out of the living quarters. She couldn't stand it any longer.

"Lin Feng, whom are you going to comfort first? The one inside? Or are you going to chase the other one outside?" asked Yuan Shan who was standing outside. Lin Feng frowned after hearing his words.

"I should go and talk to Liu Fei first." thought Lin Feng. Liu Fei

was still particularly vulnerable because of all the things that had happened, including those with her father. Lin Feng was really worried about her.

Lin Feng went out, jumped through the air and tried to catch up with Liu Fei. She was heading towards the exit. She seemed like she was really angry and wasn't even saying a word.

Lin Feng followed her and finally caught up with her. At that moment, they were already outside of the ancient palace.

"Why are you doing this to me?" asked Liu Fei to Lin Feng. She looked at him with an ice cold glare. Lin Feng clearly noticed that she was jealous.

Lin Feng was feeling weird deep in his heart. He had never felt in love during his lifetime so he didn't know what it felt like but at that moment, delicate and subtle emotions filled his heart.

Lin Feng remained speechless and was just fixedly staring at Liu Fei while walking with her.

"I asked you a question." said Liu Fei glaring at Lin Feng.

Lin Feng was still staring at her. Liu Fei was stupefied. What the hell was he looking at?!

"Do... you like me?" said Lin Feng in a small and weak voice while scratching his head.

Liu Fei was startled with surprise and almost fell down. She turned around, blinked and looked at Lin Feng. Suddenly, she started laughing loudly.

“Me? Like you? In your dreams!” replied Liu Fei coldly. She then turned around and walked at a faster pace. She had never had such feelings and emotions before. Her heart was pounding extremely fast.

“Really?” said Lin Feng surprised. Could it be that he had just imagined it?

“Liu Fei, stop walking away please.” shouted Lin Feng to Liu Fei who was moving farther and farther away. Liu Fei suddenly stopped walking.

“Don’t forget what you promised to your father! You must listen to me.” said Lin Feng impolitely.

Liu Fei obviously found it hard to turn around. She gnashed her teeth while furiously looking at Lin Feng. That bastard was using her promise to her dad as an excuse!

But at that moment, Lin Feng walked up to her. When he arrived next to her, his hand grabbed Liu Fei’s hand and he said: “Let’s go back, alright?”

Lin Feng was holding her hand so tightly that she couldn’t get

away from him. That bastard was using strength against her. As she couldn't break her hand free from his, she just angrily glared at him.

“Relax now.” Lin Feng was proud of himself. Coping with women wasn't an easy thing but Liu Fei was being docile at that moment.

Of course, He wouldn't be able to do the same thing with Meng Qing. If he tried to use force against her, she would probably attack him and in the blink of an eye he would be sent flying.

A short time after, Yuan Shan and Duan Feng saw Lin Feng and Liu Fei coming back hand in hand. When they saw that Liu Fei wasn't struggling and was holding his hand too, they were astonished. They looked at Lin Feng in a way which looked like they were worshiping his prowess with women. What a truly talented young man!

“There are many rooms in my living quarters, you can choose one and stay there. If you don't agree, you can live with Jing Yun.” said Lin Feng releasing Liu Fei's hand.

“Who would want to live in the living quarters of a bastard like you?” said Liu Fei looking at Lin Feng with cruel eyes. Lin Feng suddenly felt relieved though and had the feeling that Liu Fei had returned to her usual self.

Uncle Liu had asked him to take care of her. It seemed like better days would be in the future because today he felt terrible.

Lin Feng shook his head and went back into his apartment. He moved towards the room in which Meng Qing was and softly knocked at her door.

There was no reply for a few seconds and then Lin Feng heard Meng Qing's voice from behind the door say: "I want to have a rest. Go and have fun with her."

"Eh...." Lin Feng was smiling wryly. Could it be that the divine and spiritual Meng Qing was jealous?

But Lin Feng quickly refuted the idea that she could be jealous. Meng Qing always gave the impression that she had a stone cold heart. Lin Feng never knew what she was thinking.

"I said that I wanted to rest. Leave now." shouted Meng Qing from inside the room. Lin Feng was stupefied.

What was going on? What was wrong with her?

Meng Qing had always sounded cold and detached. Her mood seemed to never really change but at that moment, she almost sounded angry.

"Meng Qing....." said Lin Feng again but Meng Qing immediately interrupted him and said: "Go away!"

Something was wrong.

A light twinkled in Lin Feng's eyes. There was obviously something wrong!

Lin Feng resolutely pushed the door of her room but... it didn't open. It seemed to be locked from inside.

Lin Feng pushed the door with all his strength and eventually managed to open it. He then immediately entered the room.

Lin Feng just felt an extremely strong and cold Qi starting to oppress his body. How scary! The scariest was that Qi filled the entire room.

Lin Feng's pupils shrank. He glanced at the room and then at the simple bed.

Meng Qing was sitting on her bed. Lin Feng was stunned when he saw her. Meng Qing was shivering and her body was covered with a layer of frost.

Meng Qing's beautiful hair was entirely white as it was covered with frost.

"What's wrong?" cried out Lin Feng in alarm. Meng Qing raised her head. Maybe that she was just too cold from the frost. She moved her lips but no words came out of her mouth.

“Meng Qing, are you alright? Tell me what’s wrong!” said Lin Feng while walking towards the bed. Lin Feng felt even colder as if his entire body was going to freeze.

It was too cold but the coldness didn’t come from outside, it came from Meng Qing’s body.

“Go away. Don’t come here.” said Meng Qing with a shaking voice.

Lin Feng sensed a strong pain in her words. He recalled the strong and cold Qi that had fallen onto his body a moment before when he had entered the room.

At that moment, Meng Qing’s body was releasing some ice-cold Qi but as always, she was trying to act as if nothing had happened.

Meng Qing didn’t want to tell Lin Feng what was going on.

Lin Feng took a few steps towards her bed and finally reached the edge of it. Suddenly, frost started spreading from his hands and started to cover his whole body. In the blink of an eye, he looked exactly like Meng Qing, covered with frost. He had also started to shiver.

...But he looked determined as ever!

Chapter 127: The Snake is Back!

Lin Feng was getting closer and closer to Meng Qing. As he was getting nearer, he also felt a more extreme amount of cold piercing through his body. At some point, he wanted to touch her shoulder with his hand and realized that his fingers were completely frozen. He couldn't move them anymore.

“Leave.” said Meng Qing with a hoarse voice. After a short time, her body stopped releasing a cold Qi. She couldn't stand seeing Lin Feng like that. It made her feel sad deep in her heart.

“You silly girl. Every time, you're the one who protects me. I lose face each time.” said Lin Feng while smiling. His eyebrows were completely white.

At that moment, a pure Qi landed on his body and suddenly, he didn't feel so cold anymore. The frost also instantly vanished.

Lin Feng then moved closer to Meng Qing.

Meng Qing saw that Lin Feng had a smile on his face even when he was starting to freeze over from head to toe. That smile remained on his face and he continued to smile warmly at her.

“I hope you won't blame me.” said Lin Feng while smiling. He then stretched his arms towards Meng Qing and tried to hug her. Suddenly, he felt a piercing coldness invade his body and in the blink of an eye, he was completely frozen once again. Meng Qing's body looked it was frozen solid in ice. This type of cold could make

people suffocate from the piercing sting on the lungs. It was incredibly hard to breathe.

Suddenly, a stone appeared around Lin Feng's body. In that stone, there were all the things that were contained within the temple of the Yun Hai Sect.

Lin Feng's eyes were closed. He released his spirit and suddenly, the world which appeared around him wasn't dark as it used to be, it was entirely white covered with snow and it was also extremely cold!

“Swallow.”

Lin Feng, after releasing his Celestial Spirit, started absorbing and swallowing the pure Qi of the purity stone. He was both exhaling and inhaling the pure Qi at the same time which was one of the abilities his Celestial Spirit provided.

Meng Qing blinked and attentively looked at Lin Feng's delicate and beautiful face. She wasn't moving anymore either. She was just staring at Lin Feng's closed eyes while still releasing cold Qi which was immediately crashing onto Lin Feng's body.

It seemed like time had stopped. The ice on Lin Feng's body was getting thicker and thicker. Half of his body was already completely rigid because of the ice. His breath was also slower and slower. Besides, more than half of the pure Qi of his purity stone had already been consumed!

Even in that situation, Lin Feng was aware that his body was becoming colder and colder and that the ice covering his body was getting thicker and thicker. He was also aware of the fact that the pure Qi of the purity stone wasn't sufficient to help him break through. He suddenly couldn't do anything anymore and just let the ice invade his body.

At that moment, Meng Qing stopped releasing cold Qi. Her entire body snuggled against Lin Feng. At that moment, she didn't look like an ice-cold divine goddess anymore. She looked like a pitiful young girl who was consumed with sadness.

“How cold.”

At that moment, Lin Feng felt like he couldn't resist the coldness anymore. It seemed like the ice was about to freeze his muscles and blood. He was frozen stiff from the cold Qi which had pierced his entire body.

“I cannot give up, I have to persevere!” But willpower and determination weren't enough. Lin Feng was frozen stiff and unable to move, no matter how hard he tried. He was shivering from head to toe and his teeth were chattering from the cold.

The coldness was starting to penetrate into Lin Feng's blood but at that moment, his soul started vibrating. He was suddenly filled with a very familiar sensation!

“That's my spirit. My snake spirit.” Lin Feng's heart was pounding. The sensation he had at that moment was the same as

when he had almost been killed by the Imaginary Demon.

“My Snake Spirit has woken up.”

“Hissssss.” Lin Feng heard his snake spirit hiss. It then opened its huge mouth and started uninterruptedly swallowing cold Qi.

“Oddly enough, my snake spirit is also able to swallow that ice-cold Qi.” Lin Feng’s heart was pounding. His pupils shrank as he watched his snake spirit swallow unimaginable quantities of cold Qi. That was a scary thing to watch!

The cold Qi which filled the entire room was being swallowed by the snake. The room was becoming less and less cold with each passing moment.

An illusionary group of icicles suddenly appeared behind Lin Feng. It was extremely powerful and cold but it couldn’t affect either Lin Feng or Meng Qing because Lin Feng could control it!

“An ice spirit replaced my imaginary demon spirit?” Lin Feng opened his mouth. He was completely stunned after noticing the change. It was just like the last time when he was in danger. After his snake spirit had finished eating, whatever it ate would appear behind Lin Feng and become an additional spirit.

Last time, the imaginary demon spirit had appeared behind Lin Feng because his snake spirit had swallowed it. This time, it had swallowed large amounts of ice Qi and a new ice spirit appeared

behind his back replacing the imaginary demon spirit.

Lin Feng's snake spirit was so incredible that it made him scared.

Lin Feng's snake spirit had almost finished swallowing the entirety of the cold Qi within the atmosphere. His ice spirit was becoming much stronger and colder. The more Qi which was swallowed the stronger the spirit was becoming. Besides, his snake was growing bigger and bigger as it swallowed the cold Qi.

Finally, the cold Qi completely disappeared from the room. At that moment, the ice had even disappeared from Meng Qing's body. No ice was being released by her body any longer. It had even started to get warm in the room.

Suddenly, she closed her eyes and fell asleep. She needed to rest. She was emotionally exhausted after such events.

At that moment, Lin Feng looked at the sleeping beauty. A big smile appeared on Lin Feng's face and his heart started beating faster.

"I became stronger yet again."

Lin Feng was able to detect that he had become stronger which made him smile. Even though he had been able to survive by the skin of his teeth, he felt very satisfied.

Lin Feng didn't bother Meng Qing. He closed his eyes and started

meditating.

Deep in meditation, Lin Feng realized that his strength was still insufficient. He needed to increase his practise and grow stronger faster. He had not spent enough time increasing his strength in the past days.

There were many other countries in the continent and many other outstanding cultivators. If he did not work hard then he would fall behind.

Not aware of how much time had passed, Meng Qing's hand started moving. She slowly opened her eyes and saw that the cold Qi had completely disappeared from the room. Besides, her head was still against Lin Feng's comfortable and warm body.

She then blinked twice. She looked perplexed at how such a situation had come about. She immediately sat up and saw that Lin Feng's eyes were closed and that he was meditating. She was surprised!

Lin Feng had felt something change within the room, he stopped meditating and opened his eyes. He looked at Meng Qing in a tender way and smile.

“You have finally woken up.”

“Yes.” nodded Meng Qing. She looked at Lin Feng and asked, looking dumbstruck: “How did you do that?”

“I had a beautiful girl against me so I forgot about the coldness. Then, I ended up like this.” said Lin Feng while smiling. She looked at Lin Feng but wasn’t sure how to interpret what he meant. These easily said words still made her feel slightly better though.

Even if she hadn’t used all her strength when releasing that terrifyingly cold Qi, Lin Feng was able to resist to such an attack. It was impossible... but he had still done it... so how was that possible?

Even though Lin Feng didn’t tell her, she quickly stopped asking herself that question and said to Lin Feng: “What do you think you are doing still sitting here?”

“Eh...” said Lin Feng while blinking. Was every woman like this? Aggressive to the ones that they care about?

“I am worried about you so I want to be here in case you needed me.” replied Lin Feng in a low voice.

“Now, there is no ice on my body anymore. How long do you plan to continue hugging me?” asked Meng Qing fixedly staring at Lin Feng. Her voice sounded cold and indifferent again.

“.....”

Lin Feng frowned. He then immediately stood up and left her

room. That girl was... way too smart!

What Lin Feng didn't see because he had left her room already is that Meng Qing was blushing. At that moment, anyone who would have seen her would have been astonished to see her face was bright red!

Chapter 128: Purity stones

In the middle of the ancient palace where the students lived, there was a very high tower. It was a place dedicated to the practicing of cultivation. Students could clearly see the sky when standing in that tower. The tower was a good place to practice cultivation because the natural energy that pulsed through it, the Qi of heaven and earth, were perfectly interconnected at this location.

In the Celestial Academy, there were three other towers which were similar to this one. Those studying governmental affairs and those studying to become assassins also had their own towers. As far as the fourth is concerned, it was on the main public square of the academy and it was also the highest one.

“Lin Feng, the teacher gave us our first task while you were away. We have to practice our cultivation in the tower for a minimum of three months.” said Yuan Shan.

Lin Feng and the others were standing outside of the cultivation tower. They were all staring at the tower and Yuan Shan said: “In simple words, that tower is a perfect place to practice because of its abundance of pure Qi coming from heaven and earth to that location. The pure Qi of heaven and earth is flowing in what forms an endless stream of energy to that location. This energy is the same as those which flow in the veins of the earth. The inside of the tower is perfect for cultivation because the Qi is much denser and flows freely into the tower.”

“Managing to build four towers in which there is such a perfect

stream of pure Qi is really masterful work.” said Lin Feng who could already feel some of pure Qi coming from the ground all around the outside of tower.

“Besides, if we don’t count the palace where the Imperial Clan lives, the academy is the place where there is the most pure Qi. Even the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue only has two locations in which to build these towers. It is also very difficult to find places where there is pure Qi which circulates into the flow. Even the biggest sects usually don’t even have any. Actually, this is one of the reasons why the Imperial Clan is so strong, because they possess an incredible quantity of pure Qi.

Lin Feng nodded. Pure Qi was a thing cultivators longed for day and night. Even in the Yun Hai Sect, there wasn’t even a single location which contained the flow of pure Qi.

“It seems like the Celestial Academy really has a scary amount of resources.” thought Lin Feng. Even though the academy wasn’t famous because it was very secretive in how it recruited its new students, it seemed like it was more powerful than Lin Feng had ever imagined.

The academy required a letter of recommendation which was a difficult thing to obtain. Besides, it trained students for three specific functions: commanders, government officials and assassins. In all of these cases, these kinds of functions were extraordinary and were absolutely detached from the daily life of ordinary people.

Lin Feng and the others went inside the tower. Inside, there were

some rooms and some of them were closed as they were already occupied by other people.

Lin Feng could feel the pure Qi of the earth penetrating into his feet and invading his entire body. It was quite an intense experience which he almost found scary. He was not cultivating and the Qi was already attempting to penetrate into his body.

“Let’s go upstairs. Hope we can find some space to practice. Maybe we will get stuck on the last floor.” said Yuan Shan. Unfortunately, the best place to practice in the tower was the ground floor. The closer to the ground, the better the quality of Qi would be. As you moved higher and higher it had slightly less Earth Qi circulating.

Obviously, the pure Qi of the earth was coming from the ground so it was also the place where it was the most intense. Lin Feng nodded and they all walked towards the higher floors.

The higher they were getting, the rarer pure Qi became. The tower was also getting narrower as they went to higher floors in the tower.

Lin Feng looked at a room on the tenth floor. They were extremely small and could probably accommodate only two people at once. If a person wanted to move inside these rooms then it was not convenient as there really was not enough space.

There was a young man in black robes was sitting outside the room on the tenth floor and his eyes were closed.

“What is he doing?” asked Lin Feng surprised. That young man in black robes was practicing outside of the room even though there was a spare one free. How could he enter in a state of meditation in such an open place?

Yuan Shan looked at Lin Feng, stopped walking and said: “You need a purity stone to enter the room. Many people don’t have one and even if they do, they don’t want to take it out. They prefer using other people’s stones.”

When Lin Feng heard Yuan Shan, he made a strange face. Use other people’s stones?

“They wait for people to come and use their purity stones and then they consume the pure Qi from other peoples stones from outside the room.”

At that moment, the young man in black robes suddenly opened his eyes and coldly looked at Yuan Shan.

“Since you know how things work, then no need to talk bullshit. If you want to use the room, use it, if you don’t feel like it, then don’t use it. Get the hell out if you are going to waste my time!” coldly said the young man in black robes. He was being extremely rude.

Lin Feng and the others were stupefied. Jing Yun then opened her mouth: “Yuan Shan, doesn’t the academy care about such things?”

The young man in black robes looked at Jing Yun as if she was an absolute idiot. The academy, care about such things? How ridiculous.

“Jing Yun, did the Yun Hai Sect care when people fought?” said Lin Feng. Jing Yun slightly nodded. Academies and sects were about getting stronger. The weak were the prey of the strong. Who would care about such things?

“Get the hell out of here! You’re disturbing me while I’m trying to meditate.” said the young boy in black robes who was getting impatient. Some of the senior students didn’t understand the rules of the academy which stipulated older students should guide the newer students.

“Lin Feng, let’s leave. If he dares to stay here and wait for other people to come practice then he must have broken through to at least the third Ling Qi layer. Let’s continue onwards.” said Yuan Shan to Lin Feng.

Meng Qing didn’t follow him because Yuan Shan thought they were weak. Since he was wrong, she didn’t feel like following him.

Lin Feng was motionless. He was standing at the same place.

“Third Ling Qi layer? Perfect! I was looking for someone of the third Ling Qi layer.” Thought Lin Feng

“Since there’s a room here, why not use it? Why should we continue onwards?” said Lin Feng. Everybody was surprised, especially the young man in black robes who had already started meditating. Everybody looked interested in what Lin Feng planned to do all of a sudden.

“New students overestimate their own abilities. They think that they are extremely strong because they are students that were accepted into the academy.” said the young man while looking more and more impatient. Practicing on the highest floors of the tower wasn’t a cheap thing to do. They needed to bring at least three purity stones with them. If they cultivated there for a month, they needed to bring at least a hundred purity stones with them.

“Lin Feng, don’t attack him.” said Yuan Shan. They were going to stay there for three months so they would need two or three hundred purity stones. That was a huge number and they didn’t have that many. The best they could do was find a room with a smaller cultivation requirement.

“No problem.” said Lin Feng. Since that guy wanted take advantage of others, Lin Feng wanted to see if he really had the strength for that.

Lin Feng walked towards the entrance of the room. Next to the entrance, there was a hole in the wall.

“Is it where you have to insert the purity stone?” asked Lin Feng to Yuan Shan.

Yuan Shan nodded his head and replied: “Indeed. It’s the same for every room. Inserting a purity stone in that hole then enables you to fully enjoy the functionalities of the room. The veins of the earth fills the entire room with pure Qi making it a perfect place for cultivation.”

“What an intriguing method.” thought Lin Feng.

He then nodded and said to Yuan Shan: “If I practice here for three months, how many stones do I need?”

“That should be three purity stones of lower quality each day.”

Three purity stones of lower quality.

Lin Feng smiled wryly. As expected, cultivation required wealth. Purity stones were precious items to cultivators. Only cultivators who had reached the Ling Qi layer could use purity stones to their maximum effect. It was almost impossible to obtain a great number of purity stones.

Lin Feng took something out of one of his pockets. Suddenly, an extremely dense and strong pure Qi emerged in the atmosphere. Yuan Shan was astonished.

Purity stone of medium quality. Lin Feng surprisingly had purity stones of medium quality.

“Are three purity stones of medium quality enough?” asked Lin Feng.

“Of course! One purity stone of medium quality is the equivalent of a hundred purity stones of lower quality. Besides, they also produce a much stronger and purer Qu.” said Yuan Shan while nodding.

The young man in black robes had a look filled with greed across his face.

That new guy had purity stones of medium quality. He would just easily take them and then use the room himself!

Chapter 129: Lin Feng's Strength

Lin Feng didn't pay attention to the expression of the young man in black robes. He immediately inserted his three purity stones of medium quality.

At that moment, a thick and intensely powerful pure Qi started flowing into the room. It was extremely bright and a magnificent sight. It looked like there was a miniature sun that had awoken in the room. It was similar for everybody else in the other rooms.

The young man in black robes had a strange expression on his face, almost evil. He immediately moved towards Lin Feng's cultivation room.

There was only Lin Feng in the room so he wasn't scared.

That room was appropriate for only one person at a time. If there was more than one person in the room, they would disturb each other during cultivation.

Yuan Shan moved towards the young man in black robes and blocked the way to Lin Feng's room. If the young man in black robes tried to steal Lin Feng's room, Yuan Shan would have no choice but to attack him. He was intensely staring at the young man in black robes.

Three purity stones of medium quality, that was too valuable of a treasure!

Rumbling noises spread through the air: “Throommm Boom Boom”

The stone door opened.

The young man in black robes was surprised and said to Yuan Shan: “Get the hell out of my way.”

Suddenly, Yuan Shan was suffocating. As expected, the young man in black robes was at the third Ling Qi layer and was extremely strong, even in comparison with other cultivators of the same level. His pressure was extremely powerful.

Yuan Shan knew that he wouldn’t be able to compete with him if he was to fight. It was taking everything that he had to stay standing.

“Get Back!” said a voice. At that moment, the temperature outside of Lin Feng’s room suddenly dropped. There was an icy cold pressure which filled the air.

Yuan Shan was freezing from the Qi which penetrated the air around him.

“BOOOOM!!”

Suddenly, the young man in black robes took a few steps

backwards and Lin Feng had appeared next to Yuan Shan.

“Lin Feng, how powerful!”

Yuan Shan’s pupils shrunk from shock. He wouldn’t have thought that Lin Feng would be strong enough to make the young man in black robes retreat backwards. No wonder Lin Feng didn’t care about the young man sitting there when he entered the room.

The young man in black robes was stupefied as well. He looked at his own hand and saw that it had turned snow white. Frost was covering it and he could barely move it. His hand had been almost frozen solid from that initial encounter.

The ice on his hand suddenly cracked and the pieces of ice fell onto the floor. He was fixedly staring at Lin Feng.

Lin Feng didn’t look very powerful but he had surprisingly also broken through to the third Ling Qi layer.

“Now, get the hell out of here.” said Lin Feng. Lin Feng wasn’t aggressive to other people unless they were aggressive to him. Picking his fights carefully would allow him to live a long life and avoid meaninglessly insulting someone, however one needed strength in this world to be respected and could not back down from a fight.

The young man in black robes was furious. Even though Lin Feng had also broken through to the third Ling Qi layer. How could he

possibly disrespect him in such a blatant way?

Suddenly, huge flames appeared behind the young man and he released his spirit. What astonished everyone is that the flames were filled with a black colour inside.

“My spirit is a Black Flame Fire Spirit.” said the young man in black robes coldly. At that moment, his eyes looked like they were on fire and burning brightly however his gaze was completely cold and bloodthirsty.

“Black Flame Fire Spirit.” Yuan Shan was stupefied. He had never heard of such a fire spirit before.

The Black Flame Fire spirit was a fire spirit but it was clearly a rare fire spirit. The rarer a spirit was the greater its power would be. Surprisingly, the young man possessed an extremely rare spirit which even Yuan Shan did not know. His spirit coupled with his strength of the third Ling Qi layer, he could be considered as an extremely strong cultivator within the tower.

Lin Feng was coldly looking at him. Layers of ice appeared on Lin Feng's body. The air around him was freezing.

“Black Flame Fire spirit, how powerful! Wow it really looks hot!” said Lin Feng and then immediately started walking forwards. Suddenly, an incredible amount of ice started emerging from Lin Feng's body. Everything around him was freezing. Even the air was freezing in place and the atmosphere had become chillingly cold.

Yuan Shan who wasn't far from Lin Feng was shivering from how cold it had become. His ears were particularly were stinging from the coldness in the air.

“That's... a normal ice spirit?” thought Yuan Shan. He then immediately shook his head and said: “Impossible. That's not a normal ice spirit. Ice spirits are not that... cold.”

While the young man in black robes sensed the coldness emanating out of Lin Feng's body, he was also surprised. It was even too cold for his black flame fire spirit which started fluttering as it was slowly being extinguished by the cold as it grew closer.

Usually, fire spirits had the advantage over ice spirits. But Lin Feng's ice spirit was obviously terrifyingly powerful compared to normal ice spirits.

Lin Feng thought that his ice spirit was particularly strong because it had been transmitted directly from Meng Qing's Qi into him.

“Eight Strikes of Desolation.” Lin Feng raised one hand and thrust it towards the young man as he carried out his attack. It was still freezing all around him as his hand swiftly moved through the frozen air.

“Fire Fangs!” shouted the young man in black robes. His spirit moved at the same time as his hands. The young man's attack moved straight towards Lin Feng's cold Qi. Suddenly, sword Qi started to fill the atmosphere. It was extremely powerful and

seemed like it could annihilate the entirety of creation.

Lin Feng's cold Qi seemed to be sufficient to freeze anyone into a block of ice who moved close to him.

The sword Qi was so sharp it felt like it would cut anything it encountered into pieces.

The cold Qi and the sword Qi invaded the atmosphere together as a single entity. At that moment, the young man in black robes could feel that he had been marked for death. His entire soul was shaking in fear.

“How is this possible? He has an ice spirit, how could he release such an insanely strong sword Qi and I can even sense sword force combined with his Qi!!!”

The young man was shaking from head to toe with complete terror. His knees had already gone weak and he was about to collapse from fear. Lin Feng took another step forwards.

“Get lost!” shouted Lin Feng. At that moment, sword Qi crashed into the young man's body.

A trail of blood flew through the air. The young man in black robes groaned and then collapsed onto the floor. He was looking at Lin Feng with murderous eyes.

“You dared to injure me?”

“I don’t have time to waste talking with you, get out of here!” Lin Feng took another step forward. The young man in black robes was terrified. Suddenly, his body emitted a dazzling light and he vanished without leaving a single trace.

“You’ll pay for what you did.” said a voice as it retreated. Lin Feng laughed. How could that guy talk such nonsense?

Yuan Shan was staring at Lin Feng but remained silent. He was smiling wryly.

“What a monstrous power!”

Lin Feng had an ice spirit but used the skill Eight Strikes of Desolation and released sword Qi. How terrifying! He could even use sword force!

Even those who had a sword spirit couldn’t use sword force to such an incredible level when they had the strength of the Ling Qi layer. Lin Feng was only of the third Ling Qi layer and could control his sword force. Yuan Shan was stunned. Could it be that Lin Feng had several spirits? A sword spirit and an ice spirit must have been used at the same time. Otherwise, how could he have used sword force at the same time as his ice spirit?

Yuan Shan had only guessed right about one thing: Lin Feng did possess several spirits.

Jing Yun wasn't too surprised. On the way to the Imperial City, she had already witnessed Lin Feng's strength a few times already.

Liu Fei wasn't too surprised either. Lin Feng had shown her a many times already that he wasn't an ordinary person. His power and his natural abilities were way too terrifying!

Lin Feng was about to recall his spirit into his body when suddenly one of the practice rooms opened by itself. An intensely cold air came from the room as the Qi flooded to the outside.

"Damn it, do you not understand the rules! Do you really want to die so badly!" said a voice coming from the room. A silhouette appeared and that person was staring at Lin Feng with incredible killing intent.

Lin Feng frowned. A strangely savage smile appeared on his face. He released a piercingly cold Qi again as well as sword Qi and force. It was oppressing the opponent's body completely.

The facial expression of the opponent drastically changed. His heart was pounding and he was truly scared of the combined energy which was oppressing his body.

"Let me practice in peace, damn it! Get lost!"

Chapter 130: The Sixth Floor

“Let me practice in peace, damn it! Get lost!.” said Lin Feng extremely coldly. At that moment, the atmosphere started to drop in temperature once again.

The opponent didn't have the same arrogant expression he had when he arrived, he looked scared. Lin Feng was so strong!

“Damn, what the hell should I do now?” said the opponent as he was insulting himself for having come across someone as strong as Lin Feng.

At that moment, many other people in other cultivation rooms had also lost their concentration and their cultivation had been forcefully interrupted. They could feel Lin Feng's piercingly cold Qi in the atmosphere. It had invaded the entire tower and was incredibly oppressing. Of course, they were not going to go and see what was going on. They didn't want to invite trouble from someone who could produce such a terrifying Qi.

“Will you get the hell out of here or not?” said Lin Feng extremely aggressively with eyes revealing murderous intentions. The enemy was shaking from head to toe.

He glanced at Lin Feng evilly and then went to look for another room within the tower. His current room would have to be left with Lin Feng.

“The strong can use aggressiveness and strength to scare the

weak away. That is the reality of the cultivation world.” thought Lin Feng while recalling his spirit back into his body. The young man in black clothes had wanted to steal Lin Feng’s room until Lin Feng had shown his real power. He had thought that Lin Feng was weak.

The second person had also wanted to seize Lin Feng’s room for disturbing his practice but considering the strength which Lin Feng displayed, the second person had been terrified and had immediately left. He didn’t dare to act against someone so strong. That would have been acting recklessly.

The path of cultivation was full of unkind people for whom the word compassion meant absolutely nothing. Someone weak and friendly would constantly get bullied. Someone strong and aggressive would be worshipped. The strong were respected and held in high esteem by everybody.

“Yuan Shan, you can use that room. You should also prepare some of your own purity stones. If the three stones I put it are not sufficient to practice for three months, then please use your own.” said Lin Feng to Yuan Shan. Yuan Shan nodded. He didn’t even try to prevent Lin Feng from leaving the cultivation room to him. He was convinced that relying on his strength, Lin Feng would face no difficulty in finding another room within the tower.

“Duan Feng and Jing Yun are a bit too weak. If the pure Qi is too dense and thick, it will be of no use for them. Liu Fei, go to that room.” said Lin Feng pointing at another room.

Duan Feng and Jing Yun didn’t say anything but Liu Fei said: “If I

use that one, what about you?”

“No need to worry about me. I will find another one better suited for myself.”

“Alright.”

“See you in three months.” said Liu Fei and then immediately entered in the cultivation room.

Lin Feng then made Duan Feng and Jing Yun follow him so he could help them find a cultivation room. The eleventh and the twelfth floor were full so they immediately went up to the thirteenth floor. He then found two rooms which were free for them to practice.

From the eleventh floor, all the rooms required less purity stones. They only required one purity stone of lower quality a day. One of Lin Feng’s medium quality purity stones was enough to practice for three months.

It made Lin Feng sigh with some regret. Cultivation costs were too high, especially when one wanted to cultivate faster. If he hadn’t gone to the ancient temple then he would not have had any purity stones at all. Now thanks to the ancient temple he didn’t only have low quality stones but he had medium quality purity stones.

The higher a person went within the tower, the less people there

were and thus more and more empty rooms. Those who were willing to train in these rooms were not strong. They usually hadn't even reached the third Ling Qi layer. They were also the students who did not have many purity stones to cultivate.

On the contrary, strong cultivators usually had a great deal of purity stones. That kind of cultivator wanted to train on the lowest floors of the tower and if they were strong enough then they would even train on the ground floor, directly next to the veins of the earth where the pure Qi was extremely thick and dense.

This was a vicious circle, those who were strong rapidly became stronger while those who were weaker progressed much slower.

Lin Feng was the last one left and he needed a room too. He didn't want to stay at the top of the tower so he immediately went back down the flight of stairs. He passed by the tenth floor, ninth.... and arrived on the sixth floor. He suddenly stopped.

There were eight cultivation rooms on the sixth floor. If a room was occupied, the hole in which the users inserted purity stones would be slightly flashing.

Lin Feng walked around and stopped in a corner between two occupied rooms. He then sat down and started meditating.

A pleasant and refreshing pure Qi enveloped his body.

The sixth floor wasn't that far from the ground. Even if Lin Feng

wasn't in a room, the pure Qi which was outside of an occupied room on the sixth floor was still denser than the pure Qi in a room on the tenth floor. On the tenth floor, you even had to pay three purity stones of lower quality a day to use the room. Not being in a room but sitting outside the occupied rooms on the sixth floor was thus more advantageous to his cultivation.

If students could choose a floor as they wished, they would all go to the lowest floors but it was clear to everyone that those who trained on the first floors were extremely strong. They were the only ones who had the chance to choose the rooms on the first floors. Strength always guaranteed access to the best things in the world.

But Lin Feng at this moment, was cultivating outside of a room on the sixth floor. He immediately entered in a state of meditation. He didn't think for a second that this was not a normal thing to do.

Not long after, some people passed by and saw Lin Feng practicing outside of a cultivation room. They thought that it was really strange thing to do on the lower levels of the tower. They were all very surprised by his actions.

“What’ that...? Surprisingly, there’s a guy meditating outside of an occupied room on the lower floors. Isn’t he scared to constantly be disturbed in his cultivation?” wondered one of the people who saw Lin Feng.

Cultivation was about achieving peace and absolute serenity in one’s heart. It was possible to efficiently inhale the natural Qi of heaven and earth only when that state of mind was reached.

Jealous people would not hesitate to try and disturb him.

But Lin Feng was sitting outside of an occupied room where many people could pass by. How could that not attract other people's attention? But the strangest thing was that, an insanely thick and dense pure Qi was rapidly flowing around him and penetrating into his body. Surprisingly there was nobody disturbing him.

“That guy... even if he doesn't have purity stones for his own room, he shouldn't practice there like that... what if someone disturbed him at the most crucial moment of his practice? That would be really horrible for him.”

“That guy is so ignorant. If a malicious person attacked him by surprise, the consequences would be disastrous on his future cultivation.”

Many people were thinking the same thing when they passed by Lin Feng and saw him sat out in the open. Actually, it was forbidden to disturb other people once they were in a room and had already started practicing. The Celestial Academy didn't accept such behaviour because they wanted to provide their students with the best cultivation environment.

But Lin Feng wasn't inside of a cultivation room at all. Instead, he had decided to study outside of a room on the sixth floor. Doing so was extremely dangerous.

However, Lin Feng was sitting next to a cultivation room. Suddenly, the pure Qi in the room next to Lin Feng was becoming weaker and weaker. Some people noticed this and were watching on with dazed expressions.

That probably meant that that person's time had elapsed. Somebody was probably going to come out and see Lin Feng sat there.

At the same time, Lin Feng opened his eyes. The pure Qi surrounding him had progressively stopped being absorbed into his body. He looked at the door of room next to him and stood up.

The crowd was surprised. They had just understood why Lin Feng had been sitting outside of the occupied room. He was not planning to stay outside of a room for a longer period while cultivating. He was just waiting for a room to be free.

But was Lin Feng going to get it?

At that moment, many people started walking towards that room with determined looks on their faces. They understandably all wanted to have access to a room on the sixth floor of the tower.

Chapter 131: As Far as Possible!

On the sixth floor, the pure Qi within the cultivation rooms was already very thick and rich.

Some people had seen Lin Feng cultivating outside of the room on the sixth floor. Initially, some of these people were actually only passing by and were heading towards higher floors but because they had found the scene fascinating, they had stopped on the sixth floor and forgotten about their previous plans. Besides, some of them were also attracted by the room which was being opened even though they didn't have the required strength to normally reserve such a room.

If they managed to get that cultivation room, they would definitely be able to boost the speed of their cultivation.

The light emitted by the pure Qi finally dulled completely inside the room. The stone door made a rumbling noise as it started to open itself. Everybody started taking steps towards the door and was fixedly staring at it as it opened.

Finally, the door opened itself and everybody stared at the silhouette coming from the room. It was a young man with a sword on his back. When he saw the crowd, a strange and enigmatic smile appeared on his face.

“You all want this room?” said the young man with the long sword. He had an incredibly evil look on his face. Nobody replied in the crowd but the expressions on their faces showed that they

really wanted it.

“Well if you want it then I will give it to you.” said the young man with an evil smile on his face. He moved away from the entrance and stood by the side, to allow them access to the room.

At that moment, there was nobody in the room and the door was wide open. The crowd was looking at the room as if they were a bunch of starving people looking at a mountain of food.

However instead of rushing over to the room, no one was moving at all. They were all looking at each other and didn't move towards the room.

Nobody was moving because they knew that the first to go towards the room would be attacked by everybody else. Even if it was their brother, they would attack him. Their greed was truly intense.

Nobody was willing to be the first one to move towards the room.

Of course, there were always exceptions! ...and Lin Feng fearlessly started moving towards the room.

Lin Feng walked towards the room looking natural and at ease. While standing before the door, he turned around and looked at the crowd.

“I was the first one waiting here. This room is mine. You should

go and find another one.”

The people in the crowd were looking at him with a cold smile on their faces. The first one? What the hell does that mean to them? That means absolutely nothing to these people. In the world of cultivation, the only way to persuade people was strength. Being fair and just was not an argument these people would listen to.

Besides, he was telling them to find another room. Under the tenth floor, it was almost impossible to find empty room. What did he want them to do? Go to the top of the tower?

“You cannot have that room. Get lost.” said one of them while coldly staring at Lin Feng.

“Hehe. If you want to have that room, you should first insert some purity stones.” said another person with an evil smile on their face. They thought that the moment when Lin Feng would put his purity stones in the hole, that would be the best moment to attack him.

Lin Feng glanced at the crowd. Nobody was attacking him at all.

A piercingly cold Qi emerged from Lin Feng’s body and his ice spirit appeared behind him.

His ice spirit didn’t stop spreading in the atmosphere. Everything was turning white with a layer of frost.

That ice was way too cold and way too strong!

But it didn't scare the crowd away. Apart from a few weak students, most of them were extremely strong.

“Whoever wants this room, you are free to come and try to take it from me.” said Lin Feng with a cold tone. The atmosphere suddenly became even colder!

Some sword Qi had also emerged from his body and invaded the atmosphere together with the ice Qi, emitting whistling sounds as the Qi whirled in the air.

His ice Qi was just as sharp as his sword Qi. It was almost piercing through people's skin.

Lin Feng's long hair was swaying from the wind created by his Qi being released into the atmosphere. He looked like an experienced cultivator but he also had a look of confidence on his face.

“Sword force!” the crowd was stupefied and terrified by the extremely strong and power piercingly-cold sword force which was hidden within the Qi! No wonder this young man can be so aggressive.

Even though the sword force which emerged from his body was only diffused with the strength of the third Ling Qi layer, it was extremely intense and sharp. It could even be strong enough to defeat some cultivators of the fourth Ling Qi layer.

Besides, his sword force coupled with his ice spirit made him very difficult to defeat even for a cultivator of the fourth Ling Qi layer.

But in the crowd, there were quite a few people who were cultivators of the fourth Ling Qi layer and they were fixedly staring at Lin Feng.

All those who were of the third Ling Qi layer were leaving the crowd one after another. They had been discouraged by the combined energy which Lin Feng had been releasing.

“I tell you to attack me but you don’t, I tell you to leave but you don’t leave either. What the hell! How indecisive and hesitant can you people be! You guys definitely don’t have the courage and the determination required when walking on the path of cultivation.” said Lin Feng coldly.

He took a few steps forward and the sword Qi as well as the ice Qi emerging from his body were growing stronger and stronger.

“Eight Strikes of Desolation!” said Lin Feng while attacking with both of his hands. A mixture sword Qi and ice emerged and spread through the atmosphere. Lin Feng surprisingly was the one who had taken the initiative to attack.

The crowd moved at the same time and intercepted Lin Feng’s eight strikes of desolation attacks... but at the same time Lin Feng started running forwards and a magnificent glow appeared on his sword.

Suddenly a bright light pierced through the air leaving behind only a magnificent glow.

A few people in the crowd didn't have sufficient strength to block the attack and were thrown backwards as blood was splashing all around them.

All these cultivators of the fourth Ling Qi layer had attacked at the same time and it had become a very chaotic scene.

“Sword of Nirvana!”

A sword Qi which created whirlwinds in the air appeared around Lin Feng's long sword. Ice Qi, sword Qi, sword force and his sword of nirvana started to spread together through the air as if they were in a complete fusion. The power moved at the speed of light with overbearing dominance.

However, the enemies' attacks were everywhere. There were too many people and their attacks were sometimes cancelling out other people's attacks even though their initial goal was to attack Lin Feng together. It had become complete chaos.

Rumbling noises unceasingly spread throughout the atmosphere and progressively became lower and lower until silence invaded the air again. They were all surprised. There were so many people and they had all attacked Lin Feng at the same time but had been unable to defeat him. Without any structure to their attacks, they had been too chaotic.

“I will give you a second chance. Is there anybody else who still wants to try for this cultivation room?” said Lin Feng while coldly glancing at the crowd.

The entire crowd was just fixedly staring at Lin Feng. Nobody dared move. It had been made completely clear that nobody wanted a one-on-one battle against Lin Feng.

“Since you don’t dare to fight me any longer then don’t try to steal from me again or next time you will all die.” said Lin Feng who still emitted a strong cold Qi into the air. Nobody in the crowd would dare to doubt Lin Feng’s words. If they tried to steal his room, he would really kill them.

Lin Feng turned around and didn’t look at the crowd again. He took out three purity stones of medium quality and inserted them in the hole in the wall.

At that moment, a brilliant and radiant pure Qi appeared. There was an incredible quantity of pure Qi in the room. The entire crowd looked on with envious stares.

These people looked like they wanted to attack Lin Feng again out of pure greed, however when they recalled the previous scene they quickly calmed down.

They were all very strong cultivators. They had all broken through to the fourth Ling Qi layer and Lin Feng of the third Ling Qi layer had surprisingly managed to scare them to death to the

extent that none of them dared attack him again.

If that news spread, they would all lose face. Nobody would ever believe that they lost because Lin Feng of was too strong, they would rather assume that those few students of the fourth Ling Qi layer were just too weak.

Lin Feng was about to enter in the cultivation room when a cold and detached voice said something: “Wait, wait!”

Lin Feng slowly turned around and looked at the person who was talking. It was the young man with the long sword who had initially left the room.

“You seem to be forgetting somebody.” said the young man with a strange and evil smile on his face which made Lin Feng have a strange smile too as if he was disgusted.

“If you have something to say, say it quickly instead of making me waste my cultivation time!” said Lin Feng aggressively.

The young man with the long sword made an evil smile and said: “I initially intended to tell you that I would give you the room only if you gave me three purity stones of medium quality but now I’ll ask you for six instead. Otherwise, you’ll have to give me back my room!”

Lin Feng’s pupils shrank. Give him back the room?

He was demanding six purity stones of medium quality? How ridiculous.

On top of that, when Lin Feng was putting the three purity stones into the hole, that guy hadn't said a single word. He had only been waiting for the moment when Lin Feng was finished so he could attack him and steal his room.

This guy had calculated everything. No wonder he had been standing there the whole time. How shameless.

The crowd was also exasperated. That guy was really shameless. They were thinking about how horrible it would have been if they had been Lin Feng.

“What? Is there a problem.” said the young man when he saw that Lin Feng wasn't replying. The young man had an evil smile on his face.

Lin Feng looked at him for a second and then said: “Now, I will advise you to run away and go as far as possible from my sight.”

Chapter 132: Lin Feng's Sword

“Now, I will advise you to run away and go as far as possible from my sight.”

A strong and intense cold Qi had accompanied Lin Feng's words. The young man's smile vanished. His facial expression became as sharp as his sword.

“I will give you one last chance. Give me twelve purity stones of medium quality.” said the young man with the long sword in a cold tone. An incredible amount of sword Qi emerged from his body and started moving towards Lin Feng.

“A fight between Sword masters.” Exclaimed people in the crowd. They noticed that the sword Qi released by the young man and by Lin Feng were the same. They probably both had a sword spirit, otherwise their sword Qi wouldn't be that powerful. Lin Feng had also released sword force into the atmosphere.

“Do you think that such a small amount of sword force is enough to beat me? Especially when used by someone like you.” said the young man with an evil look on his face.

When the young man stopped talking, he released a gigantic amount of sword force which created whirlwinds in the air as it consumed the atmosphere. Whistling sounds spread throughout the entire atmosphere. The power of his sword Qi and sword force had enveloped everyone on the sixth floor of the tower.

The sword force was everywhere in the atmosphere. It looked like it would destroy anything in its path.

The young man had a higher cultivation level than Lin Feng. He had already broken through to the fourth Ling Qi layer. Just like Lin Feng, he could use forces in an extremely large scale. No wonder that he had been so arrogant and aggressive. He was confident that he would be able to take over the room from anyone within the crowd once they put their purity stones inside.

And even if Lin Feng didn't agree to hand the room over, the young man with the sword just had attack Lin Feng and make him leave.

"It's a good thing that none of us got the room after that battle." said the people in the crowd happy that Lin Feng had scared them away. Otherwise, they would have had to fight against the young man who had just release such incredible amounts of sword force. He was at the fourth Ling Qi layer and knew how to use such huge amounts of sword force. They weren't strong enough to fight against him.

It wasn't different for Lin Feng even though he had showed some skill previously. He was undoubtedly going to lose that fight. What could he possibly do against such an overbearing power?

"You are correct! Do you think that such a small amount of sword force is enough to beat me?" Lin Feng used the young man's own sentence against him. He took a step forwards and his deadly sword started moving through the air as he thrust it forward. Everybody was stupefied.

In such a situation, Lin Feng didn't even consider the possibility of giving the young man his purity stones and did not even plan to hand the room over, instead he was being even more aggressive!

The young man was stupefied as well. He hadn't managed to scare Lin Feng away with his display. Instead, he wanted a fight.

"You're following the path to your own doom. I will make it so that you are never able to pick up a sword again with your meagre skills." said the young man while smiling arrogantly.

A whistling sound spread through the atmosphere and a magnificent and radiant golden light filled the sixth floor. It looked like the rays of the morning sun. Lin Feng's deadly sword and the young man's sword collided emitting an extremely loud metallic noise.

"Golden Sword!" His sword turned gold and releases another light which was as beautiful as the morning sun.

"Golden Rain Sword!" shouted the young man. Suddenly, the dazzling light around his sword became even more dazzling and refracted through the atmosphere. There wasn't even a single corner not illuminated by the light from his sword.

"What a beautiful sword skill! I would have no chance to defeat such a masterful display." said some of the cultivators of the fourth Ling Qi layer in the crowd. The young man with the long sword could definitely afford to be arrogant with his level of skill.

Lin Feng was going to die. The area was too small and it was impossible to escape the light of his sword. He had nowhere to go if he wanted to dodge the attack, there was nowhere left to escape.

“I will teach you what it means to be a real sword master.” said the young man with extreme arrogance and a cold smile on his face.

The young man’s golden rain sword skill made rays of light fall from the atmosphere as they were raindrops. Lin Feng who was in the middle of the attack, didn’t move back and looked calm as ever.

Lin Feng’s sword force had already vanished without leaving trace.

“Is he giving up?” said some of the people in the crowd when they saw that Lin Feng’s sword force had disappeared. They were stupefied. The young man was extremely strong, he had managed to make Lin Feng give up and stop using his sword force as if he knew the situation was hopeless.

Not only was the crowd stupefied but the young man too. Lin Feng had voluntarily stopped releasing sword force, why? The young man’s arrogant smile grew even wider when he saw the force disappear.

His arrogant smile didn’t last for much longer as suddenly, he looked stunned.

An oppressive sword energy suddenly crashed onto his body and prevented him from moving.

“What’s this?” the young man’s pupils shrank.

The Qi was becoming more and more oppressive. The young man had the feeling that he was suffocating under the pressure. This was the result of all the sword energy in complete fusion. This required combining his sword force and sword Qi into a single power.

The young man looked at Lin Feng and saw that he looked as calm as before. The young man felt his heart sink when he realised what had happened.

“That’s the sword energy...” The young man with the sword was a sword master and recognized the skill.

Lin Feng could already use a sword energy attack. That meant that he could already control almost all of the sword energy to perfection. What a genius!

The sword energy attack required an incredible amount of sword force and sword Qi. Who could resist to such an attack?

Lin Feng’s attack didn’t even look special but suddenly, a hole appeared in the young man’s sword and suddenly it disintegrated itself.

The whole crowd was shivering at such an incredible display.

How was that possible?

Lin Feng's attack had barely been noticed by anyone. It looked so random and so normal but had been sufficient to destroy the magnificent and extremely powerful Golden rain sword!

“Retreat!” The young man's expression suddenly drastically changed. He had no time to carry another powerful attack because at that moment, Lin Feng's sword energy was already on him. He wouldn't be able to block it.

A hurricane-like vortex made of sword energy emerged from Lin Feng's body and flew through the air towards the young man. His body started shaking violently and then he heavily collapsed.

At the same time, the tip of Lin Feng's sword arrived on the young man's chest.

Everybody was astonished and shivering. They were speechless. Nothing of what they expected had happened. Lin Feng had needed a single strike to defeat such a powerful opponent. At that moment, the young man's life was in Lin Feng's hands.

“This is all the skill that you have and you dare to say that you will teach me how to use a sword?” said Lin Feng coldly. The young man was speechless.

Indeed, the young man had broken through to the fourth Ling Qi layer and could use forces but Lin Feng had only broken through to the third Ling Qi layer and was already able to exercise perfect control over sword force to the extent that he was able to absorb and make it fuse with other Qi and force to make a sword energy attack. After having displaying his abilities in front of everyone, being arrogant would make him gain even more prestige within the academy.

“Your sword is not sharp. You lack too many things. You are too arrogant. While trying to do beautiful and magnificent attacks, you stray from the true path of the sword. You must focus your sword to be sharp and precise. As far as swords are concerned, you definitely an amateur.” said Lin Feng in a detached tone. As far as Lin Feng was concerned, sword skills were about having more refined skills, more power, more sharpness, more speed and was not about how beautiful they looked.

“What do you intend to do with me?” said the young man as he completely ignored what Lin Feng had just said to him. He was just worried that Lin Feng would kill him.

When Lin Feng saw him, he shook his head looking saddened and said: “A moment ago, when you were aggressive and threatening me, I thought that you were a real sword master and that you were seeking enlightenment on the path of cultivation but you have disappointed me. You do not even take my advice on improving your sword skills. You are just a shameless guy who wants to stand above others using his sword. I think it would be best if you never held a sword again...”

When Lin Feng finished talking, his long sword glowed and he then immediately cut off the young man's sword hand. The young man gave a horrible shriek as he looked at the place where his hand used to be.

"How bloodthirsty and ruthless." Said people within the crowd. Fortunately, they had not made Lin Feng angry and attacked him a second time. He was terrifying!

The young man's eyes were filled with wrath and hatred. He was staring at Lin Feng, but Lin Feng just replied coldly: "No need to look at me with such eyes. You said it yourself a moment ago. You said that you would make it so I could never hold a sword again. I simply returned what you intended back onto you. If there is one person that you should blame, it is definitely yourself."

Immediately after, he turned around and entered in the cultivation room without even glancing back at the young man and the rest of the crowd.

The entire crowd had a cold sweat running down their backs. That's right, if they had exchanged places with that young man, Lin Feng could have possibly removed one of their limbs. Lin Feng didn't like being cruel but he didn't like being provoked either.

Chapter 133: Rule Violation

Lin Feng entered in the cultivation room and suddenly, a rumbling noise emerged. It was the noise of the stone door closing itself.

A thick and pure Qi invaded the entire room. Lin Feng was feeling extremely comfortable with the dense Qi surrounding him.

When cultivating, being exposed to pure the pure Qi of heaven and earth was extremely beneficial. The feeling was like sudden rain after a long drought. It helped cultivators consolidate the very foundations of their cultivation and strengthen their foundations as they advance.

Lin Feng released his celestial spirit and entered into meditation.

His celestial spirit would definitely help him receive a breakthrough at a much faster rate. He would be able to control every cell within his body in a much more precise way and would probably be able to break through to the next Ling Qi layer at an increased speed.

Suddenly, pure Qi started entering in Lin Feng's body as if Lin Feng was a bottomless pit swallowing all of the energy available.

Lin Feng's strength was at the third Ling Qi layer so he had absolutely no problem to inhale all the pure Qi which filled the cultivation room. It seemed like the amount of Qi he could absorb was almost endless.

The pure Qi that Lin Feng had already absorbed was circulating within his body and becoming even purer.

The Qi once purified within his body had started penetrating into Lin Feng's flesh, muscles and blood making them purify.

He could feel that his body was becoming stronger and stronger. Because of this transformation within his body he knew that he would be able to practice at much greater speeds.

Besides, the pure Qi in his muscles had also turned into a pure Qi which would increase his agility techniques in the future.

Even though Lin Feng wanted to become strong, he knew that rushing to advance would cause greater harm than good. On the path of cultivation a person required breakthroughs which one could only find with enlightenment and battles. Cultivating was only a small step on the path and life experiences are where the advancements came.

What Lin Feng didn't know that while he was cultivating some evil looking people were moving into the tower from the outside.

They moved directly towards the flight of stairs and then started climbing the floors. They finally came to a halt on the tenth floor.

"That way." said a young man in black. If Lin Feng had been there, he would have recognized the young man in black as he was

the person whom he just defeated on the tenth floor.

The young man in black had threatened Lin Feng when he left the tower but Lin Feng hadn't taken him seriously. Many people would make baseless threats from the anger of being humiliated.

In the end it was actually Liu Fei who was practicing in that room.

"Here." said the young man in black while pointing at the room. The one who was accompanying the young man was about twenty years old. He looked extremely cold and evil.

"Cui Ting, open the door!" said the evil young man. Another person moved forwards. Despite the rules of the Celestial Academy, he didn't hesitate and started running towards the door at full speed and thrust his fist directly towards the door. He then collided heavily with the stone door.

The door remained closed but it was strongly shaking from the impact.

Liu Fei was in a deep state of mediation behind the door. She wouldn't have thought that she would get disturbed during this period, especially by people directly attacking her door. The noises immediately woke her from her meditation. There was a small trail of blood on the corner of her mouth because of the shock she received while in meditation.

“Get the hell out here!” said an extremely loud voice from outside. Liu Fei was furious. She wiped off the blood from the corner of her mouth.

“How impudent.” Liu Fei stood up. She wanted to rush outside and crush them. One of the worst things to do in the world of cultivators was to disturb someone while they were meditating. Besides, they had woke her up in such a violent way that she had been injured in the process. Being woken up during meditation was such a shock that a cultivator could get injured if it was not done correctly. Disturbing a meditating cultivator was such an offense that the academy didn’t forbid fights between students but forbade them to disturb others while they were already meditating in cultivation rooms.

But the opponents had clearly violated the rules of the academy.

“Shit, I can’t do that. I can’t attack them.” Liu Fei who had stood up to go outside and crush them suddenly stopped. Maybe the person hadn’t come for the room but had come to fight against Lin Feng.

“It must be him.” Liu Fei remembered the young man in black. When leaving, he had threatened Lin Feng. He hadn’t lied, he had come back.

“If I went out now, that would probably cause trouble for Lin Feng.” Liu Fei thought. Besides, she didn’t know who would win if they fought. In this world, only strength mattered, nothing else.

When she thought about the current situation, she sat down again and tried to meditate but obviously, it was very hard for her to continue her cultivation.

“BOOM.” rumbling noises spread in the cultivation room. Liu Fei’s eardrums were hurting from the constant loud bangs.

“YOU WHO’S INSIDE, COME OUT IMMEDIATELY!” shouted a loud voice from outside. Liu Fei was angry but ignored it. She kept sitting. At worst, he would keep shouting until he was too tired or until someone intervened.

The door of the cultivation room would never crack open. It was impossible for the people outside to manage to do such a thing. They were far from being strong enough.

When the enemies saw that nobody was reacting inside, they were speechless.

The young man in black moved towards the door and furiously shouted: “Were you not being very aggressive and arrogant before? Are you too scared to come outside now? Coward! Weakling!”

“Coward, weakling?” When Liu Fei heard what the young man had called Lin Feng, she was surprised and found him ridiculous. That guy had been easily defeated by Lin Feng, so he had brought people to help him... and he dared call other people cowards and weaklings? Only weak people could do such things. How ridiculous.

What would Lin Feng do if he was there?

The door was unceasingly rumbling. Liu Fei didn't react but she was very upset.

In such a small and narrow room, anybody would go crazy if they were harassed this way by other people.

After a while, the rumbling noises stopped.

The young man in black calmed down again. He wouldn't have thought that nothing would work against Lin Feng, especially the insults. He felt powerless and had no strategy left to try.

"Looks like he knows what is best for him and cowers inside the room." said the young man in black coldly.

The evil looking man then asked: "How many purity stones has he inserted?"

The young man in black replied: "Three purity stones of medium quality which is enough to practice for three months."

"Alright, I'll come back in a hundred days. What about you? Are you staying or are you coming with me?"

The young man in black didn't reply and looked hesitant.

“He could run away if you leave... but you’re also probably scared that he will come out to humiliate you again...” said the evil young man as if he had guessed what the young man in black was actually terrified of facing Lin Feng alone.

The young man in black was surprised. This is exactly what he was worried about.

“Cui Ting is already at the peak of the fourth Ling Qi layer. Nobody in the third Ling Qi layer could possibly defeat him, even if they are an unrivalled genius. Coming with him was more than enough to defeat that person. Since you insisted for me to come along too, I decided to follow. However, now I am going to the first floor to practice for three months. You can ask Cui Ting if he wants to stay and wait with you.” said the evil looking young man calmly.

The young man in black, didn’t dare call into question what the evil young man had said. The evil looking man was also a member of his family after all. They had the same father but not the same mother and the young man in black was merely the son of a concubine. The evil looking man had already done him a great favor by coming. He had given him a great deal of face.

The young man in black looked at Cui Ting. The expression in his eyes indicated that he was begging him to stay with him.

“If Hei Mo wants me to stay, then I’ll stay.” said Cui Ting indifferently.

“If that is the case, just stay here for a little while then.” said Hei Mo. He then turned around and left towards the first floor.

When the young man in black saw Hei Mo leave, a sad expression appeared on his face. He then turned around and looked at the stone door. He took a step forward and punched it again. It created an extremely loud rumbling noise which filled the room. Liu Fei was extremely upset as she was still inside the cultivation room. Would they never stop bothering her?

At that moment, Liu Fei’s face turned deathly pale. If the young man in black kept harassing everyday for a hundred days, she would go crazy.

Besides, Lin Feng had spent three purity stones of medium quality in this room. If she was harassed everyday for a hundred days, that would be the same as being kept in captivity and tortured for a hundred days. This was a complete nightmare. She had never thought that such a thing could happen.

At that moment, the pure Qi on the sixth floor was strange. Some curious people had gone there wondering what was happening. A silhouette was emerging from a room. It was a young man, he looked calm and serene... but that calm and serene facial expression made the entire crowd shiver.

The young man’s look was as sharp as a sword and he looked extremely domineering!

Chapter 134: He Will Die!

The young man who came out was Lin Feng.

“It goes so much faster when cultivating within a room on the sixth floor!” thought Lin Feng. A hundred days before, Meng Qing’s cold Qi in the room had been such a shock for him but had helped him reach the peak of the third Ling Qi shortly after when cultivating he had broken through to the fourth Ling Qi layer. His current cultivation was close to reaching the fifth Ling Qi layer.

Of course, Lin Feng understood that sitting in a cultivation room for a hundred days wasn’t all a cultivator had to do to advance. There were many other things a cultivator needed to learn and practice in order to become stronger. Outside of training and practice, there was control of emotions, state of mind, battle experience and life experiences, all of these were necessary to break through to a higher Qi layer. The opposite was true too though, if a cultivator only practiced outside and fought but never cultivated then he also wouldn’t be able to progress. There had to be a balance.

Lin Feng raised his head, glanced at the entire crowd outside of the room and left. He was wondering how Liu Fei’s training had been going since he left her.

When the crowd saw that Lin Feng was leaving, they suddenly felt relieved. However, they all looked to their right then to their left, carefully watching everybody else getting ready to fight them for the room... but that already had nothing to do with Lin Feng any longer.

While Lin Feng was walking to go to the tenth floor, the young man in black was still there waiting. He could feel that the pure Qi coming from the room was getting weaker and weaker. The young man in black had an evil smile and was getting ready to attack the one he thought was in the room. He punched the door once again and made it tremble.

Besides, the young man in black wasn't worried at all because Lin Feng probably hadn't become stronger at all. He had been punching at the door of the cultivation room every single day for a hundred days. It was impossible to practice in such conditions.

“Finally, you're about to come out.” said the young man in black while waiting for Lin Feng to come out.

The door of a cultivation room opened itself automatically when the pure Qi of a room was completely consumed, otherwise people would be stuck inside forever.

The door made a loud rumbling sound and opened itself. Cui Ting and the young man in black only saw a beautiful girl come out of the room.

“It's you.” said the young man in black as he looked completely stupefied. He was blankly staring at Liu Fei. He had been waiting for a hundred days and suddenly, the person who came out was Lin Feng's friend... the beautiful young girl.

Liu Fei's face was thin and pale. She looked so pitiful and was

completely exhausted... but her facial expression also revealed fury. She was staring at the young man in black and said: “How impudent.”

“Impudent?”

The young man in black looked at her with an evil expression. He would have never thought that the person that he had been waiting for three months was the wrong one... No wonder the person inside hadn't reacted to his insults. If it had been Lin Feng, he probably would have come out.

“Since it's you and not your friend, I will take you with me. You will have to suffer in his place.” said the young man in black with a perverted look. He was fixedly staring at Liu Fei's body and found her extremely alluring. He also thought that her angry expression made her even more attractive. He felt quite excited while looking at her.

“Hehe, if he gave you the room, it means that you must be very intimate. If I have a taste of you, he will definitely go insane.” said the young man in black with the same evil expression on his face.

Cui Ting glanced at him. He really despised the young man in black. He was definitely the son of a concubine, incapable of controlling himself when facing a beautiful woman. What a humiliation for Hei Mo to share the same blood as this degenerate.

But Cui Ting said nothing. After all, Hei Mo and he still shared the same blood. He couldn't attack him even if he wanted to.

When Liu Fei heard what the young man in black said, she looked disgusted.

“How impudent... disgusting.”

“You already said that once but because you like those words so much, I will show you what it’s like to be impudent. That cultivation room is quite big, isn’t it? It will be perfect to accommodate the both of us. When your friend comes back he will see us both in an embrace, loving each other, it will be a wonderful moment.” said the young man in black with a huge smile on his face. Cui Ting was stunned.

At that moment, the young man in black felt an extreme chill run down his spine. A freezing cold Qi surrounded his body and applied heavy pressure.

He turned his head and saw Lin Feng who was releasing the strong Qi.

The young man in black had been looking forward to seeing Lin Feng but at that moment when he was standing before him, the young man in black remained speechless.

Lin Feng was slowly walking towards Liu Fei. When he passed the young man in black, it seemed like he didn’t intend to take notice of him at all.

However, Lin Feng simply walked past him and with his back facing the young man in black, he said: “Asshole.”

The young man in black could feel his hatred boiling inside his heart. His heart was filled with wrath and hatred. Lin Feng was humiliating him too much, not even looking at him and insulting him like that. He wanted to kill Lin Feng but he didn't dare attack him... he knew that he wasn't strong enough. He was just hoping that Cui Ting would be able to do it for him.

“Bastard. I will make you pay for your hundred days worth of crimes.” said Liu Fei to Lin Feng. Lin Feng didn't know what she had gone through. Her eyes were filled with hatred and suffering.

Lin Feng looked at Liu Fei with a wry smile on his face. He hadn't never thought that the young man in black would be so shameless.

Lin Feng stretched out his hand and gently caressed Liu Fei's face, he wanted to let her know that everything would be alright now he was here.

When Liu Fei felt Lin Feng's hand on her face, she felt her legs go weak and she had slightly lost her balance. Lin Feng was being so tender and affectionate towards her.

The sadness and anger she was feeling suddenly were replaced by tender warmth.

Liu Fei's mother had died when she was still young. Her father

had been fighting in every corner of the country and didn't have time to take care of her. At that moment, she thought that Lin Feng was being incredibly gentle and caring towards her. She felt the warmth she had been longing for, her whole life.

"I'll handle this myself." said Lin Feng to Liu Fei who was feeling nervous at the current situation. She quickly started to rearrange her messy hair when she realised what she must have looked like.

Lin Feng smiled and immediately turned around.

The warm smile on his face suddenly vanished and was replaced with a piercingly cold glare.

"This guy is strong." thought Cui Ting while looking at Lin Feng. He then moved closer to the young man in black. He wanted to prevent him from fighting against Lin Feng whose face was filled with killing intent.

"I don't really enjoy dirtying my sword with the blood of people like you, but since you have insisted, you will be the first person I kill at the Celestial Academy." At that moment, Lin Feng slowly unsheathed his soft sword. It was diffusing a sharp silver glow.

When the young man in black heard Lin Feng, he was terrified and started moving backwards. He then hid behind Cui Ting.

"What a pathetic little boy. You're truly a piece of shit!" said Liu Fei to the young man in black when she saw that he was hiding

behind Cui Ting.

How had the situation become like this? He had been harassing Liu Fei, thinking that it was Lin Feng for three months... and had then he tried to humiliate Liu Fei to make Lin Feng angry... but now that Lin Feng had arrived, he was scared to death.

When he heard Liu Fei's words, he felt extremely humiliated but didn't reply. He hated his own actions as well. Why was he so scared when in front of Lin Feng?

"You cannot kill him." said Cui Ting who was standing in front of the young man with black.

"He will die." said Lin Feng taking a step forward. He released an incredible amount of sword force which created whirlwinds in the air, accompanied by whistling sounds as it pierced the atmosphere. The sword force was also filled with an extreme cold.

"Sword force." Cui Ting's pupils shrank. Not only was that guy using sword force but the young man in black had been wrong. He had said that Lin Feng was of the third Ling Qi layer but it seemed like he was at least the fourth Ling Qi layer.

"What a piece of trash!" thought Cui Ting about the young man in black. He was still very confident in his abilities as people who could defeat him were not numerous... but he knew that it didn't mean he was invincible.

Cui Ting didn't feel like fighting against a cultivator of the fourth Ling Qi layer who could use sword force. He was sure that he had no chance of coming out alive if he was to fight against Lin Feng.

The difference in power between a cultivator of the fourth Ling Qi layer who could use sword force and one who couldn't was too huge.

"Get lost." Lin Feng who was dragging the tip of his soft sword against the solid tower floor which diffused a sharp metallic noise. He looked extremely murderous at this moment.

Cui Ting could feel that the sword force was growing even more intense. He was persuaded that he wouldn't be able to fight against Lin Feng. Lin Feng had released such an incredible amount of sword force already. He was terrified and wondering how a cultivator of the fourth Ling Qi layer could already control so much force to perfection.

"I am not as strong as you and I cannot protect him. But you still cannot kill him." said Cui Ting remaining motionless. He was nervously staring at Lin Feng.

The young man in black was stupefied. Cui Ting was unable to protect him? He wasn't as strong as him?

The young man in black was furious.

"Today, nobody can save him." said Lin Feng while a freezing Qi

emerged from his body. He stepped forward and thrust his sword through the air.

Cui Ting, when he felt the power of the attack, he couldn't help but sigh.

Cui Ting immediately moved aside. He knew that he would never be able to resist the power of that attack so the only thing he could do was dodge.

Even though Hei Mo wouldn't agree, Cui Ting also knew that Hei Mo wouldn't want both of them die together, especially if he knew what the situation was so dire. He probably wouldn't blame him for dodging such a powerful attack.

Cui Ting moved aside and the young man in black was at the mercy of Lin Feng's sword. The young man in black had the feeling that his death was growing closer.

Chapter 135: Hei Mo

When the young man in black felt Lin Feng's cold Qi moving towards him, he couldn't help but shiver. Cold sweat was flowing down his back.

"This is the Celestial Academy, students can fight but they cannot kill!" said the young man in black. He felt like he was about to faint. He was scared to death.

"I know." said Lin Feng coldly. The young man in black felt some relief on hearing this. It gave him hope.

"But I also know that it is forbidden to disturb other people while they are in a cultivation room... and what have you been doing for the last three months?" said Lin Feng which made the young man in black fall back into his panicked state.

"I admit that I violated the rules but the consequences are not important when compared with killing a student. Killing a student is completely different."

"Are you trying to scare me?" said Lin Feng. The young man in black was growing more terrified with each passing moment. His forehead was covered with sweat.

"Besides, the consequences are not important?" said Lin Feng while glancing at the poor and exhausted Liu Fei. He then added: "Well, that's your opinion. As I see it, the consequences of you having harassed her for three months are much more serious than

taking your pathetic life.”

“You cannot kill him.” repeated Cui Ting which attracted Lin Feng’s attention. Lin Feng slightly turned around and looked at him.

“You cannot kill him, otherwise, you’ll regret it.” Said Cui Ting.

“I’m sorry, I’ll have to disappoint you. I never regret anything that I do.” Lin Feng’s hand continued to move and Cui Ting quickly shouted: “Wait, wait!”

“Do you have anything else to add?” said Lin Feng.

“He is Hei Mo’s little brother, if you kill him, Hei Mo will never let you off.”

“HEI MO!” said some people who had come over to see what was happening. They were stupefied. He was surprisingly Hei Mo’s brother.

Yuan Shan was in the crowd as well and was stupefied like everybody else. He had also heard about Hei Mo.

“Lin Feng, Hei Mo is one of the ten best students of the Celestial Academy! He almost never practices here and when he does, it’s on the ground floor!” warned Yuan Shan from the middle of the crowd. Indeed, Hei Mo wasn’t someone one wanted to fight.

A light flashed in Lin Feng's eyes. The young man in black looked like he was relieved.

“Indeed, I'm Hei Mo's little brother. If you kill me, he will definitely kill you.” Said the young man in black proudly.

“Moron.” said Lin Feng when he heard the young man's threat. He raised his sword and then carefully slit the young man's throat from ear to ear. At that moment, everyone was completely stunned and shaking in fear.

Nobody had thought that Lin Feng, after hearing that he was related to Hei Mo, would actually dare to kill his little brother without the slightest hesitation.

The young man in black hadn't thought that his death would come so quickly. At the moment when Lin Feng's sword penetrated his throat, he was still hoping that Lin Feng would retreat on hearing his brothers name.

His last thought was that he hated himself for acting so foolishly. He hated himself for having provoked Lin Feng. He didn't hate Lin Feng to such an extent and Lin Feng didn't hate him, there was no great enmity between them until he had caused it. He had thought that dying for what had happened was too grave a punishment and he truly felt that Lin Feng wouldn't do it. He had been stupid until the end.

“What a cruel and heartless person.” sighed Cui Ting. He hadn't

thought that Lin Feng would kill him after hearing about Hei Mo.

Lin Feng took out a rag and wiped the blade of his sword. Then, he put it back in its sheath and looked at Cui Ting.

“If he hadn’t been Hei Mo’s brother, he would have never dared to be that audacious and violate the rules of the academy, am I right?” said Lin Feng coldly pointing at the young man’s corpse lying on the floor.

Cui Ting was surprised and then nodded. Without Hei Mo’s reputation the young man in black would never have behaved in such a way.

“Therefore, the one who caused this is actually Hei Mo... so it was actually Hei Mo who broke the rules of the academy. Because of him, my friend was constantly harassed day and night for a hundred days... but Hei Mo will not bear the responsibility for that, am I right?” said Lin Feng. Cui Ting suddenly came to a realisation. He now understood why Lin Feng had actually killed the young man in black.

It was not that Lin Feng hadn’t thought about Hei Mo when killing his little brother, it was actually the exact opposite. Lin Feng just didn’t think of Hei Mo as someone above the rules, he only thought that because of him, Liu Fei had been harassed for a hundred days without rest. That’s why he killed the young man in black. It was a warning. He wanted to tell everyone in the academy that anyone who assaulted him or his friends would pay with their life!

“Let’s go.” said Lin Feng to Liu Fei. Liu Fei, Yuan Shan and Jing Yun all started leaving with Lin Feng. Cui Ting and the young man’s dead body were just left behind as they walked away.

“What’s your name?” asked Cui Ting.

“Lin Feng.” Replied Lin Feng as he walked away.

“Lin Feng...” whispered Cui Ting, he would make sure to remember that name. The rest of the crowd also took note of his name. Who could forget the name of someone who had dared to provoke Hei Mo?

After Lin Feng and the others left. The tenth floor was still filled with people. There were more and more people gathering at the location. There was a corpse on the tenth floor. Surprisingly, there was someone who had dared to kill someone in the cultivation tower. They didn’t know who could be so audacious. At that moment, an evil looking young man was walking towards the tenth floor.

The evil looking young man arrived on the tenth floor and looked at the corpse on the ground. His facial expression didn’t change. He still looked incredibly calm as he looked at the scene. The crowd who was surrounding that evil looking young man backed away from him and made sure to give him enough space. They were looking at him as if he was a deity walking amongst them. It was Hei Mo who had climbed the tower looking for his little brother.

“Who killed him?” asked Hei Mo with an indifferent tone. He even looked calm which scared the crowd to death.

“Lin Feng.” replied Cui Ting and then added: “He’s much too strong for me to fight against.”

Hei Mo remained silent and looked at the corpse. He then said: “Make him come to my clan... and double check his name. Make sure you got the name correct.” When Hei Mo finished talking, he turned around and slowly walked towards the flight of stairs. He then left the tower without another word.

.....

When Lin Feng and the others arrived in the palace where they lived, He let out a deep sigh and got ready to go back to his living quarters.

“Don’t get too impatient to go and find the other one.” said a quiet voice next to him.

Lin Feng was surprised. What was said sounded incredibly strange. Lin Feng had a strange smile on his face as he looked at Liu Fei with a blank expression.

“Are you angry?” asked Lin Feng while smiling and gazing deeply into her eyes.

“Why would I be angry?” replied Liu Fei coldly while avoiding Lin Feng’s eyes.

Lin Feng had a smile on the corner of his mouth and said: “Since you are not angry, why can I feel that there is bitterness in your voice?”

“Maybe because you have dirty ears and can’t hear properly.” replied Liu Fei. What was that guy’s problem staring at her like that?

“Is that so?” said Lin Feng while scratching his head. He then smiled and said: “We just came back from training, obviously we would go back to our respective living quarters... and you seem to think that it is because I was impatient to see Meng Qing? Could it be that you want me to come to your room?”

“Stop dreaming!” said Liu Fei while stamping her feet. That guy really had mental problems! She then immediately left and went straight to her room.

Lin Feng looked at Liu Fei and smiled. Even though she was often in a bad mood, she was really adorable and cute when she hid her feelings like that.

Lin Feng didn’t rush back to his room within his living quarters and rather knocked at Meng Qing’s door.

“Come in.” said Meng Qing coldly. Lin Feng immediately

entered. He saw Meng Qing who was sitting on the bed. She said: “Oh, you came back.”

Meng Qing hadn't covered her face with her fine veil. Her entire face was visible to Lin Feng which made him sigh with exasperation. How could the creator of all things, create such an unrivalled beauty? That was too cruel.

“In the previous world, even the richest man in the world would have given up his entire fortune for this beauty.” thought Lin Feng. While in his presence, Meng Qing wasn't as cold as before. If he could make her smile once every day then he would have a wonderful life.

“What happened on that day... has it happened again?” asked Lin Feng calmly while walking towards Meng Qing's bed.

Meng Qing looked at Lin Feng, slightly shook her hand and said softly: “Have I not told you about this? It happens every six months.”

Chapter 136: Pressured at the Entrance

Once every six months! Poor Meng Qing, having to go through such hellish torture every six months. Why did she have to endure such horror?

“If it happens again in the future you must tell me! I can help you. I don’t want you to suffer like this, now that I am here.” said Lin Feng to Meng Qing. His snake spirit could swallow all the cold Qi. Besides, his snake would grow stronger the more Qi it consumed.

His snake spirit was so mysterious... eating the Qi of others was not something which normally occurred.

“You haven’t told me yet what really happened on that day.” said Meng Qing while staring at Lin Feng. She had suffered from exhaustion and had fallen sound asleep on Lin Feng’s chest. It was such an embarrassing moment that she had forgotten what had happened before that.

“Well, you first tell me where that cold Qi comes from?” said Lin Feng.

“I was born with it.” replied Meng Qing which surprised Lin Feng. She was born with it?

Lin Feng had already heard that some people were sometimes born with diseases or natural abilities but Meng Qing’s one was horrible.

“Now, you tell me.” Said Meng Qing.

Lin Feng smiled. He then released his snake spirit appeared behind his back. The little snake had already become a huge snake. It curled up on Lin Feng’s shoulders, its eyes made it look like a real snake rather than a spirit. Its two eyes were staring deeply at Meng Qing.

“Huh?” Meng Qing was stupefied when she saw the snake. She looked incredibly anxious.

“It’s my spirit, I still don’t know what kind of snake it is. It swallowed all of the cold Qi that you released last time and gave me the power of that Qi.” said Lin Feng.

Meng Qing looked stunned and she was blankly staring at Lin Feng’s snake spirit.

But very quickly, she looked as cold and indifferent as always. Meng Qing then slightly nodded and said: “No wonder, it’s an extremely strong spirit.”

Lin Feng slightly nodded while looking deep in thought and said: “It should be a snake spirit but it is not clear to me yet what kind of snake it is.”

“You’ll know at some point.” replied Meng Qing.

“I hope so.” replied Lin Feng while nodding and said: “I am going to head back, if you need anything in the future then come and get me right away.”

Meng Qing nodded. Lin Feng stood up and then put his hand on Meng Qing’s head. He caressed her hair for a few seconds which made her body slightly tremble.

Lin Feng turned around and left. Meng Qing looked at Lin Feng’s back and frowned.

“That’s... a snake spirit?” whispered Meng Qing.

She had the sensation that it was a beast spirit but not necessarily a snake spirit... she knew there was something special but couldn’t describe what it was. There was a spirit which strangely looked like Lin Feng’s spirit but it had nine heads... and it wasn’t a beast spirit but a dragon spirit!

.....

It was early in the morning and there was not a single cloud over what seemed to be a boundless area.

In the Celestial Academy, there were a lot of people gossiping about recent events.

It seemed like most of the people were mentioning the same words very often in their conversations: cultivation tower and Hei

Mo.

At that moment, two people were walking on the biggest road of the Celestial Academy and were talking amongst themselves.

“I heard that his name is Lin Feng. At the registration day, he humiliated two students of the academy: Zuo Qiu and Bai Ze. His goal was to make the wealthy and noble cultivators lose face.” said one of them.

The news of what had happened at the cultivation tower was already widely spread in the academy because Lin Feng had broken the rules and killed one of the students.

The news was spreading at the speed of light, not only because Lin Feng had broken the rules but also because it has to do with one of the best students of the academy, Hei Mo!

Any rumor relating to the ten best students of the academy spread quickly. Even though Hei Mo wasn't at the top in the ranking, he was still extremely powerful.

“Who told you about what happened at the registration day? He must be quite proud and arrogant if he humiliated the wealthy and noble students... but this time he has made a big mistake, I mean Cui Ting had already warned him that he was Hei Mo's little brother. He surprisingly still dared to kill him. That's a humiliation for Hei Mo. Lin Feng will definitely regret what he did. He could never think of defeating Hei Mo.”

“You’re right. One of the ten best students in the academy... Lin Feng has run out of luck.” said the other person in the same tone as if they were proud of their analysis of the situation.

At the same time in a distant location, two silhouettes were drawing a crowd of people’s attention. Suddenly, many people gathered and started following the silhouettes.

These people were about a hundred meters away from the two people discussing. When the two people who were discussing, saw one of the silhouettes in the crowd, they couldn’t help but be stupefied.

“Hei Mo!” Hei Mo was surprisingly in the crowd.

“There are so many people, something must be going on.” said the two people who were looking at them.

Hei Mo wasn’t walking fast but he looked determined. Not so long after, they arrived near the palace where the first category students were living.

At that moment, a silhouette was slowly coming out of the palace.

“Oh no... Lin Feng... that’s the guy from the cultivation tower.” said Yuan Shan when he saw the crowd coming towards them. Cui Ting was walking next to an evil looking young man. Yuan Shan obviously remembered him from the events at the tower.

Lin Feng didn't stop walking. Immediately after, the two sides were facing each other. Lin Feng first saw Cui Ting and then slowly turned his head towards the evil looking young man. He then said: "Hei Mo I presume."

Hei Mo coldly looked at Lin Feng and then glanced at Wen Ao Xue, ignoring Lin Feng.

"I want his life." said Hei Mo indifferently looking incredibly calm. But he wasn't talking to Lin Feng as Lin Feng's life was protected by Wen Ao Xue.

Wen Ao Xue just smiled with his incredibly beautiful face which made him look like a beautiful girl. He then calmly shook his head and said: "He's my friend."

"This is a problem now. In the cultivation tower, he killed my little brother after hearing my name. He made me lose face. You shouldn't get involved in this matter." said Hei Mo who, strangely, wasn't discussing that matter with Lin Feng but with Wen Ao Xue.

Lin Feng had a strange look in his eyes as he was staring at Wen Ao Xue. Wen Ao Xue, who was more beautiful than some girls, was probably an extremely talented individual.

"Well, I heard that your little brother broke the rules of the academy first and then because he was too weak, went and asked other people to help him. The result is that he died. The only thing to blame is his own weakness."

“He can only blame his own weakness but Lin Feng is still new here, he only recently joined the academy. After such a short time he has made many people lose face. He also humiliated me. He must die, don’t you agree?” said Hei Mo which stupefied everybody.

Hei Mo wanted to kill Lin Feng, not because Lin Feng had killed his little brother, but because Lin Feng had humiliated him when he killed his brother after hearing Hei Mo’s name. In other words, even though Lin Feng had heard Hei Mo’s name and his reputation, he had still dared to kill his little brother. Hei Mo only wanted to kill him to save face and nothing more.

For these kinds of people, face was the most important thing in their life, it was even more important than Lin Feng’s life.

“You also know that he’s new here... so would you, Hei Mo, dare to threaten a new student? Wouldn’t you be ashamed and lose face?”

“He has committed crimes which he must be punished for... and the only price to pay is his life.” said Hei Mo who ignored Wen Ao Xue’s words. He then said coldly and indifferently: “You can protect him now but I don’t think that you are going to stay with him forever. If you are not with him at some point, I will easily kill him. Who could stop me?” When he finished talking, he stopped looking at Wen Ao Xue and looked at Lin Feng.

“You are indeed very smart and you must be very happy about

how things have played out... you're a smart little boy but have you ever thought that your actions have lead to your own death?" said Hei Mo coldly and then added: "Or do you really think that you can hide behind Wen Ao Xue your entire life?"

"Are you done talking?" said Lin Feng coldly to Hei Mo when he saw that the latter wouldn't stop talking. Lin Feng's face was expressionless as if one of the ten best students of the academy was unable to make him feel scared or anxious.

When Hei Mo heard what Lin Feng said, He smiled coldly. His smile was as sharp as a blade. He then said: "I have finished talking, now what?"

Chapter 137: Life and Death Challenge

Now what?

Lin Feng nodded and said coldly: “Now, if you’re done talking, I also have a few things to tell you. Your little brother was a piece of trash. He did not have other people in his eyes. He attempted to steal my cultivation room so I had to make him leave, but because he was your little brother, he thought that he was invincible. He then broke the rule of the academy and harassed my friend every single day for three months with your help. He humiliated her and hindered her training. Was I wrong to kill him?” said Lin Feng while looking at Hei Mo.

“You killed him... you were indeed in the right, but...” said Hei Mo who wanted to keep talking but was interrupted by Lin Feng: “You already said that you have finished talking, so please, SHUT UP!”

“Huh?” the crowd was stupefied. That guy was really aggressive and suddenly dared to tell Hei Mo to shut up. He only thought that he could behave like this because Wen Ao Xue was next to him!

Hei Mo was stupefied but immediately said: “Alright, continue.”

“You also said it yourself, I was right to kill him. Your little brother broke the rules of the academy, it was obviously because you had allowed him to do so. So because you allowed your little brother to attempt to humiliate me, you have indirectly caused me to lose face. When he wanted to kill me, you were happy to provide

your support. So first you have made me lose face and then you're getting angry because you lost face when things did not go as planned. Could it be that you are so stupid that you think I would willingly lose face to you because you are strong?" said Lin Feng with a strict tone making the whole crowd stupefied yet again.

That's right. These types of people could only see things from their perspective and couldn't understand other people's point of view.

"Even if what you say is true, then what?" said Hei Mo with a detached tone.

"No then what, I've met many people who thought they were above the rest of the world. I have always shown them how foolish and ridiculous they are." said Lin Feng coldly. He then continued: "You must think that I am only saying this because Wen Ao Xue is here. However, whether Wen Ao Xue was here or not, you do not have the required power to kill me."

"Don't try and refute what I am saying. You are free to try and kill me at anytime and you will see what happens when you make an attempt on my life. Just like you said, when someone commits a crime there must be punishment, and sometimes the price is your life." said Lin Feng who sounded incredibly threatening.

Some people in the crowd frowned. Not only was Lin Feng saying that whether Wen Ao Xue was there or not, Hei Mo couldn't kill him but he was also saying that Hei Mo might even die for attempting it.

But Yuan Shan had no doubts concerning what Lin Feng had just said. He knew about the mysterious girl protecting Lin Feng. He had seen her power first hand.

Hei Mo was stupefied and said coldly: “You have a very high opinion about yourself.”

“I have never had a high opinion about myself and I have also never been arrogant or thought that I was above anyone else. I’m not like you who dares to talk about others lives as if they were already within my hands. Isn’t that itself extremely arrogant? Do you think that you stand high above everyone else in the world? I would like to ask you a question, what Qi layer have you broken through to?”

Arrogant? High above the rest of the world?

Hei Mo smiled coldly and said: “I could hold you between my two fingers and easily kill you. I have broken through to the Sixth Ling Qi layer...”

“And you dare be that arrogant. You are ridiculous. You must be joking.” interrupted Lin Feng while laughing loudly. He then said: “You have only broken through to the sixth Ling Qi layer and you dare to speak about that as if you were one of the best cultivators in the world. Even saying that you could hold me between your fingers and kill me. You must be joking! Having broken through to the sixth Ling Qi layer is nothing extraordinary. How ridiculous.”

“The world is huge, there are millions and millions of geniuses... and you dare talk about yourself as if you are special and others are beneath you. I want to tell you something: you are a little mouse who can only see an inch.”

“What powerful words!”

“What sharp arguments!”

Said some of the people within the crowd while looking at Hei Mo who was being verbally harassed by Lin Feng. Hei Mo had indeed only broken through to the sixth Ling Qi layer which wasn't considered as an extremely strong cultivator in the outside world but in the academy, nobody would provoke him. Almost nobody could defeat him. Even some students of the seventh Qi layer wouldn't want to fight against him.

But, saying that the sixth Ling Qi layer was already amazingly high on the path of cultivation was obviously an exaggeration.

His heart was as ugly as his personality.

Lin Feng stopped for a few seconds and continued: “Of course, you probably think that you are amazing because you are amongst the ten best students of the academy but you are a tiny insignificant person in the world of cultivation. So now I want to ask, in three months time I want to challenge you to a life and death battle, do you dare to accept?” said Lin Feng.

The entire crowd was astonished.

Lin Feng actually dared challenge one of the ten best students of the academy, Hei Mo. He even dared to challenge him to a life and death battle.

Lin Feng had just joined the academy, he didn't know what he was doing.

“He definitely doesn't know how powerful Hei Mo is.”

“That little boy is bringing about his own destruction. He has gone insane.”

The crowd was making various comments about Lin Feng. Nobody believed that Lin Feng could win. They all thought that he was acting recklessly and had lost his sense of reason.

Even Lin Feng's friends were astonished and didn't believe what he had just said. They knew that Lin Feng was strong but he would definitely never be able to defeat Hei Mo. That was insanity.

Wen Ao Xue was looking at Lin Feng. It was obvious from his face that he didn't think Lin Feng could ever win the battle.

Of course, Lin Feng was humiliating Hei Mo by challenging him.

A student who had just joined the academy had humiliated his

brother, humiliated him a few times and was then challenging him to a life and death battle. He had completely lost all face.

Hei Mo was sure that everything that was happening would eventually spread through the academy and he knew that the other ranked students would soon hear about it.

At that moment, Hei Mo's evil face looked even more evil and sinister.

He had burning flames in his eyes. He looked hideously terrifying.

“Do you think that you have completely lost all face?” asked Lin Feng while smiling. He then said: “You are losing face again, but what about me? Especially since you have brought so many people with you. Have you never thought that I would lose face too?”

“So, you don't need to look at me that way. If you want to regain your reputation, I will see you in three months. Show everybody that you, Hei Mo, can afford being arrogant because you truly are an amazing cultivator.”

Hei Mo looked furious, he looked at Lin Feng and said: “In three months, you will understand how pitiful and pathetic you really are.”

When he finished talking, Hei Mo turned around and left.

The entire crowd was astonished. Hei Mo had accepted the challenge.

Three months later, he would make Lin Feng regret that challenge forever.

The crowd first look at Hei Mo's back in the distance and then looked at Lin Feng again. They were terribly excited and couldn't wait to see that battle.

How could Lin Feng have challenged him to such a battle? What strength did he rely on to dare and challenge him to a life and death battle?

In three months time, Hei Mo would be much stronger and would regain his lost face.

Three months would pass very quickly. It was not a very long time in the world of cultivation.

"Let's go." said Lin Feng looking at his friends. They then started walking towards the exit of the academy.

Wen Ao Xue looked at Lin Feng and said: "Hei Mo is at the peak of the sixth Ling Qi layer. Even some students of the seventh Ling Qi layer don't dare to challenge him to a battle. Almost nobody can defeat him in the academy... and what level are you? the fourth or the fifth Ling Qi layer... you could never defeat him. Besides, Hei Mo is at the peak of the sixth Ling Qi layer and will soon

breakthrough. It will be extremely hard for you to defeat as he is now let alone when he advances.”

Lin Feng smiled. He obviously knew that it wouldn't be easy. He then said in a detached tone: “I needed to quickly become stronger than anyone else.”

Wen Ao Xue nodded. He didn't really understand what Lin Feng meant. What did that have to do with Hei Mo?

Lin Feng saw Wen Ao Xue's facial expression and said: “Strength often comes when you are in danger. You have to risk your life to quickly become stronger.

When he heard Lin Feng, Wen Ao Xue was stunned. Risk one's life to become stronger? Lin Feng was an extremely scary individual.

Chapter 138: The Prisoner Arena

Everybody in the academy quickly learned that Lin Feng had challenged Hei Mo to a life and death battle.

The military students were not the only ones who had heard the news but people who were studying political strategies as well as the assassin students had also heard about it.

People were starting to pay attention to Lin Feng. Who exactly was he? He had appeared from nowhere and had been accepted in the academy with all the privileges but without the disadvantages. The vice-principal personally went to invite him, why?

As people were trying to understand who Lin Feng really was, they were stupefied to see that the pieces of information they found about him were contradictory. It seemed like Lin Feng had a high status in society but then again it seemed like he was of a low social class... and it was like that for all the information which could be found. There were many contradictions when it came to him as if he had been artificially created and as if someone was trying to make everybody confused to what his real identity was.

If it was really the result of someone's external actions, that would be truly terrifying. That would be like delegating all the power to Lin Feng.

But Lin Feng knew nothing about these things that were happening.

Yuan Shan and Wen Ao Xue were not at the academy.

At that moment, there was a huge wall was in front of them. That huge wall was surrounding a small town. That was a small town within the Imperial City.

The wall in front of their eyes was so wide that they had the impression that it was endless.

“Let’s go inside.” said Wen Ao Xue to the others. They started walking towards the big gate of the small city.

“Please let us be on our way.” said Wen Ao Xue while handing a purity stone to the entrance guards. Surprisingly, it was a purity stone of medium quality.

Besides, Lin Feng noticed that it wasn’t only Wen Ao Xue who had to pay a tax but everyone who wanted to enter.

Very quickly, a sea of faces appeared in front Lin Feng and the others. The colourful market was vast and bustling.

“What’s this?” Lin Feng’s pupils shrank. The scene reminded Lin Feng of an antique market.

“This is the busiest part of the Imperial City. Whatever you need or whatever you want to do, you can come here and you’ll find it. Everything is possible here.” explained Wen Ao Xue to Lin Feng.

Liu Fei, who was standing next to Lin Feng, seemed excited and said: “I’ve already heard about that place but I’ve never come here before. It seems even more lively than I had imagined. No wonder that the Imperial City is so wealthy, I now understand why.”

Lin Feng nodded and Wen Ao Xue was smiling.

“Lin Feng, you can find many beautiful women here with whom you can have lots of fun.” said Wen Ao Xue with a smile on his face. Lin Feng was stunned and Liu Fei looked furious. Liu Fei’s look made Lin Feng shiver. He tried to smile but it looked incredibly awkward. Why had Wen Ao Xue said such a thing?

“Besides, you can come to this district very easily as long as you have enough purity stones. You can buy weapons and even people, for example you can get pure virgins here as well as slaves. You can also find some really valuable martial skills and agility techniques.” said Wen Ao Xue.

Lin Feng was stupefied. Weapons, women, slaves, skills and techniques... Nobody could resist to the temptation of obtaining such things. No wonder that this place was so full of people.

So as long as one had enough purity stones, one could do get almost anything they wanted here. There was nothing that was not for sale here.

“We should come to the Market District all the time.” thought Lin Feng. Amongst the things that Wen Ao Xue had listed, Lin

Feng was interested in many of them.

For example, slaves!!

“Of course, a true cultivator wouldn’t go the first place I spoke about, where you can go to enjoy women... Only wealthy yet degenerated and depraved people go to such places. Genuine cultivators go to other districts, one is the Market District and the other one is a place where the military students of our academy always go.” said Wen Ao Xue and then stopped keeping Lin Feng in suspense.

“What district?” asked Lin Feng who was obviously very curious. What is the place where the military students of the academy always go?

“A place full of people which is often a horrible place where one’s mind cannot be at peace, but such a place is a place to train and gain experience: it’s a battle arena.”

“You’re talking about Prisoner Arena!” suddenly said Liu Fei.

“Indeed, it is precisely the Prisoner Arena. It is such a crazy place that even some military students of our academy don’t dare to go there.” said Wen Ao Xue and then added: “Lin Feng, that place would be perfect for you. If you want to quickly become stronger then this is the place to go.”

“Prisoner Arena...” whispered Lin Feng. He then asked: “What

kind of place is The Prisoner Arena?”

“The Prisoner Arena? Well, you have to go and see for yourself.” said Wen Ao Xue while laughing. They immediately started walking. Lin Feng was extremely curious at what this battle arena would be like.

The marketplace was like a city within the city. It was extremely vast and there was no end in sight. They were walking fast but even after half an hour had passed, they still hadn’t reached the Prisoner Arena.

But at that moment Lin Feng heard a multitude of voices. Suddenly, in front of him, there was a huge gathering of people. He could only see their backs but couldn’t see what they were looking at.

Lin Feng and his friends started to move closer to look at what was happening. The sounds of the voices were getting louder and louder. That place was huge and shaped like a ring. It was gigantic. In the middle of that gigantic ring shaped stadium, there were multiple different craters. All of them had flights of stairs to go down or come back up.

“Lin Feng, this is the Prisoner Arena. As you can see there are hundreds of thousands of people within the arena. It’s like this every day, all day.” said Wen Ao Xue pointing at the sea of people.

“Hundreds of thousands of people!” said Lin Feng amazed. That was a huge amount! Besides, it was like that every single day! It

was almost oppressive and actually hard to imagine!

They then moved down the stairs and looked at the crowd in the distance.

The crater was so deep that it looked like a gorge and there were many viewing platforms.

In the middle of the middle of the canyon, there was a huge silver cage full of silhouettes.

“Prisoners!” Lin Feng progressively understood why that place was called the Prisoner Arena... It reminded him of the previous world in ancient Rome where aristocrats used to watch slaves and wild beasts fight in the coliseum.

But the scene before Lin Feng’s eyes at that moment was much more impressive. It made him shiver from head to toe as if his soul was shaking with excitement.

“In that cage, there is a battle every day, either a cultivator versus a ferocious beast or a cultivator versus another cultivator... and the only way to be freed is to kill the opponent during your battle.” said Wen Ao Xue to Lin Feng. That was a terrifying premise. No wonder some people had chosen to keep their distance from this place.

Every battle resulted in the death of either a cultivator or a ferocious beast.

“Every year, some students of our academy die here. The number of corpses is always increasing.” said Wen Ao Xue while looking at the gigantic cage. He then slowly said: “There are only the strongest and the most courageous cultivators who would dare to go in there... They are true fighters... because in that cage, the conditions are the same as on a real battlefield.”

Chapter 139: Cultivation Slaves

In the middle of that cage, the winners live on and the losers die.

It was indeed like on a battlefield.

In the Continent of the Nine Clouds, cultivators were respected and admired. Cultivators took cultivation very seriously as it was a way of life. That is why they didn't hesitate to risk their lives to improve their cultivation abilities. The path of cultivation was full of personal challenges and determination was the key to success.

“What are the rules of the Prisoner Arena?” asked Lin Feng.

“The one in charge of the cage declares who will fight against whom. Of course, he always matches people with other cultivators or ferocious beasts of a similar level, otherwise the battles would be meaningless slaughter.” explained Wen Ao Xue.

Lin Feng slightly nodded. If one wasn't assigned to fight against someone of the same level, many people wouldn't dare to enter the cage at the risk of fighting someone much stronger.”

“By the way, if you lose a battle in the cage then death is inevitable but if you win, you can get a massive amount of purity stones. That is why many of our fellow disciples come here to fight and then go back to the cultivation tower at the academy, use their purity stones and come back here again etc. That enables them to boost their cultivation speed to the extreme... of course it is also extremely dangerous.”

“Challenging death over and over again is, indeed, often the best way to become stronger. In dangerous situation, death and fortune coexist.” said Wen Ao Xue sounding solemn.

Lin Feng was stupefied. Wen Ao Xue sounded like he often visited this place. It was hard to imagine that this boy would go to such a place when looking at his beautiful girl-like face.

They were still walking and at the same time Lin Feng could clearly see the inside of the cage from where he was.

The inside of the cage was incredibly huge and the cage which covered it looked like it had fallen down straight from the heavens and trapped the people inside.

Inside the cage was divided into two: one side was for cultivator versus cultivator battles while the other side was dedicated to fights between cultivators and ferocious beasts.

The two sides were separated by viewing platforms. People were free to choose what kind of battle they wished to watch.

At that moment, a group of silhouettes in front of Lin Feng turned around and looked at them.

As if Wen Ao Xue had expected it for a long time, he took out six purity stones of medium quality out of his pocket and handed them over to the man who moved aside and let them pass.

“The price for the ten first rows is quite expensive but they are also the best place to clearly watch the battles.” said Wen Ao Xue. Lin Feng was stunned: “One purity stone of medium quality per person?! That’s horribly expensive! Way too expensive!”

One purity stone of medium quality was enough to practice one month in the cultivation tower of the Celestial Academy, from the fourth to the tenth floor. That wasn’t a low price.

“No, it’s not expensive at all. It’s even cheap. Think for a while, what kinds of people will come here and sit on the best rows on the viewing platforms?” said Wen Ao Xue while shaking his head.

“Those who wanted to enter in the cage to fight and the wealthy who already had a lot of purity stones to begin with.” said Lin Feng.

“You’re right. Besides, if they win a battle within the cage then they will win at least ten purity stones of medium quality. If they lose, they will not need any purity stones anymore as they will be dead.” said Wen Ao Xue. He then pointed at the third row of the viewing platform and said: “Let’s sit there.”

“Alright.” said Lin Feng while nodding. There weren’t so many people sitting in the first ten rows. After all, those who wanted to enter the cage as well as those who had enough purity stones to waste were hard to find.

When Lin Feng sat down, a battle had just finished.

Inside of the cage, one of the slaves inserted his hand into the chest of his opponent and ripped out his heart. The scene was sanguinary and bestial. Blood was dripping everywhere as the slave held the heart high in the air.

But the crowd was used to watching such spectacles. They suddenly started shouting in excitement when they saw the scene unfolding.

Liu Fei and Jing Yun frowned, they felt nauseous. Lin Feng looked calm but on the inside he also felt slightly grieved while watching the scene. In that world, there was no space for the weak. The weak were worthless and could be disposed of. This was something Lin Feng was still trying to adapt to.

“If you are not entirely confident in your own abilities then it is useless to enter the cage.” thought Lin Feng while shaking his head.

“Lin Feng, considering your opponent would be of the same level as you, would you prefer fighting against a ferocious beast or a cultivator?” asked Wen Ao Xue who was extremely curious.

“Ferocious beast.” replied Lin Feng without hesitation.

Wen Ao Xue was surprised by Lin Feng’s answer but smiled and immediately replied: “You’re right. Many people think that, if the opponent is of the same level, a ferocious beast would be stronger than a cultivator but it is not the same in the cage. A cultivation

slave doesn't know when he'll die. Cultivations slaves are even more cruel and sanguinary than the ferocious beasts. They are even more terrifying than the monsters of nightmares."

"Sometimes, you may think that you are stronger than your opponent but in the cage, it's different, you think that you're stronger but you might not necessarily be the last one standing in the end."

To stay alive, some people were ready to do anything.

Lin Feng shook his head and said: "You're right but my choice to fight against a ferocious beast has nothing to do with that."

"What? Really?" asked Wen Ao Xue very surprised.

"Really." replied Lin Feng and then added: "Cultivation slaves might be slaves... but after all, they are still people who deserve the basic human rights and to me they are still innocent people who have not provoked me."

Wen Ao Xue was surprised by Lin Feng's reply and had a strange expression on his face.

"You think that the cultivation slaves are extremely cruel and heartless but if they kill those who enter the cage, it is only because their lives are really threatened... and the worst is those who enter the cage and fight these cultivation slaves to the death do it for only a few purity stones... As far as I am concerned, I couldn't kill

anyone if I didn't hate them for something they have done to me or my friends. Otherwise, I would have a very guilty conscience." Lin Feng didn't think that he was a good person or that he could save the world alone but there were certain moral values and principles which were engraved into his heart and he would live by them. On the path of cultivation, Lin Feng thought virtue was just as important as determination.

After hearing Lin Feng's words, it was the first time that Wen Ao Xue had felt that there was something wrong with this place. Even though these people were cultivation slaves.... they were still people....

They were people but in this world, few people felt compassion like Lin Feng. After being born into this environment it has shaped many people to be just as brutal and bloodthirsty as the world around them.

The great majority of people only had the goal to become stronger, no matter what the cost. For that purpose, they unscrupulously killed other people. Killing people was a normal thing for them.

"You may be right... In the future, I will only battle against ferocious beasts." said Wen Ao Xue while smiling. At that moment, a voice came from behind them.

"Military Students, since when did you start disliking the state of the world and adopt a compassionate tone? How ridiculous." Wen Ao Xue and Lin Feng turned around and saw a group of people wearing magnificent clothes. They looked extremely arrogant.

“Political students!” Lin Feng frowned. Amongst them, Lin Feng recognized a fellow student... He had already slapped him once... Bai Ze!

Chapter 140: Lin Feng's Battle

At the Celestial Academy, people who studied military tactics and those who studied governmental affairs were usually not on good terms. There had always been tensions between the two categories of students.

Not only military students liked to come to The Prisoner Arena, political students also liked to come and watch the fights... but they generally preferred spending their time within the Market District to get valuable items which were for sale.

A lot of people like to come to The Prisoner Arena because it provided insights into battle, however it normally required courage.

When the military student joined the fights in The Prisoner Area, they could improve their abilities as fighters and gain insight onto the path of enlightenment. They had to be brave as it was a great challenge to their courage. However, those who studied political affairs didn't require these skills, they were not hot blooded and often liked to work in the shadows.

For those studying political affairs, the military students who engaged in battles in the Prisoner Arena were simply stupid brutes. Risking their life for a few purity stones was a stupid thing to do. They were probably all from poor and insignificant families.

The political students enjoyed coming to the Prisoner Arena to watch battles especially when military students were involved.

The political students became really excited each time they saw a military student get devoured by a ferocious beast or get killed by a cultivation slave.

“You are Lin Feng, right? The reason why you came here is because you want to become stronger now that you have challenged Hei Mo, correct?” said a young man in yellow clothes sitting next to Bai Ze and then added: “You cannot get killed by a ferocious beast before your fight against Hei Mo! We are all too impatient and excited to see you make a fool of yourself!”

Lin Feng glanced at Bai Ze. These people obviously knew who Lin Feng was because of Bai Ze. However, Lin Feng didn't know any of them.

Therefore, Lin Feng glanced at the young man in yellow clothes and then turned around and looked at the cage. With such people, the best reaction was to ignore them and continue as if they didn't exist.

Wealthy and noble cultivators were arrogant and thought they were set high above others. When they said something, people would always listen to them or at least they wouldn't ignore them.

The fact that Lin Feng ignored him made the young man in yellow clothes furious. He was stupefied. The smile that he had on his face slowly turned into an evil expression. He then said coldly and loud enough so that everybody could hear him: “Are you deaf? Can you not hear what I'm telling you?” ...But as before, Lin Feng ignored him.

“I ASKED YOU A QUESTION!” Lin Feng just continued to ignore him, the young man in yellow clothes was flying into a rage from shame as it had now attracted people’s attention. Cold Qi was being released from his body.

“How noisy!” said Wen Ao Xue while scratching his head. He then turned around and shouted at the young man: “Do you realize that you’re just like a noisy barking dog?”

The young man in yellow was stunned. His heart was violently pounding in his chest. Usually, he was the one who insulted other people by calling them a dog, not the other way around!

“Or do you bark like this because you are actually the son of a dog?”” added Wen Ao Xue sounding extremely firm.

“He dared to challenge Hei Mo, do you think that you are stronger than Hei Mo? What do you intend to do?” asked the young man in yellow clothes with an evil expression in his eyes. He was intensely staring at Wen Ao Xue with murderous intentions and said: “A dog? Do you know who you are provoking now?”

Wen Ao Xue remained silent and turned around without looking at the young man. He then comfortably sat down on his chair and said in a cold tone: “Don’t think that because your family name is Yu, you can act arrogantly to whomever you wish. Even if your family is Yu, you are still a dog... and trying to make a show of your strength here would just be pathetic and ridiculous.”

Wen Ao Xue was calm when saying these words. The young man in yellow clothes was stupefied. How did Wen Ao Xue know his family name was Yu? Besides, he knew that his name was Yu and still didn't hesitate to humiliate him in public!

When Liu Fei heard that his family name was Yu, she turned around and looked at him. Then, she immediately looked at Wen Ao Xue again.

The Yu Clan was extremely powerful within the Imperial City and was worshiped by many people. Even though Wen Ao Xue knew his name, he still didn't care! It seemed like Wen Ao Xue was not easy to deal with!

"Yu!" thought Lin Feng. Lin Feng had already heard that family name and not only once!

In the Xue Yue Country the strongest clans and sects were the Imperial Clan, then the Yue Clan, the Yu Clan, the Wan Shou Sect, the Hao Yue Sect, the Yun Hai Sect, the Ice and Snow Mountain Village and the Luo Xia Sect.

These eight groups of people were influential across the entire country and were known to be extremely strong. Since the Yun Hai Sect had been destroyed there were only seven left... amongst which four powers of influence were in the Imperial City.

Impressively, the young man in yellow clothes was probably a member of the Yu Clan.

But at that moment, the sound of roaring ferocious beasts woke Lin Feng up from his thoughts. Then, an old man entered in the cage.

“Ferocious beast, Lizard!” The crowd was very excited. The lizard had extremely strong defence but was also as agile as a tiger. It was extremely strong.

“I don’t know who will dare to enter the cage now but in any case, it will be another spectacular battle!” thought the crowd. The crowd was wondering how many people that lizard had already killed before that battle. It was probably a huge amount!

“Those who own this place constantly have to fill it with slaves and ferocious beasts, are they not losing money when they get killed? Besides, they also have to give purity stones to the winners!” asked Lin Feng who was perplexed at the idea of The Prisoner Arena. Surprisingly, the owners of The Prisoner Arena always had slaves and beasts to put inside, if some of them died every day, was their project economically viable?

“When these slaves and ferocious beasts arrive, they are not necessarily very strong. Even if they get killed, it is not such a big deal. They rely on the experience that the slaves and beasts gain with each battle. Ferocious beasts become stronger and long for more blood with each battle. The slaves also become strong and stronger as they fight to the death. Because they grow stronger with experience they become more expensive... then, the owners take them out and sell them for a high price. This is precisely their goal. We come here to become stronger and increase our cultivation abilities... well the owners do the same, we use them to

become stronger but they also use us to make their beasts and slaves become stronger.”

Lin Feng was surprised. He was far from even considering something like that. These ferocious beasts and slaves, if they won a great deal of deadly battles then they could become extremely powerful which was beneficial to their owners. Besides, they also became more valuable as they became stronger.

“As far as purity stones are concerned, we already have to pay an entrance tax everytime we want to come inside to fight or watch. Even though it’s not expensive, think about the number of people who come here every day. Besides, those who sit in the first rows of the viewing platforms have to pay more. Imagine the amount of money they make every day from admission to the viewing platforms.” explained Wen Ao Xue to Lin Feng. Lin Feng smiled and shook his head. Lin Feng had just drawn conclusions too quickly. He had neglected the fact that everybody had to pay something when they came into the arena.

At that moment, the old man announced: “Lizard, Beast of the Fourth Ling level. Twenty-eight victories!”

Everybody sighed in amazement when they heard the old man. That lizard was terrifying! It had already killed so many people!

“That means twenty purity stones of medium quality for someone at or above the fourth Ling Qi layer and a hundred purity stones of medium quality for someone under the fourth Ling Qi layer.” continued the old man.

“Twenty purity stones of medium quality... That’s so many!” thought Lin Feng. Twenty purity stones of medium quality was the equivalent of two thousand purity stones of lower quality. That was enough to practice on the fourth floor of the cultivation tower for two years. Two years in the cultivation tower, what a terrifying power one could gain from two years inside the tower!

“But putting one’s life at stake to become rich is also terrifying!” thought Lin Feng. Lin Feng had realized that the Yun Hai Sect was actually quite poor. The owner of The Prisoner Arena owned so many purity stones that it was frightening!

Twenty purity stones of medium quality were enough to buy a strong slave, a very good martial skill or an agility technique.

When Lin Feng realized that, he stood up without hesitation and said indifferently: “I will participate in the next battle!”

Chapter 141: Jun!

“I will participate in the next battle!” Lin Feng’s voice wasn’t loud but it was loud enough for everybody to hear him.

Everybody was surprised when looking at Lin Feng. He surprisingly wanted to fight against a fourth Ling Level lizard! He was so young!

Those who dared to enter in the cage all considered themselves as very strong cultivators. They were not stupidly playing with their life... but that lizard had already killed twenty eight people, it meant that it was very powerful and strengthened in battle!

A cultivator of the fourth Ling Qi layer who wanted to fight the lizard was taking a huge risk. It would be very difficult to emerge victorious for an average cultivator of the fifth Ling Qi layer.

Someone under the fourth Ling Qi layer would never be able to win against it. That is why the reward for them if they won was a hundred purity stones of medium quality.

Bai Ze smiled when he saw that Lin Feng was standing up. It looked like another military student was going to die in the Prisoner Arena.

“What a pity! He’s going to die before his battle against Hei Mo... It’s terribly disappointing.” said the young man in yellow clothes while laughing. Lin Feng was challenging a lizard, he was definitely going to die.

“Born as a beggar, he will also die as a beggar... For a few purity stones, he dares to risk his life. Not only will he lose his life but he will also lose the few purity stones that he has.”

Lin Feng turned around and looked at the young man in yellow clothes in a playful way.

“The Prisoner Arena can lend a stage to two cultivators who wish to battle to the death. Could it be that you want to have a try against me?” said Lin Feng in a loud voice which echoed throughout the arena. The young man was speaking so loud that a great number of people could hear him, so Lin Feng spoke so loud that everyone in the viewing platform could hear him.

The young man was stupefied and was speechless.

“Are you fighting or not? You keep talking bullshit yet do not have the spine to take action. A piece of trash with a big mouth can also be a coward, what a surprise.” said Lin Feng fiercely. The young man in yellow clothes was furious. The sensation that everybody was looking at him with mocking glares made him even more furious. He was evilly staring at Lin Feng.

“Poor guy, he’s so pitiful!” said Wen Ao Xue while laughing loudly.

It was useless to keep talking to him as he had no backbone, so Lin Feng ignored him again and walked towards the border of the cage, moving close to the old man.

The old man opened the door of the cage and let Lin Feng enter. Lin Feng went in and suddenly felt oppressed. It was as if the Qi of all the people and creatures in the cage that was oppressing him. The sensation was very uncomfortable.

When the Lizard saw Lin Feng come in, it roared loudly. Ling Level ferocious beasts were very smart. They knew who their enemies were. It knew that if it didn't kill Lin Feng, it would have to die.

The expression within its eyes looked ice cold. It was slowly and cautiously crawling towards Lin Feng.

Lin Feng looked at the lizard move towards him. Lin Feng looked indifferent and calm. He didn't look agitated at all.

But suddenly, the gigantic body of the lizard jumped up into the air and flew towards Lin Feng at full speed! It was a thousand times faster than a moment before when it was crawling.

“Eight strikes of desolation!”

Lin Feng used both of his hands to unleash his strikes. Lin Feng had mastered this skill to perfection! with one strike, he could kill a normal cultivator of the fourth Ling Qi layer.

Surprisingly, the lizard didn't avoid Lin Feng's attack. It opened its claws and blocked Lin Feng's attack. It managed to weaken the

power of Lin Feng's attack. Of course, eight strikes of desolation was an extremely powerful attack and it was impossible for that lizard to completely disintegrate its power. A few strikes still managed to pass through and crash into its body which made it fly backwards. It roared extremely loudly as if it had been angered. However, what surprised Lin Feng is that it wasn't injured at all.

“As expected, it has a very strong defence. No wonder it has managed to kill twenty eight cultivators already.” thought Lin Feng.

It emitted a loud bestial roar. Its eyes grew colder and colder. It was an incredibly horrifying sight to behold. Suddenly, it dashed towards Lin Feng again!

Lin Feng didn't use his eight strikes of desolation. Instead, he released an extremely strong sword Qi which created whirlwinds in the air. It seemed like the body of the lizard was being oppressed by the power of the Qi.

“RAAAWWWWRRRRRR....” the sharp sword Qi made the lizard roar extremely loudly. Its sharp claws were moving towards Lin Feng with deadly precision.

If Lin Feng came into contact with these claws then he would be cut into pieces.

At that moment, Lin Feng jumped straight towards the lizard. He had moved into the range of the lizard's strikes. He also slightly raised his hand into the air.

“What is he doing?!”

“He’s using his hand to block the claws of the lizard?”

“He’s crazy! He’s going to die.”

People in the crowd were making various comments. Most of them were stupefied. Many people got lacerated into pieces by the claws of the lizard after the first attack. Its claws were even sharper than most swords.

Lin Feng’s hands finally reached the lizard’s claws and suddenly, a radiant white light filled the entire cage.

The crowd was astonished. Lin Feng didn’t seem to have been injured but the lizard was screaming and howling in agony.

“How’s that possible? How could his hand be sharper than the lizard’s claws?” the crowd was astonished. They all looked puzzled.

Lin Feng continued moving nearer and nearer to the lizard. Surprisingly, he wanted a close combat battle against the lizard! They were both moving as fast as lightning.

“CRRRAAAACK!” suddenly a trail of brown blood splashed into the air. There was a huge wound on the lizard’s body.

“What a terrifying attack... and he did that with only his hand... he concentrated sword Qi into his hand and it became even sharper than a sword!” said a cultivator in the crowd. The crowd was astonished. That young man was really a monstrous genius. What many cultivators of the fourth Ling Qi layer had tried in vain before, Lin Feng had done it so easily with his bare hands!

When they saw that, Bai Ze and the young man in yellow clothes were both astonished and furious. They hadn't thought that Lin Feng was so strong.

“Obviously, he hid his strength on the entrance day.” Bai Ze felt ridiculous and laughable. He realized how strong Lin Feng was. On that day, he had called him a beggar each time he opened his mouth. At that moment, he realized that Lin Feng was a much stronger cultivator than him. He would never be able to defeat Lin Feng no matter how many resources his family provided him.

Lin Feng didn't know what all these people were thinking at that moment though. He just wanted to achieve his victory over the lizard. At that moment, he could concentrate all sword energy into his hand. It wasn't as terrifying as his sword attacks but it was still extremely strong.

Each time Lin Feng's hand touched the lizard, blood was sent splashing around the arena.

“RRRRRRAAAAAAAAAAWWWWWWWRRRRRRR.....!!!” after a short time, the lizard had already lost a great deal of blood. It gave a horrible shriek.

“I’ll stop playing with you now.” thought Lin Feng. He went even closer to the lizard. Immediately, a gigantic sword Qi emerged from his hand and with a single strike he beheaded the lizard and put it out of its misery. The entire crowd was astonished.

“Wow.....” sighed the crowd in amazement and thought: “How strong! He just used his hand as a sword!”

“You win. Here are twenty purity stones of medium quality.” said the old man entering the cage while handing Lin Feng the purity stones. Lin Feng impolitely took the stones and left the cage without sparing a glance at the old man.

Lin Feng glanced to the side where the cultivation slaves were fighting. This time, another cultivation slave had been killed.

The two sides were separated by an iron gate. If it was opened, the slaves and the beasts would be together in a single area.

When Lin Feng came out from inside of the cage, he felt much better as inside it was a very oppressing atmosphere.

Lin Feng moved back towards his seat, glanced at the young man in yellow clothes with a mocking look and then sat down.

On both sides of the cage, two old men were bringing in a new ferocious beast and a new slave. The slave’s hair was so messy that his facial features were almost invisible. He had handcuffs on his

hands and chains at his feet which made a loud metallic noise after each step he took.

Suddenly, the slave raised his head and his face became visible. There was a word on his face: Jun!

Chapter 142: Insane Fury

The word covered his entire face which made it difficult to see his real facial features.

His entire appearance made him look extremely savage and hideous.

Besides, his two dark eyes made him look even more cruel. His expression was enough to make anyone shiver.

“How cold.” said the crowd. They were all shivering.

Cultivation slaves were fighting everyday all day. They were extremely strong and battle hardened warriors. Therefore, each time a cultivation slave came from The Prisoner Arena, there would always be fights between those who wanted to buy the slave.

Lin Feng frowned. What a cruel method!

He didn't know where these slaves came from but marking their face was going too far. It completely violated their human rights and made them nothing more but animals. They would never be able to live in the real world, they were doomed to living in that hell forever.

“That slave is of the third Ling Qi layer. He has already won sixteen battles. If somebody wins against him, he can receive

twenty purity stones if he's above the third Ling Qi layer, a hundred if he's of the third Ling Qi layer or lower." said the old man leading him into the cage. The whole crowd was stupefied. He had won twelve battles less than the lizard but had won against all his challengers. He was incredibly terrifying of an opponent.

"Bai Ze, third Ling Qi layer, He is the same level as you." said the young man in yellow clothes. Bai Ze was surprised. He immediately nodded and said: "I'm going."

"Alright." said the young man in yellow clothes while smiling. Bai Ze walked towards the edge of the cage near the old man who was inside. Bai Ze nodded to him.

The old man looked at Bai Ze and frowned, he then said: "This slave is extremely strong, are you sure that you want to go into the cage?"

"I'm sure." said Bai Ze while nodding without hesitation. The old man thus let Bai Ze enter the cage.

"Hmph!" groaned Wen Ao Xue from on the bleachers to show his discontent.

Lin Feng was also surprised. Surprisingly, they had warned Bai Ze that it was a dangerous battle. When he wanted to fight against the lizard, the old man hadn't said anything even though the lizard was extremely strong.

“Lin Feng, that slave is out of luck.” said Wen Ao Xue. Lin Feng looked at him in a strange way and asked: “That’s weird because I know how strong Bai Ze is and he doesn’t have exceptional strength, nothing special. I even get the feeling that he could lose this battle before it even begins.”

“Bai Ze could never lose. Do you know who is in charge of the Prisoner Arena?” asked Wen Ao Xue. Lin Feng was surprised and looking at Wen Ao Xue with big eyes.

“The Bai Clan is in charge of The Prisoner Arena. Everything here is controlled by his clan.” said Wen Ao Xue indifferently. Lin Feng was stunned. No wonder that the old man was warning Bai Ze, because it was his clan that run the arena.

“What if Bai Ze loses?”

“They only look at the process. Not at the result.” said Wen Ao Xue mysteriously who seemed to understand what was going on in the background.

At that moment, Bai Ze was facing the slave within the fighting stage of the cage. A strong and sharp Qi emerged within the atmosphere.

Bai Ze shivered when he saw the bestial expression in the slave’s eyes.

“Die!” shouted the cultivation slave. He then immediately threw

himself at Bai Ze. Everybody who entered the cage wanted to kill him, if he did not kill the people who entered the cage then they would try to kill him.

The chains that he was wearing suddenly emitted a whistling sound in the air. The slave was jumping towards Bai Ze looking like a deadly spear.

“Hurricane Spirit...” whispered Lin Feng when saw that a hurricane spirit had appeared behind Bai Ze’s body.

Bai Ze was extremely arrogant and thought that he was a true genius... but Lin Feng had required only one finger to defeat him. He hadn’t even had the time to release his spirit. He had been humiliated to the extreme.

But Bai Ze was only eighteen. In any other place, he would be considered as a genius. In the Yun Hai Sect, it would have been no exception. However, in the Imperial City, there were many young cultivators who were much stronger than him. Genius was a very relative word in that context.

The slave didn’t even look at Bai Ze. His chains were still lacerating the atmosphere and diffusing whistling sounds as they cut the very air itself.

“How ferocious!” thought Bai Ze who started shaking and retreating a few steps backwards. At that moment, a vine illusion had started twining around Bai Ze’s body. The slave was still flying towards Bai Ze like a spear rushing through the air.

There was absolutely no superfluous movement made by the slave, he was going directly for the kill. Bai Ze was in a fatal position.

Bai Ze's pupils shrank. He struggled to move his hands and suddenly a strong Qi flowed from his body which looked like a hurricane and moved towards the slave's chains at full speed.

Suddenly, Bai Ze was almost suffocating because the slave had put even more strength into his vine illusion which was twining around Bai Ze's body. The slave, with the aid of his vine spirit had managed to control his flight through the air and his trajectory looked like a perfect arch within the air. He was moving straight towards Bai Ze.

"How strong!" the crowd was amazed at the sight. The slave was extremely strong. Every single move he made was perfect. He was fast, agile and experienced in battle.

Lin Feng frowned. He remembered that he had already seen that kind of spirit. Han Man's friend, Po Jun, had a vine spirit too.

"Po Jun and Jun the slave!" Lin Feng looked surprised. He was staring at that slave as if he had understood something terrifying. Was it a coincidence? How could they have the same name and use the same spirit?!

"BOOM!" while Bai Ze was doing his best to avoid the attack, the slave finally reached him and sent him flying backwards however

he was not injured.

The slave was stupefied. He had carried out a very strong attack but hadn't managed to kill his opponent. How could he have not died from that attack?

"Stop!" at that moment, a loud voice emerged in the atmosphere. The slave was surprised, stopped moving and stared at the old man.

"This battle ends here." said the old man indifferently. The crowd was stupefied. End of the battle?

Only death could make a battle end, those were the rules! How could it just end during this fight?

"It looks like the old man and the current challenger have a relationship!" thought the crowd, especially when they remembered that the old man had warned Bai Ze. That was the only possibility.

"We're not done yet, how could the battle end here?" asked the slave with a husky voice. He was fixedly staring at the old man.

The old man's expression suddenly became evil. A slave dared refute his words?

"Since you want to die, I will help you achieve your aim." said the old man with an evil smile on his face. "Release the beast."

When the old man finished talking, on the other side of the arena, a middle-aged man appeared. The crowd was surprised by the fact of what he was riding as a beast-like monster. It had four legs and chains around its neck.

“Jun, this is the fiercest of beasts and while you are in its presence you would do best to act docile. Today, you will fight against it, if you win, you will live, if you lose, you will die.” said the old man evilly. Jun was fixedly staring at him. Surprisingly, he wanted him to fight against it, that old man was an animal!

When the beast heard these words, it raised its head and bestially looked at the old man.

When looking at the situation, Lin Feng, who was sat on the viewing platform started to release an extremely strong and cold Qi.

Chapter 143: Brothers

That strong freezing Qi seemed like it was coming from the depth of the earth itself.

Wen Ao Xue, who was sitting next to Lin Feng was extremely surprised. A strange expression appeared on his face and he looked at Lin Feng.

“How cold!” said Wen Ao Xue while looking at Lin Feng with his beautiful woman like eyes. Why was Lin Feng body releasing so much cold Qi?

Not only Wen Ao Xue was surprised but the others as well, Liu Fei, Jing Yun, Duan Feng and Yuan Shan were all staring at Lin Feng. They could all feel the cold Qi that he was releasing on their skin. The moment the Qi had reached them they were freezing cold.

Only Jing Yun glanced at Lin Feng for a second and then looked at the monster again.

She looked at the legs of the beast. Its legs were tied with chains but it seemed like its forelegs were actually hands, human hands. Similarly to cultivation slaves, it had a mark on its face. “Han” was written across its face.

Jing Yun got the feeling of deja-vu. She started to look closely at the beast and saw that it looked almost human.

“Han Man!” Said Jing Yun, she couldn’t believe her eyes. She didn’t believe what she was seeing. That beast couldn’t be Han Man!

But in view of the cold Qi coming from Lin Feng’s body, Jing Yun thought that she must have been right with her assumption. That couldn’t possibly be anybody else.

An expression full of hatred and wrath suddenly appeared on Jing Yun’s face. That band of animals was suddenly treating Han Man that way.

“Huh?” said Wen Ao Xue when he heard Jing Yun. He was surprised to see Jing Yun’s facial expression.

“You and Lin Feng know that person?” asked Wen Ao Xue to Jing Yun.

Jing Yun looked sure of herself and nodded: “Yes, we do. He is our good friend.”

When the others heard Jing Yun, they were stupefied. No wonder Lin Feng had become so furious to the extent that some cold Qi was released from his body.

So that man that was made into a beast was actually Lin Feng’s friend!

“Haha. Not only do they complain about the state of the world and show compassion for trash, but they also make friends with slaves. They are true to their names as beggars! Friends with slaves... Haha!” The political students were making fun of Lin Feng and the others. They had heard what Jing Yun had said.

“Hahaha, their friend is treated as a beast and there is even a person riding him. Haha!” said the young man in yellow clothes.

Lin Feng slowly turned around and looked at him. Suddenly, the young man in yellow clothes turned deathly pale. He looked terrified.

“He looks so cold, so heartless!” Thought the young man in yellow.

Lin Feng’s eyes were expressionless and lifeless.

“Filthy beggar!” said the young man in yellow clothes while gnashing his teeth. He had been momentarily scared of Lin Feng because of the expression in his eyes, how was that possible!

“BOOOM!”

Lin Feng crushed his seat into tiny pieces with a punch. The seats on the viewing platform were all made from solid stone. Lin Feng had crushed it with a single strike. He then started walking towards the young man in yellow.

“BOOOM!”

Lin Feng crushed another seat. The heart of the young man in yellow clothes started pounding.

At that moment, Lin Feng arrived in front of him. Lin Feng grabbed the young man's throat. His movement had been as fast as lightning, so that the young man hadn't even had the time to dodge. Lin Feng then lifted the young man's body into the air with one hand. The young man in yellow clothes could hardly breathe from the power of Lin Feng's grip.

“BOOOM!”

Without hesitation, Lin Feng smashed the young man's body into the stone chair that he was sitting on. The noise from his body colliding with the stone was terrifying. Then, Lin Feng pressed the young man's head onto the ground and then trampled over his face. The young man was suffocating from the pressure of Lin Feng's foot on his face.

This had happened in the blink of an eye, everybody was astonished. All these political students were watching the scene speechless. They were astonished by Lin Feng's actions. When they felt Lin Feng's cold Qi, they didn't dare to attack him.

“If you say one more word, I will crush you under my foot like a bug.” said Lin Feng in a low voice fixedly staring at the young man in yellow clothes under his foot. His voice was extremely cold.

At that moment, the young man in yellow clothes was bleeding so much that he was half conscious and didn't really realize what was going on. His head was spinning and he was just staring blankly into the distance.

"A supposed beggar has trampled all over your face. Now everybody will make fun of you just like you made fun of the slaves. The difference is that the slaves are worth much more than you." said Lin Feng coldly. He then removed his foot and ignored the young man in yellow clothes. He started walking towards the cage. With every step he took closer to the cage the cold Qi emerging from his body was getting colder and colder.

Everybody was staring at Lin Feng wondering what he was doing and why such a freezing cold Qi was being released from his body. Those near Lin Feng were particularly stupefied. That young man was incredibly terrifying! What was wrong with him?

Those in the cage could feel that the atmosphere was getting colder and colder. The old man was astonished when he felt the cold Qi being released by Lin Feng who was slowly walking towards the cage.

Bai Ze was also stunned, especially since he had also seen the scene a moment before with the young man in yellow. Lin Feng was definitely crazy and it wasn't a good idea to provoke insane people! Bai Ze's heart was pounding at full speed in his chest.

When Po Jun saw Lin Feng and how ferocious he looked, his heart also started pounding.

Lin Feng... It was Lin Feng... He had thought he would never see people he knew again.

As far as Han Man was concerned, when he saw Lin Feng, he blinked a few times as if he was seeing things. The bestial expression in his eyes disappeared and was replaced with a sorrowful expression. He had been forced to live like a ferocious beast, he was forced into life and death battle constantly and could've died at any time. He had never thought he would see Lin Feng again. Han Man hated Duan Tian Lang, that animal! ...and he hated everybody at The Prisoner Arena.

When all the events happened in the Yun Hai Sect, Han Man and Po Jun had survived. But if Han Man had known that he would become a slave and be forced to live the way he had, he would have preferred to die back on that day.

Many survivors had been taken as prisoners and then sold as slaves. That's how Han Man had been sold to the Prisoner Arena.

During his time in The Prisoner Arena, Han Man had become lifeless. He was humiliated from morning to evening and beaten like a dog. He had even been forced to act as a ferocious wild beast. In the Prisoner Camp, he didn't stop killing his friends from the morning till the night. He had been taught that if he didn't kill, he would die, if he killed, he wouldn't die. He had become much stronger and had a savage ferocity.

Han Man had resisted and because he had tried to resist, he had

been forced to live as a beast.

At that moment, when he saw Lin Feng, Han Man's expression gradually changed. His eyes and face gradually turned red, tears slowly started flowing down from his eyes.

“Lin Feng, my brother!” Said Han Man as he hung his head in shame. He was ashamed to be in this situation where he was rode like a beast... and Lin Feng was, once again, rushing into a powerful foe to save him.

Han Man knew what kind of person Lin Feng was. He had gone to the Precipice of the Abyss to save him, he had gone into the Life and Death Arena to save him and once again he was moving into danger to save him. No matter whom he was facing, Lin Feng would never let his friends down, even if the opponent was incredibly strong. There is no one that he would not challenge for the sake of his friends. His life was worth nothing if he abandoned his friends.

...and at that moment, Lin Feng was risking his life again for his friends.

“Brother, you have suffered hardships.” Lin Feng's dark and cold expression suddenly changed and was replaced with a warm smile. Han Man raised his head again when he heard Lin Feng. Tears were unceasingly flowing down his cheeks.

There are some friends who will come to save you no matter how dark the situation becomes!

Chapter 144: Killing Shadow!

P.s I know in this chapter it says fourth Ling Qi layer and this continues through the next few chapters. However I have checked the breakthrough chapter and the Author has stated he was writing some of this while at work so there are typos. I will read ahead a few chapters more tomorrow and check this, but for now it does look like a typo and most likely would have put him on the edge of breaking through to fifth layer.

Brother? The old man was surprised when he heard the conversation between them. An evil expression appeared on his face. Lin Feng surprisingly knew that slave and was a good friend of his. The old man looked at Lin Feng who was slowly moving towards them. He then walked towards Lin Feng to prevent him from walking further and said: “It doesn’t matter if you were friends before. Now, he is marked. He is doomed to be a slave for the rest of his life.”

“If I put a mark on your face, will you become a slave too?” said Lin Feng extremely coldly.

The old man smiled and said: “You want to die, right?”

“If I die, it will mean that someone killed me after your death.” said Lin Feng coldly. Suddenly, the Qi emerging from his body grew even colder and started moving towards the old man.”

“You are overestimating yourself.” said the old man while smiling. Suddenly, his body pierced through the air looking like a

hurricane and moved towards Lin Feng.

“Sword Unsheathing!” Lin Feng used his sword unsheathing skill. He had mastered it to perfection. He was extremely quick and agile since a single strike needed to be enough to kill an opponent.

But the old man ignored Lin Feng’s attack and managed to avoid it while moving closer to him, he then thrust out his fist and punch Lin Feng in the chest.

“ARGH!” Blood sprayed from Lin Feng’s mouth as he was propelled backwards.

“Seventh Qi layer!” the crowd was stupefied. The old man was incredibly strong. He had broken through to the seventh Qi layer and compared to Lin Feng the difference was too big. Lin Feng wouldn’t be able to withstand another attack.

But Lin Feng raised his head again. He started moving towards the old man again. He looked as cold and determined as ever.

The entire atmosphere around the cage was filled with a freezing cold Qi.

“You’re very talented. You could have had a brilliant future but because you’re courting death, I have no other option but to help you find it.” said the old man when he saw that Lin Feng continued to approach. He then laughed coldly and said: “You have only broken through to the fourth Ling Qi layer, you could never touch

me, not even once... and killing me? Only in your dreams!”

“No need to kill him. Put a mark on him. Make him a slave. Wouldn’t it be much better that way?” said Bai Ze. The old man was surprised by those words but then smiled and said: “Young master, you are extremely clever. Of course, that would be a much better solution! He’s much stronger than that Han beast... It would probably be a great spectacle to see him fighting as a slave.”

“Let’s do it.” said Bai Ze while evilly staring at Lin Feng. Lin Feng had acted recklessly, there was no choice.

Lin Feng didn’t even give him a glance though. He kept walking. Each and every step he took was filled with determination and coldness.

“AAARRRRGHHHHH!” Han Man roared just like an animal. His body was shaking but the middle-aged man was holding him down with chains. Han Man couldn’t move freely.

The old man hit Lin Feng again. Blood splashed once again from his mouth. Lin Feng’s body was projected away and struck against the wall of the cage so hard that it made the cage vibrate.

Just like the old man had said, Lin Feng was strong but had only broken through to the fourth Ling Qi layer. He could never compete with someone of the seventh Ling Qi layer.

When Liu Fei and the others saw Lin Feng’s body get blown

away. They all stood up and walked towards the cage.

“Wait, wait!” said Wen Ao Xue preventing them from moving further.

“Get out of the way.” said Liu Fei. Wen Ao Xue only had a wry smile on his face.

“Lin Feng cannot win this fight. If you go there, you will only die with him.”

“Get out of the way!” said Liu Fei coldly ignoring what he had just said.

“I’m going.” said Wen Ao Xue while shaking his head. His body suddenly transformed into an illusion and flew towards the cage. When he arrived at the edge of the cage, he didn’t enter it. He had the feeling that Lin Feng wouldn’t be so easy to kill.

Wen Ao Xue was terribly touched by Lin Feng’s actions. That guy would risk his life for his friends...

Po Jun was touched as well. The mark on his face was moving along with his facial muscles. Such a person should be respected by everyone.

Lin Feng’s eyes became pitch black. He was slowly walking forwards. In his heart, there was no emotion at all, only darkness.

“DIE!” shouted Lin Feng furiously. His deadly sword fluttered in the air. A grayish black fog rose around his sword and started rushing into the atmosphere.

“Is it the best you can do?” said the old man while laughing. He joined his hands together and release a hurricane like wind.

A deadly Qi unceasingly flowed out from his body. Lin Feng’s sword was shaking with intensity.

At that moment, Lin Feng threw his sword through the air towards the old man. It pierced through atmosphere at full speed and lacerated everything which came into contact with it.

“What’s the point?” said the old man fearlessly. When Lin Feng’s sword arrived in front of the old man, it abruptly stopped.

“Goodbye!” yelled the old man causing Lin Feng’s long sword fly away into the distance. At that moment, Lin Feng had landed in front of the old man and thrust his hand forward with the sharpness and precision of a sword.

“Die!” said the old man with a cold smile on the corner of his mouth. He disintegrated Lin Feng’s sword Qi and punched Lin Feng again. Thick dark blood gushed out from Lin Feng’s mouth.

Lin Feng however had caught the old man’s hand using both his hands. He surprisingly hadn’t been pushed back. Everybody was

stupefied.

“What is he doing?”

Lin Feng was probably going to die because of this. That action was a big mistake.

It seemed like there was a large wound on Lin Feng's chest where the old man unceasingly punched. There was a huge blood stain. The scene was terrifying.

But Lin Feng didn't release the old man's hand. He was firmly and tightly holding it between his two hands.

Everybody was staring at Lin Feng. How fierce! These were probably his last moments and he still didn't release the old man's hand. Had he renounced his will to live?

Some of Lin Feng's blood even splashed on Han Man. His heart was pounding and he was breathing heavily.

Dust rose under Han Man's body. Suddenly, the ground started shaking. The expression in his eyes was progressively changing. His red eyes slowly turned yellowish-brown and looked like that of a bloodthirsty wild beast. They were filled with intense wrath.

“Rooooaarrrr!” a bestial roar came from Han Man's mouth. It seemed like the ground was going to cave in. The ground was shaking so much that it seemed like it could cave it at any time.

More and more yellow dust was rising into the air. A thick layer of sand was covering Han Man's body.

The middle-aged man who was on Han Man's back wondered what was happening. His heart started beating faster and faster.

"What's going on?" When the middle-aged man saw all the dust flying around him, he was astonished.

Suddenly, the chains on Han Man's body broke into a thousand tiny pieces.

When the old man and Lin Feng, who were fighting, saw that, they were stupefied too.

"Huh?" the old man was surprised. He didn't understand what was happening. His pupils shrank.

"Celestial Spirit!" Suddenly, a dazzling light as bright as the sun burst from Lin Feng's expressionless and pitch-black eyes.

Since Lin Feng's Celestial Spirit had awoken, he had not taken advantage of the abilities that his spirit provided him. This was the first time.

The old man slightly closed his eyes. He wanted to move back but Lin Feng was still tightly holding his hand.

Suddenly, the old man jumped up in the air, taking Lin Feng along with him.

“Die!” said Lin Feng in a low voice. He could see everything clearly thanks to his celestial spirit. Every movement of the old man was very clear in Lin Feng’s mind.

At the same time, Lin Feng’s body turned into a shadow. A dazzling light appeared and suddenly, a long trail of blood sprayed into the air.

“That shadow!” the crowd was stupefied by what they had seen. Lin Feng had become almost invisible with his shadow!

“Just because you’re extremely strong, it doesn’t mean that I can’t kill you!” said a cold yet calm voice. The old man was holding his throat as blood was gushing through his fingers. He was falling slowly to the ground!

Chapter 145: Blood vessels

The old man's body collapsed. He was lying dead on the ground with a shocked expression still on his face. At that moment, the entire atmosphere became calm again.

Lin Feng, who had only broken through to the fourth Ling Qi layer, had killed the old man who had broken through to the seventh Ling Qi layer? In that world, one Ling Qi layer was already a huge difference in battle. A cultivator who could defeat people with higher Qi layers than his own was a real genius.

The whole crowd had the impression that they were in a dream. It had looked like it was the end for Lin Feng but the final result was strangely the exact opposite of what everyone was thinking. The crowd was stunned.

Lin Feng had been determined until the end and shocked the entire crowd.

“Quick, ruthless, agile, skilful and determined...” The crowd admired Lin Feng as a cultivator. His strategy had been amazing. He had planned everything that happened from the beginning. At the start of the fight he was not even using a fraction of his true speed. He wanted to hide how fast he really was... and then at the end, he had carried out an extremely quick and lethal attack.

Lin Feng coughed loudly. Blood revealed itself with each cough. There was also a large amount of blood flowing out from the wound on his chest.

He took out a jar of pills from his pocket. Lin Feng took two pills out and quickly swallowed them. Suddenly, he started feeling more and more relaxed.

“This guy is insane.” said Wen Ao Xue while looking at Lin Feng. He had a smile on his face. Lin Feng was hard to understand. What he had done seemed like a miracle. He had surprisingly managed to kill the old man.

“Seventh Qi layer...” thought Wen Ao Xue. “Besides, where did that other sword come from?”

Lin Feng had gotten rid of his long sword during the battle and nobody had noticed that he still had another sword. He had used that sword to slit the old man’s throat.

“Lin Feng, brother!” said Han Man. At that moment, one of his pupils was a deep red and the other one was brown. It was extremely strange to see. One eyes looked like it had been bathed in blood and the other looked like the depth of the earth.

“Don’t worry. I don’t die so easily.” said Lin Feng whose cold expression turned into a warm and friendly smile when looking at Han Man.

Han Man roared again while looking at the sky. The ground started shaking. Yellow sand started flying around Han Man’s body. Suddenly, his entire body transformed into a sand storm.

“What’s going on?” asked some people in the crowd. That was so strange! A moment ago, the crowd hadn’t really paid attention to him because they were too fascinated by the fight between Lin Feng and the old man but they had noticed that something abnormal was happening to him. They were all speechless.

The sand flying around Han Man’s body was getting thicker and thicker. As the sand grew denser the light grew more dazzling and bright. At that moment, there was so much sand flying around Han Man that it had created a huge dome of sand.

Han Man was surrounded by a gigantic sand sphere.

Lin Feng frowned. He didn’t understand what was happening to Han Man.

“CRACK!”

A large crack appeared in the gigantic sphere surrounding Han Man’s body. It was as large as a lotus flower. Han Man’s body could be seen once again.

Everybody’s eyes shrank. They were all stupefied and looked incredibly perplexed.

Han Man’s hair was very long and its colour was pitch black but at this moment, his hair had turned yellow like sand. The sight of him made people in the crowd start to shiver.

Han Man looked incredibly majestic at that moment, like an ancient god. The only thing which hadn't changed was the slave mark he had on his face.

Han Man opened his eyes. It seemed like there was a storm growing inside his eyes.

“Wow.”

From head to foot, Han Man was filled with explosive force and power.

Han Man turned around and looked at the middle aged man with a vicious gaze. The middle aged man was scared by Han Man's strange bestial look.

“Die!” shouted Han Man. He started walking slowly but his steps were extremely heavy on the ground. He stopped in place and threw a punch towards the middle aged man. Yellow sand was glowing all around his fist.

The middle aged man was surprised by the attack. He didn't have time to dodge the attack so he raised his fist and a strong power emerged.

“BOOOOOOM!!”

When their two fists collided, a huge cloud of sand rose up in the air but suddenly, a huge quantity of sand moved towards the middle aged man at full speed and buried his body in a solid tomb of sand.

“RAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAR!”

Han Man sounded furious. He punched the sand in which the middle aged man was buried with such power that it cracked open. The body of the middle aged man was crushed and his body had exploded at the point of impact. However there was no blood to be seen, only sand surrounded the body.

“What!” The whole crowd was gasping with astonishment. They were staring at Han Man. His attack was incredibly violent. Not only had he trapped the middle aged man and buried him alive but he then also stuck with such power that part of his body exploded.

The crowd didn’t have the slightest impression that Han Man was any weaker than Lin Feng.

“His blood vessels have awoken.” whispered Wen Ao Xue blankly staring at Han Man through the cage.

That’s right. Han Man’s blood vessels had awoken. Only when the blood circulation had reached a perfect rhythm, the blood vessels could awaken and grant the blood a special power.

If someone’s blood vessels awoke, their offspring would also be

granted the same power. When blood vessels awoke, it provided cultivators with an amazing strength which was previously hidden. However usually the cultivators who had awoken their blood vessels would have a blood spirit. What Han Man had achieved was a miracle to the extent that Wen Ao Xue had never even heard that it was possible.

However, there was no possible doubt, Han Man's vessels had awoken, there was no other possible explanation for the strange transformation that had happened to his body.

Lin Feng was also dumbstruck. How strong! At that moment, Han Man had the strength of the fifth Ling Qi layer which meant he was even stronger than Lin Feng who was only at the fourth Ling Qi layer.

At that moment, many people moved towards the cage. Lin Feng was surprised.

“Lin Feng, brother, that little brat should make his grave here.” said Han Man while glancing at Bai Ze. He wanted to make Lin Feng a slave a moment before. Bai Ze had nowhere to run.

Han Man started walking towards Bai Ze and raised his fist into the air.

Lin Feng slowly turned around and looked at Bai Ze. At that moment, Bai Ze's face turned deathly pale and he started retreating backwards.

“You said that you wanted to make me a slave, right?” said Lin Feng while walking towards Bai Ze.

When Bai Ze heard Lin Feng, he started shaking with terror and shook his head.

“Come save me, come save me!” shouted Bai Ze. How could it end like this? This place belonged to his clan. If he wanted something, then he could get it... but at that moment, the situation was critical for him and he had no way to escape.

At that moment, many people were moving towards the cage in an attempt to help Bai Ze. They were all stopping close to Wen Ao Xue who was blocking the entrance of the cage.

Wen Ao Xue was just leaning against the entrance of cage. He had a cynical smile on his face. When Bai Ze saw that he wasn't moving, he shouted: “Wen Ao Xue! You dare!”

Wen Ao Xue was provoking the young master of the Bai Clan.

Chapter 146: Marking

“What are you guys doing?” shouted Bai Ze furiously when he saw that people had stopped at the entrance of the cage.

Wen Ao Xue glanced at Bai Ze. Wen Ao Xue found it pathetic that Bai Ze was in such a situation because of his own stupidity. Bai Ze thought that he was a genius who had all the power in the world and because of that he had put himself in that dangerous situation.

“If I’m here, nobody will enter the cage.” said Wen Ao Xue in a cold tone while sounding very confident.

Lin Feng was surprised. He hadn’t thought that Wen Ao Xue would act so cruel. It seemed like that young man who was as beautiful as a woman, was actually not easy to predict.

Bai Ze was staring at Lin Feng and saw that he wasn’t hurrying to kill him. Lin Feng raised his sword and slowly started walking towards Bai Ze.

“What are you going to do to me?” said Bai Ze who could barely breathe as fear was starting to consume his consciousness. His voice was very low.

“Don’t worry. I will not kill you.” said Lin Feng indifferently. Bai Ze was surprised. Immediately after, a smile appeared on the corner of Lin Feng’s mouth who said: “Your clan likes to put markings on people’s faces and make them become slaves for the rest of their lives. I will also put a marking on your face. We will

see if you ever dare to insult and humiliate slaves again.”

Put a marking on his face? Like a slave?

“Haven’t you heard what I said? Come in and help me!” shouted Bai Ze furiously as he was getting more and more impatient.

Some people moved to enter the cage then suddenly, Wen Ao Xue jumped over in front of them and said: “Three more steps and I will unsheathe my sword. If I am forced to unsheathe my sword, there will be blood.” said Wen Ao Xue calmly. Everybody stopped moving towards the cage. Nobody dared to take another step forward.

“Evil must be annihilated.” a gigantic amount of sword Qi was released from Lin Feng’s body. Bai Ze was incredibly frightened. He was not going to be saved by anyone as they were all outside, afraid to move another step.

“If you let me off, I can offer you a fortune of purity stones. I can even offer you some high class martial skills and agility techniques.”

“Offer?” Lin Feng laughed. Wealthy people were really used to getting their own way with their money and influence. They thought that everyone was beneath them and could be bought with a few purity stones.

“If I let you off, you will give me some purity stones, high class

martial skills and agility techniques?” said Lin Feng coldly before adding: “Do you think that I’m stupid?”

After what had happened today, the Bai Clan would never forget Lin Feng. They would never let him off so easily.

If Lin Feng didn’t act then he would never be able to avenge Han Man and his other friends from the Yun Hai Sect who had been transformed into fighting slaves and whose faces had been violated with a marking in the Prisoner Arena.

Lin Feng and the Bai Clan were enemies. He had to kill them or they would kill him. There would be no peace between them as long as he lived. Lin Feng thought this way because he was now the Patriarch of the Yun Hai Sect.

Bai Ze made a hideous and evil expression when he heard Lin Feng’s words.

“If you dare to touch me, the Bai Clan will never let you off and they will hunt you until you are dead.”

“As expected, you’re a moron.” said Lin Feng who couldn’t bear listening to Bai Ze talk. At that moment, Bai Ze let out a horrible shriek. A marking had appeared on Bai Ze’s face.

Bai Ze covered his face with his hand and blood was unceasingly flowing through his fingers. Lin Feng looked incredibly cold and ruthless. He was completely emotionless. He didn’t feel the

slightest bit of compassion or pity after seeing Bai Ze in such a pitiful state.

With people like him, This was the most efficient means to solve the problem. Only violence would be understood.

Lin Feng used his sword to carve a slave marking into Bai Ze's face but it was quickly covered by blood. With another slash of his sword he removed one of Bai Ze's Fingers.

Bai Ze was shaking with fear and pain then suddenly, he collapsed.

“What a cruel yet determined young man!” thought many people in the crowd. They remained silent and were fixedly staring at the people in the cage of the Prisoner Arena.

On that day, the crowd had seen a magnificent show. They had seen spectacular fights and something they never expected.

Lin Feng looked as calm and emotionless as before. He was still holding his sword in his hand. He turned around and said in a low voice: “Let's go.”

Han Man and Po Jun walked along with Lin Feng. Wen Ao Xue started walking back as well. At that moment, all of those who had come near the cage to help Bai Ze quickly rushed forwards to help him.

“Those who dare to provoke me, die.” said Wen Ao Xue in an extremely cold voice. Lin Feng was walking behind him and blood was still dripping from his sword.

Lin Feng’s sword had frightened everyone.

Han Man was walking behind them. Each of his steps made the ground vibrate. Everybody already understood how strong he was.

These people knew that if they didn’t block them from leaving, they would not lose their life meaninglessly.

A short moment later, the crowd could only see the backs of Lin Feng and his friends.

When they had seen Lin Feng go down into the cage, they didn’t know what he intended to do. They also hadn’t thought that he would kill the old man who was at the seventh Ling Qi layer.

“Piece of trash! You’re just a piece of trash!” A furious voice spread through the atmosphere of the Prisoner Arena after Lin Feng and his friends had left. It was the young man in yellow clothes who was furious. On that day, he had been humiliated by Lin Feng. How could this happen? His family name was Yu!

They had never been humiliated. Who within their right mind would dare to humiliate the Yu Clan?

When the Bai Clan members saw the young man in yellow

clothes stand up, they were surprised.

“If someone dares talk about what happened today, I will kill him!!!” said the young man in yellow clothes to those sitting next to him.

They were surprised but they obediently listened and nodded with agreement. Inside of their hearts, they were insulting him though. He had provoked Lin Feng, he had made Bai Ze pay the price for it... and on top of that, he was asking them not to tell this to anyone. He was just scared that he would lose face and make the entire Yu Clan lose face.

“Lin Feng, if you don’t die, I’ll never regain my prestige.” A moment ago, he hadn’t dared talk in the presence of Lin Feng because he had been scared that Lin Feng would also punish him. Lin Feng was too frightening. He had seen how Lin Feng had carved a marking onto Bai Ze. How horrible!

Lin Feng had been truly ruthless when he was at the Prisoner Arena!

.....

Lin Feng was in his room lying on the bed. Suddenly, he had the feeling that a hand was almost touching his forehead.

Lin Feng shook his head, stretched and slowly opened his eyes.

A beautiful silhouette was standing in front of him.

At that moment, Meng Qing was looking emotionless. She looked at Lin Feng and said calmly: “You woke up.”

Lin Feng’s body was sore and felt rigid from head to toe after fighting with the old man, but his vital organs were still functioning properly.

“You stayed here all the time to look after me?” asked Lin Feng to Meng Qing.

Meng Qing shook her head and said: “No, only once in a while.”

“Really?” asked Lin Feng not convinced.

“Of course, why?” replied Meng Qing. Lin Feng was surprised and then laughed.

The door suddenly opened with a loud rumble. Liu Fei entered the room. Meng Qing stood up and said: “He woke up, you can go and talk to him.”

When she finished talking, Meng Qing immediately left. Liu Fei had a strange expression and looked perplexed.

Meng Qing hadn’t left Lin Feng alone for even one second when he was sleeping, why did she hastily leave when he woke up?

“Alright.” said Liu Fei while nodding even though she didn’t really understand. She walked towards Lin Feng’s bed and angrily looked at him which surprised Lin Feng.

He had just woken up, why would Liu Fei already be angry with him? What did he do?

“Why do you act so recklessly, do you never think about the consequences?” asked Liu Fei.

She was obviously angry because of what had happened at the Prisoner Arena.

Lin Feng smiled wryly and thought “consequences?”

When he saw that his friends of the Yun Hai Sect, had become slaves and had been marked like animals after the destruction of the sect, how could he not act?

“For a beautiful and delicate face like yours, I will also act recklessly and ignore the consequences.” said Lin Feng jokingly while laughing.

When Lin Feng had finished talking, Liu Fei’s heart started racing in her chest and her face completely turned red!! It was both beautiful and delicate!!

Chapter 147: The Visitors

There was a slight addition to the previous chapter which I missed on my translation, not a big part to miss but it will add context here. Lin Feng when carving the slave marking into Bai Ze's face also removed a finger, you will see the change in the previous chapter.

Outside of the academy, a certain number of people were walking towards its main gate.

Their leader was wearing blue clothes and magnificent mask. He was a middle aged man and a cold Qi emerged from his body. Amongst the people who were following him there were some Bai Clan members who had witnessed all the events at the Prisoner Arena.

Amongst the people of the Bai Clan was one certain young man. He was wearing a splendid golden mask. His hand was wrapped in bandages. The expression in his eyes looked like a demon coming straight from the underworld. His eyes under his golden mask looked unimaginably evil.

At that moment, two silhouettes jumped in front of them and blocked them the way. They then shouted: "Except for the students and the staff members of the Celestial Academy, nobody can enter the territory the Celestial Academy!"

The middle aged man in blue clothes took a few steps forward, his hair was fluttering in the wind.

“Get lost.” said the man in blue clothes. He then made a single movement and the two people who were obstructing the way were blown away in the blink of an eye. People who saw the scene were gasping with astonishment.

“Xuan Qi layer!” surprisingly, a cultivator of the Xuan Qi layer had come to the academy.

The group of people entered the academy. The two guards stood up and started walking.

That middle aged man of the Xuan Qi layer was surely here with ill intentions.

The man in blue clothes and the large group of Bai Clan members who were following him arrived in front of one of the palaces. This was the palace where the military students lived.

“Stop!”

Suddenly a large group of people moved in front of the group of people.

The middle aged man in blue clothes frowned and said: “Get the hell out of my way.”

“Who the hell do you think you are? Do you not know the rules

of the academy?” coldly said one of the men blocking the way.

The man in blue clothes glanced at him and said: “Please bring out someone who knows how to speak.”

“What do you want? Why did you come to my academy?” coldly said a man in black robes at that moment. He was slowly walking towards the man in blue clothes.

“I want you to hand over some people to us.” said the man in blue clothes indifferently.

“Hand over some people?” said the man in black robes with a cold smile on his face and then added: “Not only did you break the rules of my academy, but you also dare come and ask me to hand over some of my students?”

The man in blue clothes smiled coldly. He raised his hand and at that moment, the palm of his hand started emitting a radiant light.

When the man in black robes saw the light within the middle aged man’s palm, his expression drastically changed.

“You say that outsiders cannot come into the territory of the Celestial Academy but then I would like to ask you something, how can you allow your members to visit my Prisoner Arena and then allow them to kill some of my staff members while kidnapping two of my slaves? Can you explain this to me?” said the man in blue clothes. His voice sounded extremely strict and it was clear how

powerful he was from his tone. Force was constantly emerging from his body.

“If you don’t hand over those who caused the trouble as well as my two slaves, I will get very angry.”

The man in black robes looked terribly annoyed when he heard what the man had said. He was a teacher at the academy which was an extremely high status, but he knew that he couldn’t keep the man in blue clothes under control. Those who were with him would also be hard to defeat.

“Who caused the trouble?” asked the man wearing the black robes.

“Some of your military students, Lin Feng, Wen Ao Xue...”

“Wen Ao Xue?!” the man in black robes was stupefied. The man in blue clothes added: “The one mainly responsible for the whole thing is Lin Feng though. You don’t need to hand over Wen Ao Xue... but Lin Feng and my two slaves, you must hand them over to me this instant.” said the man in blue clothes in an extremely powerful voice while showing lenience towards Wen Ao Xue.

The middle aged man in blue clothes had a very high status and he knew that he couldn’t insist on punishing Wen Ao Xue. The academy would never hand him over.

“Go inside, tell Lin Feng and the two slaves to come out here.”

said the man in black robes to two other people who were standing at his side.

The man in blue clothes seemed satisfied. The one who was standing behind him wearing a golden mask had an incredibly evil light flash through his eyes.

Lin Feng was meditating in his room and suddenly, the door emitted a loud noise which made him open his eyes.

“Lin Feng, come out.” shouted a voice. Lin Feng was surprised. That person was so rude. The academy had rules, nobody was able to enter in the living quarters of a student without his permission.

But at that moment, somebody opened his door and told him to come out. Not only was that a violation of the rules but it was also a humiliation.

Lin Feng stood up and stretched. He felt better but he hadn't entirely recovered from his injuries.

Lin Feng looked at the guy who had called him. He was also a student of the academy.

“So, you are Lin Feng?” said the one who had come inside with an indifferent tone.

“What's wrong?” asked Lin Feng while frowning.

“What a moron. He thinks that he can act recklessly because he is Wen Ao Xue’s friend. He first provoked Hei Mo and then went to the Prisoner Arena and caused trouble.” Thought the students.

The first time when Lin Feng had provoked Hei Mo, Wen Ao Xue was with him... he had then caused trouble at the Prisoner Arena with Wen Ao Xue, so they thought that Lin Feng acted this way only because he thought that Wen Ao Xue could indefinitely protect him. They thought that he was like a dog using his master’s power to cause trouble.

“Now, bring the two slaves you kidnapped from the Prisoner Arena. Some people have come to see you.” said the student. When he finished talking, he turned around and started leaving.

“Wait, wait!” said Lin Feng. The student immediately stopped and asked: “What’s wrong?”

Lin Feng coldly said: “Didn’t you forget something?”

The student replied: “Forgot what?” He then shrugged and said: “No, I haven’t forgot anything.”

“You did.” said Lin Feng firmly.

The student seemed angry and said: “Are you playing around with me?”

“I don’t have time to joke. You rushed into my room and behaved in a rude way, you could at least make an apology.” said Lin Feng while smiling coldly.

“Apologize?” said the student who smiled as if he found the situation funny. He then ignored Lin Feng, turned around and started leaving.

At that moment, a freezing-cold Qi crashed into his body and oppressed him. He was surprised and stopped moving.

He turned around and saw Lin Feng who was slowly walking towards him. Lin Feng’s body was releasing a piercingly cold Qi.

“What are you doing?” Said the student with a shocked expression.

“You’re only this strong and act with such disrespect. I don’t like that impolite behaviour.” said Lin Feng while continuing to walk forward. The Qi released from his body was getting more and more intense.

The student was stupefied and was getting more frightened. He couldn’t compete with Lin Feng in terms of strength.

“I came in the name of the teacher. Just come with me.” said the student.

“Of course I will come with you but you violated the rules of the

academy and acted rude to me while inside my home. If that's how you planned to convince me to come with you then you have failed. Do you think disrespecting me will make me obediently come with you? Wouldn't all the others laugh at me for allowing you to act as you please in my home?" when saying these words, an even colder Qi was released from Lin Feng's body. Everything around him had started freezing.

The student was frightened. He only saw Lin Feng raise his fist and saw a ball of frost appearing around it. He then punched towards the student.

"OHH!" shouted the student. He immediately raised his fist and punched towards Lin Feng. The Qi of his attack emitted a rumbling noise in the air as it crashed through the atmosphere. When his fist and Lin Feng's fist collided, the student suddenly felt an acute pain within his hand.

"Get out now." said Lin Feng while kicking him with incredible force. At that moment, the student was sent tumbling outside and his body was covered by a layer of ice.

"Piece of trash of the third Ling Qi layer... acting so arrogant when in my living quarters." shouted Lin Feng. He then said: "wait for me patiently outside. If you enter my living quarters again then I'll cripple your cultivation."

Chapter 148: The Furious Teacher

The student remained motionless. At that moment, he felt extremely ashamed especially the people who were passing outside Lin Feng's living quarters at the time had seen him being humiliated.

He had thought that he could behave rudely because the teacher had sent him but in the end he was humiliated and forced to wait outside.

Lin Feng already knew that the student had come because of the issue at the Prisoner Arena.

Lin Feng knew that sooner or later, the people from the Prisoner Arena would come to look for him.

Lin Feng went back into his room and put on his chang pao and then he moved towards the door.

The noise of a door being opened spread to Lin Feng's ears.

"Wait, wait." said a cold and indifferent voice. It was Meng Qing who had opened the door.

"What's wrong?" said Lin Feng while turning around. Meng Qing had already put on her fine veil which was covering her face. She was slowly walking towards him.

“I should always be with you when you go outside.” said Meng Qing which made Lin Feng smile wryly but he had a warmth fill his heart.

“Alright.” said Lin Feng while nodding. She was worried about his safety but she would never say it.

They both left the living quarters and closed the door behind them.

The student looked at Lin Feng and Meng Qing and said: “what about the two slaves?”

“Bring us outside.” said Lin Feng with such a strict tone that the student didn’t dare say anything back.

On the way, everybody was pointing at the student while laughing which made him feel more and more ashamed.

At that moment, there was a multitude of people who had gathered outside of the palace. The middle aged man in blue clothes was standing before a group of people while looking majestic.

“He came! Lin Feng came!”

At that moment, the crowd saw Lin Feng slowly come out from inside the palace.

Next to Lin Feng was a gorgeous young girl. Even though she looked graceful, delicate and innocent, a strange Qi was emerging from her beautiful body.

However, two people were missing. The two slaves weren't there at all.

The teacher in black robes looked at the student he had sent to look for Lin Feng and asked him: "What's going on?"

The student scratched his head and didn't dare to reply.

"Piece of trash. Not capable of doing a simple thing." said the teacher in black robes. He then looked at Lin Feng and asked: "Did you cause trouble at the Prisoner Arena and then kidnap two slaves and bring them into the academy?"

"I did cause trouble at the Prisoner Arena but I didn't kidnap two slaves, I only brought back my two friends." said Lin Feng while looking at the teacher in black robes. Only because he had said the word "slave", Lin Feng felt disgusted.

"Slaves are slaves! And they are your friends?! .. How am I supposed to allow slaves to enter into the academy?" said the teacher in black clothes coldly not caring about Lin Feng's face.

"Well then, teacher, I would like to ask you about what makes a person a slave? What does it mean to be a slave?"

“A slave is someone who had been marked as someone’s property. Because they are marked they are forever a slave.” replied the teacher.

“Well then, teacher, I have another question for you. There is a slave in front of you now, how come you have let him into the academy?” said Lin Feng coldly.

“Huh?” The crowd was surprised. Lin Feng was really audacious to talk that way to the teacher.

The teacher in black robes was perplexed and asked Lin Feng: “Where do you see a slave?!”

“Hm.” Lin Feng smiled and pointed at the golden masked person standing behind the man in blue clothes. He then said: “Make him take off his mask and you will find a slave.”

The golden masked young man was Bai Ze. How could Lin Feng not recognize him?

“I see that this is how the Celestial Academy works, people are not respected and students are not taught discipline.” said the man in blue clothes.

The teacher in black robes suddenly had an ice cold expression on his face. How could Lin Feng make him lose face?

“I told you to bring out the two slaves, did you not hear me?” said the teacher in black robes while fixedly staring at Lin Feng. A strong Qi was emerging from his body. He looked extremely strict.

Lin Feng was surprised and then smiled: “Having such teachers is a disgrace for the Celestial Academy. These people come and cause trouble yet the only people you blame are your own students. You make all the members of the academy, lose face. If you dare to try and punish me, it will affect the reputation of our academy... and it will mean that you are nothing more than the Bai Clans little dog.” said Lin Feng coldly.

“PSSSSHHHHH....” a strong Qi emerged from the teacher in black robes. The entire atmosphere was filled with a deadly Qi. How could Lin Feng dare to humiliate him in front of so many people? Did he want to die?

“Do you want to die?!” furiously shouted the teacher.

“Die? I don’t want to die this young.” replied Lin Feng coldly. He immediately took out a card from his pocket. Everybody was surprised.

“I don’t have to respect the rules of the Celestial Academy because on the registration day when I came here, I already met a teacher who was a real bastard, but when I met the vice-principal, he was nice enough to invite me to enjoy all the benefits of the academy without any obligations. He also said that I could bring anyone to the academy. On that day, I wouldn’t have thought that I would meet such a crappy teacher so soon. It is rare to find someone who would act like the little lap dog for outsiders. You are

a great humiliation for the Celestial Academy and all of its members.” said Lin Feng coldly.

The whole crowd was stupefied. The vice-principal himself had invited Lin Feng to join the academy without having any obligations. No wonder he brought people in without any restrictions.

The teacher in black robes was astonished. That card was really a privilege card delivered by the vice-principal himself.

“He just humiliated me, how can I regain my face now? Nobody will ever respect me again.” thought the teacher in black robes. The expression in his eyes was incredibly sharp.

“It is the first time that I have heard that someone can obtain a privilege card without being a student at the academy.” said teacher.

He then shouted: “How audacious, Lin Feng. You dared steal that card from the vice-principal! Today, I will deliver your punishment on behalf of the vice-principal.”

“Steal??” Lin Feng was astonished. He even saw that the crowd was nodding showing that they believed him. Lin Feng was speechless.

“Are you a moron? Do you know how strong the vice-principal is, how could I even steal that card from him?” Lin Feng was sneering

at the teacher. The teacher seemed determined to harass Lin Feng in anyway possible.

“You’re good at manipulating people but it will not work with me. If you think that you get away that easily then keep dreaming.” said the teacher strictly.

Strong force and Qi was emerging from his body and he rushed straight towards Lin Feng. He had moved rapidly because he couldn’t let Lin Feng continue to speak. It was unbearable for him and every sentence was making him lose face.

Lin Feng was in grave danger. He had made the teacher furious from disrespecting him.

At that moment, Lin Feng looked indifferent. Behind him, a graceful silhouette immediately moved in front of him.

Chapter 149: Flowing Blood

When the crowd saw Meng Qing, they were all stunned.

The teacher in black robes laughed. More Qi was released from his body. A resplendent bright and dazzling light flashed around his body.

“Stop.” shouted a voice in the distance. Everybody stopped moving. That voice deeply penetrated into people’s hearts to the extent that it made their souls shake.

The teacher in black robes had also stopped moving. He turned around and saw a silhouette come towards them.

“Vice-principal.” the vice-principal had personally come, how surprising!

“Vice-Principal Long.” said the teacher in black robes respectfully, he was no longer acting rudely.

“Get back.” shouted the vice-principal towards the teacher. The teacher in black robes looked incredibly embarrassed and the whole crowd was stunned.

In view of the vice-principal’s behaviour towards the teacher, Lin Feng must have really been personally invited by the the vice-principal.

“Yes, vice-principal.” said the teacher in black robes while stepping backwards. He looked extremely embarrassed at his situation.

Vice-principal Long turned around and looked at Lin Feng. He warmly smiled and said: “I will solve this problem myself. You can go back now.”

“Go back?!” The crowd was dumbstruck! Against all expectations, the vice-principal really did care about Lin Feng. Lin Feng had caused a problem and the vice-principal went to solve them himself. Everybody was convinced, at that moment, that the man in blue clothes wouldn’t dare to touch Lin Feng.

The man in blue clothes frowned. His heart was pounding. He was wondering what Lin Feng’s background really was for the vice-principal to attach so much importance to him. The vice-principal was humiliating everybody to protect Lin Feng. Even though the man in blue clothes didn’t have a status as high as that of the vice-principal, had the vice-principal not thought of all the people who were accompanying him?

Nobody understood why the vice-principal was acting this way towards Lin Feng.

Lin Feng was also unsure of why he was receiving such treatment. He didn’t understand why the vice-principal was always so kind to him. He didn’t know anyone who belonged to the Imperial Clan or any other prestigious clans. He was lost. Although in the future he would eventually come to understand why the vice-principal was helping him.

“Vice-principal, I want to say something but I don’t know if I should.” said Lin Feng while shaking his head.

“Tell me.” said the vice-principal.

“In the academy, there are some great people but there are also horrible people who drag the rest of us down with them. Those people don’t deserve to be teachers.” said Lin Feng indifferently. His words were sharp and poignant. He was looking at the teacher in black robes while talking.

“Vice-principal, I will assume the responsibility for what I have done at the Prisoner Arena. I don’t need anyone to help me.” said Lin Feng and continued: “If anyone dares to offend me again in the future then I will not hesitate to take actions myself.”

“That guy... How aggressive! But now it’s understandable why he dares talk to the teacher that way.”

“What a big mouth.”

The crowd was making various comments about Lin Feng’s behaviour. Even the vice-principal was surprised. Lin Feng was acting very strangely.

Lin Feng didn’t know what all these people thought. He turned around and said to the man in blue clothes: “You want me, right?”

“Indeed.” said the man in blue clothes while nodding.

“Since you want me and I am standing right here, what are you waiting for?” said Lin Feng in an indifferent tone. The crowd was wondering what Lin Feng meant.

The man in blue clothes saw that Lin Feng was extremely confident. He had an evil smile on his face. Lin Feng could have left just like the vice-principal had told him but he didn't and instead chose to confront the people who came. The man in blue clothes would not have had the power to do anything if Lin Feng had listened to the vice-principal and left. By staying here and challenging them, he definitely wanted to die.

“Take him.” said the man in blue clothes. At that moment, two people rushed out of the group and started moving towards Lin Feng while releasing a heavy Qi.

When he saw these two people approaching him, Lin Feng didn't move. He still looked calm and serene.

Then, Meng Qing who was standing in front of Lin Feng suddenly released an extremely cold Qi which moved straight towards these two people. They had the feeling that their spinal cord had frozen in place.

Meng Qing raised her hand and released a terrifying cold force. Their hands immediately froze solid. Very quickly, the ice started to spread all over their body and all of a sudden, they were completely frozen in ice and absolutely unable to move.

“How strong.” said the crowd stupefied. No wonder that that girl had dared obstruct the way to Lin Feng. She was extremely powerful.

“Xuan Qi layer.”

The pupils of Vice-Principal Long and the man in blue clothes shrank. Lin Feng had never talked about his friends, and an extremely beautiful girl who didn't look very strong was actually this amazing.

What she had done a moment before was only possible for someone of the Xuan Qi layer.

The teacher in the black robes was dumbstruck. What if he had been successful in attacking Lin Feng a moment before?

No wonder Lin Feng was so aggressive. Someone of the Xuan Qi layer was there to protect him at all times. How scary!

The crowd was trying to understand the situation. The vice-principal probably liked Lin Feng for two reasons, because he was strong and because he had a high status. It was not a secret that Lin Feng was extremely talented and powerful, otherwise how could he have such beautiful female friends?

“From the day I spent at The Prisoner Arena, I swore to myself that if I ever saw a member of the Bai Clan again then they would

die.” said Lin Feng with an extremely cold tone.

The Bai Clan members were astonished. Meng Qing, however had understood what Lin Feng meant. Her beautiful silhouette suddenly transformed into a white lotus flower and she threw herself towards the crowd.

The sky above as well as the ground below all seemed to completely freeze. All the members of the Bai Clan felt extreme cold. They were all covered with layers of ice.

Meng Qing slightly moved her hand and suddenly, every member of the Bai Clan was pierced to the bone with the terrifying coldness.

If these people had been at the Qi layer stage, that would have explained why they were so affected by Meng Qing’s attack but even some people of the Ling Qi layer were feeling the cold pierce into them. How was that possible?

At that moment, the man in blue clothes couldn’t stand it anymore and felt like he had to get involved. A hurricane-like attack emerged from his body and moved straight towards Meng Qing.

Meng Qing, looking calm and just raised her hand which released ice that moved straight towards the blue clothed man’s attack.

“BOOOOOM!.”

An extreme coldness spread throughout the atmosphere. Suddenly, two huge blocks of ice which looked like huge diamonds shot from Meng Qing's hand.

At that moment, Lin Feng grabbed onto his sword and in an instant, he arrived in front of all the Bai Clan members who were frozen in place.

“Deadly sword.”

Lin Feng's' deadly sword started to flash through the atmosphere over and over again.

Blood sprayed everywhere and the atmosphere had become incredibly bloody. He had already killed a large number of people with his sword.

Just as Lin Feng had said, if he ever saw any Bai Clan members then they would have to die.

Everybody was stupefied by Lin Feng's strength. These people had come to capture Lin Feng and in the end, nothing was happening the way they had expected. Lin Feng was calm and unperturbed... as he was killing all the members of the Bai Clan.

With each stroke of his sword more blood was filling the atmosphere and another member of the Bai Clan would fall dead onto the floor.

Blood was endlessly flowing from Lin Feng's sword. This is what happened when Lin Feng was angered.

Chapter 150: Ice Reigns Over The World

At that moment, the man in blue clothes and Meng Qing were in a direct confrontation. The crowd was astonished to see that Meng Qing was much stronger than him.

Even though Meng Qing's style looked very simple, each time her graceful and agile body moved, she would unleash an extremely powerful attack. Her Qi was so cold that it could directly freeze the man in blue. Even though he had a hurricane spirit and was extremely quick, he couldn't avoid Meng Qing's attacks and was forced to fight with her directly.

“What a strong girl. Who is she? Why is she with Lin Feng?” The crowd was amazed. That beautiful girl was remarkably strong.

The man in blue clothes didn't look so majestic anymore. He had a hideous and evil expression on his face. He was furious.

“Hurricane Blade!” shouted the man in blue clothes. His entire body transformed into a hurricane that was actually like a sharp blade lacerating the air as it rushed towards Meng Qing. An incredibly strong and thick Qi was emerging from the hurricane.

“What a powerful martial skill.” thought the crowd. They were not near him but could still feel the Qi within his hurricane attack.

The large blade-like hurricane was rushing towards Lin Feng and Meng Qing at full speed.

“Hmph.” groaned Meng Qing, this was the first time she had made any noise. Her expression was ice-cold. Her body started to release an incredibly cold Qi.

“Heart of ice, freezing both heaven and earth. Ice reigns over the world.” Said Meng Qing while slowly walking towards the man in blue. Her body looked lithe and graceful. A layer of ice appeared around her body and a sharp cold invaded the entire atmosphere. Everything started to instantly freeze around Meng Qing.

The hurricane blade attack froze completely in mid air. The body of the man in blue clothes was progressively freezing inside the hurricane. He was frozen into a huge block of ice.

Every single thing within the atmosphere was frozen solid when suddenly, the block of ice started emitting small cracking noises.

“Krrrrrrr....”

“Psshhh...” Suddenly, the man in blue clothes who was trapped inside the huge block of ice transformed into a hurricane then smashed through the ice and flew into the distance at full speed.

He was looking back at Meng Qing with a hideously evil expression in his eyes. His face was covered completely with frost.

Meng Qing’s attack had been much too powerful. He would have died if he had stayed inside that block of ice for much longer.

The man in blue clothes would have never thought that such a beautiful young girl could also be so terrifyingly powerful. How frightening!

But Meng Qing ignored him and immediately moved her hand again. This time, she carried out an attack on the Bai Clan members. The atmosphere around them started to grow colder and colder.

Only Lin Feng didn't feel cold at all while stood amongst the group of Bai Clan members.

“Deadly sword.” Lin Feng took another step and a black fog emerged from his sword. Lin Feng once again started killing the members of the Bai Clan. At that moment, red blood and white frost started to mix together in the atmosphere.

The middle aged man in blue clothes was enraged when he saw Lin Feng killing the members of the Bai Clan so mercilessly but because of Meng Qing's strength, he didn't dare to move closer to them.

She was a really terrifying existence.

Lin Feng's sword didn't stop glowing in the middle of that bloodbath as he continued to cut down Bai Clan members one after the other. Very quickly, all the members of the Bai Clan were lying dead on the ground. Only one person was remaining within the group.

He was wearing a golden mask and he was shaking from head to toe. This person was obviously Bai Ze.

Under his golden mask, his eyes didn't express anything like hatred or cruelty anymore, the only thing that was remaining inside his eyes was pure fear.

All of the strong cultivators that joined him from the Bai Clan were now lying dead at his feet in a pool of their own blood and the man in blue clothes could do nothing but watch them get slaughtered one by one before his eyes.

Lin Feng raised his long sword. Blood was dripping endlessly from the tip of his sword as he slowly walked towards Bai Ze.

At that moment, Bai Ze fell down onto his knees. His legs were shaking too much from fear. He hated Lin Feng from the bottom of his heart. He knew that he was about to die.

“Last time, I didn't kill you, haven't I already shown you enough mercy?” said Lin Feng indifferently.

Lin Feng's bloody sword was moving closer and closer to Bai Ze who was shaking his head as if he was trying to wake himself from this nightmare. He was hastily crawling backwards while looking at Lin Feng.

“Last time, you said that you would make me a slave. You have

not stopped attempting to take my life and continued to provoke me to no end. Now that you are in front of me, why don't you try to kill me, like always?" continued Lin Feng.

"There are some paths on which you shouldn't walk. You have chosen the path to the afterlife, so I will help you achieve your aim." His sword glowed once again and Bai Ze's blood sprayed into the air.

Bai Ze fell heavily onto the ground. He was no longer in the world of the living.

Lin Feng raised his head and looked at the middle aged man in blue clothes who was still in the distance. He then said coldly: "If you do not have the courage to come over here then get lost. There is no need to stay here and lose face."

"You will regret everything that you have done today!" said the man in blue clothes with an evil glare.

"No need to keep saying idle threats. You came here today to kill me, so I killed all of the people that came to take my life. Next time, you will come back with even more people to try to kill me and then what? Even more people will be laying dead on the floor beneath my feet." said Lin Feng with an indifferent tone.

He then continued: "If you wanted to keep your face then you should have left earlier. You only made things worse by staying here. You have humiliated yourself. Everybody saw that you are incredibly foolish. Remember each of my words as I say them to

you now, I will kill every single member of the Bai Clan that stands before me without mercy. The Bai Clan has no future, I will annihilate the entire Bai Clan.”

Lin Feng’s words stupefied the crowd. He was completely ruthless. He was planning to kill every Bai Clan member until the total annihilation of the clan.

Nobody had doubts when it came to what Lin Feng had just said. He had just proved it to everyone with his actions. There was a mass of bodies lying beneath his feet in a pool of blood which belonged to members of the Bai Clan.

Offending Lin Feng resulted in death, what a pity for those who offended him!

“I will remember your words.” said the middle aged man in blue clothes while looking evil. He slowly turned around and started walking away.

He suddenly transformed into a hurricane, turned around and threw himself towards Lin Feng at full speed. He was extremely quick!

Lin Feng was surprised. He could already feel the man’s Qi on his body.

Lin Feng tried to dodge but he could not avoid being wounded. Blood was flowing down Lin Feng’s face.

“I will definitely kill you at some point!” said the man in blue clothes and then turned around and started leaving. The crowd didn’t realize what was happening.

“You want to die!!!” shouted a cold and furious voice. It seemed like time had stopped. It was Meng Qing. An extremely cold Qi emerged from her body and she immediately disappeared from everybody’s view.

At that moment, the man in blue clothes who was leaving suddenly stopped. He looked terrified. An extremely cold Qi had suddenly appeared next to him. He then moved again at full speed in an attempt to escape. The only thing left in his mind was to run away.

“Heart of Ice.” White ice shot from Meng Qing’s body and moved straight towards the man in blue clothes. He suddenly had the feeling his internal organs were starting to freeze.

“Cough!”

Blood started to flow from his mouth but it was frozen solid... His internal organs had taken a large amount of damage. He couldn’t defeat her, so all he could do was escape. He just wanted to escape with his life. This girl was much too powerful.

Chapter 151: Meditation

Meng Qing jumped back through the air and landed next to Lin Feng. She looked like nothing had just happened.

The entire crowd was gasping in astonishment. They couldn't believe what they had just seen with their own eyes. They couldn't believe that such a beautiful and innocent looking girl could be so strong and had injured the evil looking man in blue clothes.

The middle aged man in blue clothes was ridiculous. He had come to capture Lin Feng and he had ended up being scared to death by Meng Qing yet still attempted to show off until the end.

“Are you alright?” asked Meng Qing to Lin Feng with an indifferent tone. Lin Feng smiled wryly. He wished she could sound more tender and affectionate but it seemed like that was impossible for her. Even if she showed him that she was worried about him, her tone was always indifferent.

“I'm alright. Just a small scratch.” said Lin Feng while shaking his head and smiling at Meng Qing.

The middle aged man in blue clothes had almost killed Lin Feng. Fortunately, Lin Feng had reacted quickly enough to avoid the strike being fatal.

“I'm quite strong now but I'm still much weaker than a cultivator of the Xuan Qi layer. There is a colossal gap between us.” thought Lin Feng. He wished he could rapidly become stronger as

he knew how weak he currently compared to others.

Meng Qing looked at Lin Feng's wound but said nothing. She just went behind him once again.

"Let's go back." said Lin Feng and then looked at the vice-principal and said: "Vice-principal, we're off."

"Alright." said the vice-principal while smiling warmly. Deep in his heart, he was also amazed by Meng Qing's strength.

That divine-looking girl was strong, extremely strong.

Besides, the vice-principal had the impression that Meng Qing hadn't used all of her strength and was still hiding her true power.

Lin Feng glanced at the crowd and said coldly: "Remember everything that happened here today. If you provoke me, don't blame me for being impolite." when he finished talking, Lin Feng started walking back to the palace.

The crowd was stupefied. They suddenly thought of Hei Mo. They thought that Hei Mo had been unable to touch Lin Feng because Wen Ao Xue had protected him when he came to the military students palace.

The crowd was stupefied because they thought that Lin Feng had only acted the way he did because Wen Ao Xue was there. Hei Mo also underestimated Lin Feng's actual strength. At that moment

though, the crowd would never doubt about Lin Feng's true strength again. He had just mercilessly cut down multiple people of the Ling Qi layer, only requiring a single strike. Lin Feng also had another friend, Meng Qing, who was at the Xuan Qi layer, even Hei Mo would need to be careful when provoking her.

When the crowd thought of Lin Feng's challenge to Hei Mo, they couldn't help but be excited. They were really looking forward to watching the battle. Lin Feng had just shown some of his strength, the crowd couldn't wait to see more.

Even though Meng Qing was definitely the one who had gained the most notoriety, nobody was going to forget Lin Feng's name either. He was definitely incredibly powerful.

Hei Mo's strength, Lin Feng's potential, Hei Mo's background, Meng Qing's incredible strength... How would the confrontation between them end?

Lin Feng obviously wasn't considering what the crowd was thinking. At that moment, Lin Feng wanted to go to the cultivation tower when a sound made him stop.

"Zither!" it was a beautiful melody. Lin Feng could hear someone playing the zither and it was very pleasant to his ears.

"Is it him?" thought Lin Feng who remembered the teacher on the day when he sat the exam to become a military apprentice. The friendly teacher had played the zither for their exam. Lin Feng liked him a lot. The teacher had allowed him to sit the exam twice

and admitted that he was wrong to fail him.

The melody that was being played at that moment reminded Lin Feng of the melody the teacher had played, that's why he was the first person he had thought of.

"What's wrong?" asked Meng Qing when she saw that Lin Feng had suddenly stopped walking.

"Listen to the melody of the zither." whispered Lin Feng.

Meng Qing frowned and made a strange face before asking: "Listen to what?"

"The zither." replied Lin Feng.

"Zither?" asked Meng Qing. She then shook her head and said: "I can't hear it."

"Huh?" Lin Feng was dumbstruck. He was unable to be the victim of a hallucination so he could not be wrong. It had to be a zither playing.

Besides, Meng Qing was much stronger than Lin Feng, how could she not hear it?

There was only one explanation, that melody was directed at Lin Feng and he was the only one to hear it.

“Meng Qing, you can go back. I’m going out for a short while.” said Lin Feng who had just realized he might be the only one who can hear the melody. However, Meng Qing immediately shook her head and said without the slightest hesitation: “I’m coming with you.”

Lin Feng was stupefied when he heard her. He then slightly nodded and said: “Alright, let’s go together.”

While walking, Lin Feng listened to the uninterrupted melody.

After a short while, the melody started becoming clearer and clearer.

At that moment, they arrived in a magnificent courtyard. There was an ancient pavilion such as the ones they built in ancient China. The grass was green and there were small ponds and streams inside.

Suddenly, magnificent scenery had appeared in front of them.

There was a forest of peach trees in blossom. The flowers and leaves were fluttering in the wind and a sweet fragrance invaded Lin Feng and Meng Qing’s nose.

“What a wonderful place. I would have never thought that there was such a place within the academy.” said Lin Feng while gasping in amazement. The palaces were imposing and magnificent but

were totally different from this scenery.

The other buildings made you want to become strong and practice to become stronger but this place just made you want to sit down, smell the peach flowers in blossom and relax.

“How beautiful.” said Meng Qing gasping in amazement as well. She had a peculiar expression on her face.

While walking amongst the peach trees, an ancient pavilion appeared in front of Meng Qing and Lin Feng. There were some tables and chairs made of stone inside.

There was someone sitting inside and he was playing the zither, both hands floating over the strings of the instrument as fluently as a flowing river. Even though Lin Feng and Meng Qing had arrived in front of him, he remained concentrated and kept playing, as if the ten thousand things of creation had nothing to do with him.

That was precisely the teacher who had been in charge of the exam for the military applicants.

Meng Qing suddenly shook her head which surprised Lin Feng.

Lin Feng immediately understood what Meng Qing meant. Even though they had arrived in front of him, she still couldn't hear the music at all. Lin Feng was probably right about the fact that he was the only one who could hear it.

“What a terrific ability...” thought Lin Feng. He had been able to hear the music from very far away and besides he was the only one who could hear it.

“Cultivation, practice, mental state, Qi layers... where water flows, a canal is formed.” said the teacher in a deep and mystical way to Lin Feng and Meng Qing. Lin Feng was surprised.

“Compassion and kind heartedness for those in need as well as cold-bloodedness to kill those who are evil, those are the two highest achievements of a cultivator. It enables a cultivator to practice faster and more efficiently. Besides, those who show mercy and are kind hearted will not necessarily kill someone. Everything depends on your state of mind, that’s all.”

“The deadly Qi within your body is already thick but your state of mind is the wrong one. Even if you already rapidly improve your strength like this, because you tend forget your original intentions, it prevents you from understanding your true potential.” These few words as well as the unceasing melody of the zither all penetrated into Lin Feng’s eardrums. Lin Feng felt extremely relaxed and serene.

If Lin Feng’s state of mind wasn’t the correct mindset then he would never be able to mature.

Lin Feng understood what the teacher meant and enlightenment flashed through his eyes.

“You need to meditate more.” said the teacher which made Lin Feng’s heart jump as if he just understood something.

Chapter 152: The Journey

“Meditation!” whispered Lin Feng.

What the teacher meant is that Lin Feng seemed mature because he had high natural abilities but it was also possible for him to fully unlock these natural abilities.

Kind-hearted people have high natural abilities.

“That’s right, what I do doesn’t always correspond with my true state of mind.” thought Lin Feng. After everything that had happened to him, the pressure from society and all these stupid people who constantly provoked him, it was hard for Lin Feng to find the time to meditate so he could contemplate spiritual problems.

Lin Feng didn’t know how to react in certain situations. For example, when Duan Tian Lang destroyed the Yun Hai Sect, he had captured Han Man and Po Jun then sold them to the Bai Clan who then made them into slaves. How could Lin Feng not kill all the members of the Bai Clan? He hated them from the bottom of his heart and hated how they had done that to millions of others. He knew that it was wrong but he couldn’t help it. He had to kill them... because those people would repeat their actions on others if they continued to live.

Nobody could escape from the seven human emotions.

The strongest cultivators always acted on their ideals with firm

convictions.

“Teacher, may I ask you to teach me how to play the zither?” asked Lin Feng very politely.

“Meditate!” said the teacher indifferently and then continued: “Your thoughts and behavior are not in perfect harmony. You need to meditate more often. You need to forget about the chaos that reigns in our world. You need to wash off the dust you have accumulated in your heart over the years. Don’t let the chaos of the world to take control of your pure heart and prevent you from becoming stronger.”

“Meditate, cleanse my heart...” repeated Lin Feng in a low voice. As before, the music of the zither penetrated deeply into Lin Feng’s heart. Lin Feng sat down in the middle of the peach trees and started meditating. He slowly closed his eyes.

The teacher, as before, wasn’t raising his head and continued playing the zither.

When Meng Qing saw that Lin Feng was meditating, she moved behind him and continued to enjoy the view. She looked at the peach trees in blossom with pure admiration. She had never seen peach trees in blossom in her life because there weren’t any within the Black Wind Mountain.

The music was extremely peaceful and auspicious. It enabled people to forget everything and let the music invade deep into their hearts.

In Lin Feng's mind, different images appeared, the moment when he first arrived in the Continent of the Nine Clouds until the moment when he was disowned by the Lin Clan and when he had to leave Yangzhou City. When he had returned to the Yun Hai Sect, Duan Tian Lang annihilated the Yun Hai Sect. Then, he recalled the moment when he had left for Duan Ren City. All of these images were still very clear in his mind.

But in Lin Feng's mind, there was no hate and no pain. It was as if he was another person who was observing all these things from the outside. He was calmly looking at all these moments in his mind. His heart was filled by the beautiful melody of the zither and was very peaceful.

The music was probably suited for meditation. Even his spirit didn't represent as a hindrance to him benefitting from the positive effects of the music because it wasn't harmful to him. It was helping him to wash away all of the negativity and hatred that had gathered in his heart.

Lin Feng was feeling so relaxed that he progressively fell asleep.

The leaves of the peach trees were still fluttering in the wind. After some time, Lin Feng slowly opened his eyes. When he opened his eyes, he immediately saw the teacher who was still calmly playing the zither.

Meng Qing was still looking as pure and innocent as ever, she was still standing there motionless. She almost looked like a statue

which had been there since the beginning of time.

Lin Feng slowly got up. At that moment, he looked surprised and had a strange expression on his face.

“Fifth.... Ling Qi layer?” Lin Feng checked his cultivation level. That’s right, he had suddenly broken through to the fifth Ling Qi layer.

“Meditation, the result is amazing.” thought Lin Feng. He had a big smile on his face. Breaking through to the different Ling Qi layers wasn’t easy... but Lin Feng had broken through to the fourth Ling Qi layer a short time before and was on the precipice of breaking through to the fifth, but was unable to. Surprisingly he had broken through to the next Ling Qi layer during meditation.

“Thank you, teacher.” Lin Feng had been able to break through to the fifth Ling Qi layer thanks to the help from the teacher so he was feeling very grateful.

The teacher finally stopped playing. He raised his head and looked at Lin Feng with a soft and tender expression.

“No need to thank me. You broke through to the fifth Ling Qi layer relying on your own power. The pure Qi in your body was already enough. You had already reached the peak of the fourth Ling Qi layer which is why you managed to break through to the fifth Ling Qi layer so quickly. I just helped you clean the negativity which was holding you back.” said the teacher while smiling. His tone really showed how much he appreciated Lin Feng, he treated

Lin Feng like his own son. Even though the teacher's strength and power was probably immense, he had never been arrogant like the other teachers Lin Feng had encountered in the past.

“If you hadn't played the music then I wouldn't have come here. If you hadn't played the music to help me then I wouldn't have broken through to the next Ling Qi layer. Teacher, thank you so much.” said Lin Feng honestly and wholeheartedly while smiling.

The teacher slightly nodded then smiled and said: “Alright, I am happy that I could help.”

Lin Feng had a warm smile on his face and said: “Teacher, last time, you said that you would teach me how to play the zither, can you teach me now?”

The teacher looked at Lin Feng and said: “Are you not afraid of wasting your cultivation time? Shouldn't you be improving your cultivation level right now?”

“Improving my state of mind is part of cultivation training.” said Lin Feng while smiling. The teacher was pleasantly surprised and was nodding his head with a smile.

“Since you want to learn how to play the zither, I will teach you.” replied the teacher. “Whenever you have time, feel free to come here and I will teach you. Today, I just want you to listen. You must listen to others first before you can learn how to play for yourself.”

“Alright.” said Lin Feng. Listening to the zither helped him improve his cultivation and it was pleasant to listen to, there was no reason to refuse.

The teacher once again started playing the zither. Lin Feng and Meng Qing sat down next to each other under a peach tree and listened to him play.

.....

In Lin Feng’s room, a few people had gathered. Lin Feng, Liu Fei, Han Man and Po Jun.

Lin Feng looked at Han Man and Po Jun and said: “Are you guys sure?”

“Yes, Lin Feng, big brother, I am sure.” said Han Man while nodding his head. He was wearing a golden mask to cover the slave mark on his face.

These slave marks that were carved into their faces would most likely be there forever... but if they managed to reach a higher cultivation level then they would possibly be able to remove them. This is why Han Man and Po Jun were eager to become stronger as quickly as possible. Who could live with the shame of having such a mark on their face forever?

“Lin Feng, big brother, I’m sure too.” said Po Jun. They were both older than Lin Feng but they still called him “big brother” as a

sign of respect. Lin Feng wasn't going to contradict them either. They were both two years older than him, it wasn't that large of a gap. It would be very different if they were much older than him.

"Alright, I will not try to prevent you from doing It." said Lin Feng while looking solemn and nodding. He then looked at Liu Fei and said: "Fei Fei, sorry for bothering you, could you write the letter and give it to them please?"

Liu Fei nodded, took out a pen and immediately started writing.

"Han Man, Po Jun, what weapons do you use?" asked Lin Feng.

"I don't need weapons. The earth is my weapon." said Han Man while shaking his head.

Po Jun didn't reply for a few seconds and then said: "I use a spear."

"Alright." said Lin Feng while nodding. Lin Feng stretched his hand, a light flashed and suddenly a pitch-black spear appeared in Lin Feng's hand.

"Huh?" Po Jun and Han Man were stunned. Had the spear really just appeared from out of nowhere?

"No need to be surprised, I have a precious stone which enables me to carry a great deal of items with me at all times." said Lin Feng. Po Jun was extremely moved. Not only had Lin Feng saved

his life but he was also so kind and generous towards him.

“Po Jun, that spear is for you.” said Lin Feng while handing over the spear to Po Jun. As he grabbed the spear, suddenly the Qi from the spear rushed into his flesh and blood.

It was as if that pitch-black spear was alive!

“This is a spiritual weapon. Be kind to that spear and take care of it during battle.” said Lin Feng.

Han Man and Po Jun wanted to go and protect Duan Ren City.

“Spiritual weapon?!” Po Jun’s eyes shrank. He had already heard of spiritual weapons before.

Spiritual weapons contained an extremely sharp energy and a pure Qi. They were extremely precious. Cultivators of the Ling Qi layer would rarely get the chance to use spiritual weapons but surprisingly, Lin Feng was giving one to Po Jun.

Po Jun felt like his hand was incredibly heavy.

At that moment, Liu Fei came back to them and gave a letter to Han Man: “When you arrive in Duan Ren City, give that letter to my father and he will understand.”

“Alright.” said Han Man while nodding. He then said: “Lin Feng,

big brother, we're off."

"Be careful." said Lin Feng while nodding. Han Man turned around and started walking. He was determined but their training wasn't going to be easy.

Po Jun bowed in front of Lin Feng and followed Han Man.

Lin Feng couldn't accompany them outside, it would have drawn too much attention. He just looked at their backs as they left and hoped they would take good care of themselves.

Chapter 153: Daemonic Fire Lion

Liu Fei was standing behind Lin Feng, she looked at the two silhouettes and said softly: “Don’t worry, they are strong. If there is a problem at the border, they’ll know how to handle it.”

Lin Feng didn’t comment at all. The border was a dangerous place, how could she guarantee that it wasn’t dangerous?

But Po Jun had said that with the slave marks on their faces, they would have to constantly wear masks while inside the Imperial City, so the best solution was to go and protect the border.

Po Jun’s decision was that of a hot-blooded cultivator and required a great deal of courage, these were the traits required when studying as a military student within the academy.

“You have almost completely recovered from your injuries but you still need to rest more.” said Liu Fei when she saw that Lin Feng wasn’t replying.

Lin Feng laughed and said: “So you really do care about me?”

Liu Fei’s expression changed and she said: “Who else would? You perverted bastard.”

While talking, Liu Fei immediately walked towards the door. Lin Feng smiled wryly. It seemed like Liu Fei would always consider him to be a pervert.

Lin Feng shook his head and started to leave. Behind him, he could hear that someone was following him. It was Meng Qing. She was silently following behind him.

Lin Feng stopped, turned around, smiled wryly and said: “Meng Qing, you don’t need to come with me this time.”

Meng Qing shook her head and didn’t reply. She just moved closer to him. Lin Feng’s wry smile grew several times larger but he didn’t say anything. After all, Meng Qing was just worried that something could happen to Lin Feng.

Besides, it wasn’t a bad thing if Meng Qing was with him when he was outside. He had a lot of enemies.

“Don’t worry, nothing will happen this time. I will be careful.” said Lin Feng again but Meng Qing remained indifferent no matter what he said.

“Meng Qing, people won’t recognize me this time but if you are with me, they will instantly recognise us.” said Lin Feng while taking out a silver mask and covering his face.

Meng Qing finally reacted and immediately said: “Alright, you go alone but be careful.”

“I will.” said Lin Feng while slightly revealing his face for a few seconds to smile to her. He then turned around and left.

Lin Feng arrived in front of a place which looked like a small city inside the Imperial City. He paid the tax and entered. Without the slightest hesitation, he went to the Prisoner Arena.

Just like last time, the Prisoner Arena was filled with a large number of people. Lin Feng looked at that sea of people from the top of the arena.

Lin Feng started walking down the stairs, he was slowly able to see the arena more and more clearly.

Inside the cage, there were more slaves and ferocious beasts. That was a scary place filled with the smell of death.

At that moment, someone moved in front of Lin Feng and obstructed his way.

Lin Feng's looked at the person in front of him from under his mask. Lin Feng gave him a purity stone of medium quality and the other person immediately let him pass without any problems. He was approaching the lower rows of seats.

Lin Feng sat down on one of the first rows and calmly looked at the arena.

At that moment, a snake beast was fighting against a cultivator. The head of the snake was flat and wide. It looked really ugly. Black smog was coming from its mouth.

That snake was very vigorous. It was still small compared to its matured state. It was a second level Ling ferocious beast. It still needed time to reach maturity.

Ferocious beasts and practitioners were quite similar when it came to cultivation. Fighting enabled both to become stronger with increased life and death experiences. Just like humans, all ferocious beasts were not equal. Some humans had high natural talent and abilities while other didn't. Ferocious beasts were the same in that aspect. There were some of them which could become terrifying when attaining maturity while some others had a very limited strength.

That species of beast was already incredibly strong when reaching the Ling level. It was even said that when reaching the peak of the Ling level, they could sometimes defeat some other ferocious beasts of the early Xuan level. They were usually extremely strong. But the snake which was battling at that moment was only a second level Ling beast. It was far from reaching maturity.

What surprised Lin Feng is that he surprisingly recognized the cultivator who was fighting against the snake. He knew him incredibly well.

It was Lin Hong, Lin Ba Dao's son, Lin Qian's brother. He used to study at the Ice and Snow Mountain Village before but had come to join the Holy Courtyard.

At that moment, Lin Hong had already broken through to the second Ling Qi layer. Lin Feng didn't have the impression that Lin Hong was particularly strong. The Lin Clan used to hate Lin Feng and called him a piece of trash. They thought that he was exceptionally weak. But at that moment, he had already broken through to the fifth Ling Qi layer. There was probably no junior member of the Lin Clan who could defeat him. Amongst the elders of the clan, there also wasn't many who could defeat Lin Feng. The fact that Lin Hong had already reached the second Ling Qi layer was actually quite normal and was nothing exceptional for someone of his talents.

Lin Feng glanced at the crowd. Then, a group of people drew his attention. They were also sitting on the viewing platform. They were watching Lin Hong and muttering between themselves.

“Look at that snake, even though it is very strong, Lin Hong can easily defeat it. Lin Hong's ice attacks could easily freeze the entire snake. He will obviously win this battle.”

“Hehe, of course. It's great that Miss Qian allowed Lin Hong to fight against that snake.”

Lin Feng could hear everything that these people were saying. He smiled coldly. It seemed like Lin Qian has also gained strength from when they last met. She was sitting with Chu Zhan Peng who had also become a student at the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue. With his strength, it would be easy for him to take care of Lin Qian. Being close to him, Lin Qian's status in society could only climb higher and higher.

“Ice and Fire Universal Spirit... I wonder what your cultivation level is these days...” thought Lin Feng. He then stopped looking at Lin Qian. She meant nothing to him anyway.

He turned around and continued to watch the battle. At that moment, Lin Hong’s Qi was oppressing the body of the snake and he was close to winning the battle.

At the same time, Lin Qian, who wasn’t sitting that far away from Lin Feng, frowned when she looked at him. She looked at Lin Feng’s silver mask. The person who was wearing that silver mask was sitting in the viewing platform and calmly watching the battle. A light flashed through Lin Qian’s eyes.

“Huh?” thought Lin Qian while intensely staring at that silver mask. Back in Yangzhou City, she had already seen that mask... and at this moment, she saw the same mask again.

“Could it be a coincidence?” thought Lin Qian.

She could never forget the piece of trash who had been expelled of the Lin Clan, wore the same mask.

It couldn’t be him though because the Yun Hai Sect had been completely destroyed. The survivors had mostly become slaves. It was impossible for Lin Feng to calmly sit there in the Prisoner Arena and comfortably watch battles. Besides, he was sitting in the front rows...

Lin Qian hadn't learned about the fact that Lin Feng had survived. She just knew that an entire army of Chi Xie armored cavalry had gone there and destroyed everything. Wouldn't it be ridiculous if someone had managed to escape? That sort of rumor would never spread anyway, it would be too ridiculous to believe!

At that moment, Lin Hong finally defeated the snake, he took his eight purity stones of medium quality and walked towards the exit of the cage.

The one in charge of that side of the cage brought the dead body of the snake out and replaced it with a new ferocious beast.

When the crowd saw the new ferocious beast, they were all stupefied.

That ferocious beast was entirely red and was covered with flames.

An extremely sharp Qi emanated from its body.

That ferocious beast looked incredibly hideous. When it opened its mouth, a wide forest of teeth sharp as razors appeared. That beast looked so majestic that it almost looked like the king of beasts.

What astonished the crowd is that it had two fiery red wings on its back.

“What a terrifying ferocious beast.” thought Lin Feng when he saw it. It looked majestic and an extremely strong Qi was released from its body. Looking at it was almost enough to scare people away. Even when the one in charge of the cage had brought the beast inside, he had been very careful as if he was scared that the ferocious beast could attack him at any moment.

“It’s a Daemoniac Fire Lion. What the....” many people recognized the Daemoniac Fire Lion. It was an extremely terrifying species of ferocious beast. There were some rumors about them which were widely known. If it reached the Xuan level, it was said to acquire special powers and become almost invincible.

The man who brought the beast into the cage started talking loudly: “This is a Daemoniac Fire Lion. It is a Fifth level Ling beast. The person who defeats it will win twenty purity stones of medium quality. If you are able to tame this beast without killing it then you can even take it away with you.”

Chapter 154: The Scandal

When the one in charge of the cage finished talking, the crowd burst with excitement.

The one who could tame it could take it away with him! That was incredibly tempting for all the cultivators in the arena! Owning such a beast would provide a cultivator with terrifying battle ability.

But the problem was with taming the beast, being unsuccessful would likely result in death.

Most of the people in the crowd would never want to fight against such a powerful ferocious beast. Besides, even cultivators at the fifth Ling Qi layer probably wouldn't be advised to fight against it. It would be extremely hard for them to stay alive, let alone tame the beast.

Then, the one in charge of the cage started talking again: "Of course, to enter the cage you should be at least at the fifth Ling Qi layer to fight against it. If you have broken through to inferior Ling Qi layers, you can also fight against it, but it would not be recommended. If you can't tame it, then just kill it. We will also give you a hundred purity stones of medium quality."

Many people were tempted to give it a try.

The group of people with whom Lin Qian had come with were all students of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue. At that moment,

everybody was staring at Lin Qian.

“Mu Fan, don’t you want to capture that daemoniac fire lion?” said one student to another called Mu Fan. He was captivated by the lion in the cage.

He had broken through to the fifth Ling Qi layer, the same level as that ferocious beast.

“Mu Fan, bro, if you want to give it a try, I can talk to the guy running things, then even if you lose it won’t be a big deal, just don’t get injured.” said another student.

Mu Fan was growing more and more tempted.

If any of them had to go into the cage then Mu Fan was probably the best choice.

If he won and managed to tame the beast while fighting it, he could take the beast away as his own, but he probably would have to give up on the twenty purity stones of medium quality. They probably would not give the purity stones and also let you leave with the beast, it would be too great of a prize. Even if he lost, it wasn’t a problem either as long as he didn’t get injured. Who could refuse such a tempting offer?

Suddenly, Mu Fan looked relaxed and said: “Alright, I will give it a try.”

Mu Fan looked delighted. From what he had understood, the other student was actually proposing to give the lion to him as a present. That was exactly what it was in Mu Fan's head.

“Mu Fan, brother, you're very brave.” said the other student.

Mu Fan then jumped through the air and landed in front of the cage. His eyes were filled with greed when looking at the beast.

“What a nice agility technique, Mu Fan, bro! Show them how powerful we students at the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue are!” shouted another of Mu Fan's fellow students so that everybody could hear.

“Oh, so they're students of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue, no wonder they are so strong.”

“The students of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue are so amazing. They will probably become the most important people within the country over time.”

Various comments spread throughout the crowd. The students of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue had a proud and arrogant expression on their face when they overheard all of the comments.

Since the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue had been created, some other cultivation academies and institutes had already started suffering from its power. The students of the Holy Courtyard were always trying to make their institute gain in prestige and

reputation. They wanted it to become the first cultivation institute in the country. In the future, the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue would probably become much more influential than the Celestial Academy and would also become much stronger than all the sects of the country.

The students from the Holy Courtyard felt extremely proud.

Lin Qian's beautiful face expressed a lofty arrogance. It was very clear to her that in the future, she would go back home wearing luxurious clothes and show to everyone how prestigious she had become after she left Yangzhou City.

Mu Fan was walking towards the door of the cage and was about to get in when suddenly, a silhouette appeared in front of him.

The students of the Holy Courtyard suddenly all had angry looks on their faces, especially the young boy who had been trying to convince Mu Fan to go and fight against the lion. He looked particularly angry.

That person only needed to take one more step to enter the cage. When Mu Fan saw the scene, he could help but shout: "STOP!"

The silhouette in front of him stopped. He was wearing a silver mask which gave everyone the sensation of coldness.

That person was of course, Lin Feng.

“What’s wrong?” said Lin Feng aggressively. His voice sounded strange when he was wearing the silver mask.

“Oh, I see. Your Highness, haven’t you seen that I was the first one to come?” said Mu Fan sarcastically. He was convinced that there had been nobody in front of him when he had moved towards the cage. Lin Feng had come from behind him and passed by to the cage.

“Did you say to the person running things that you wanted to enter into the cage?” asked Lin Feng coldly.

Mu Fan had an ugly expression on his face. He had, not actually announced to anyone other than his fellow students that he wanted to battle against the lion.

When Lin Feng saw that Mu Fan wasn’t replying at all, he continued: “Since you didn’t announce that you would be the person to fight against the lion, the rule is: the first one to go inside the cage is the one who gets to battle.”

A light flashed through Mu Fan’s eyes and he said: “My fellow students of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue really want me to fight against that lion. Give me that battle otherwise I’ll lose face in front of them.”

When saying that, Mu Fan made sure to clearly and loudly state the words “Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue”. He had said these words loudly and slowly to make sure that Lin Feng would hear him and understand his meaning.

Lin Feng smiled. The Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue?

“I’m sorry, I’ve never heard of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue and besides, I don’t know you so I have no reason to care about your face.” said Lin Feng. At that moment, many people were stupefied. How strange! He had never heard of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue!

All the students of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue stood up and furiously looked at Lin Feng. That guy was crazy!

“Don’t do something that you will regret.” said Mu Fan while evilly staring at Lin Feng.

Lin Feng laughed and said: “Oh really, I really don’t know what you mean?”

Then, Lin Feng turned around and was about to enter the cage.

“Wait, wait!” Said someone while quickly interrupting Lin Feng’s movement. Lin Feng stopped, turned around and saw it was another student of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue. It was precisely the one who had convinced Mu Fan to go fight against the lion.

“What do you want now?” said Lin Feng while smiling coldly.

All those people were students of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue,

they were Mu Fan's fellow students. Lin Qian was also sitting amongst them.

“Let my brother Mu Fan fight this lion.” said the young man coldly and indifferently yet sounding strict.

He was wearing a set of magnificent and expensive clothes. It was clear to see that he was a noble from a powerful family at a single glance.

“Since when do you decide who can fight or cannot in the cage of the Prisoner Arena?” asked Lin Feng coldly.

“I didn't decide about that. You can ask the one in charge of the arena who arrived first.” said the young man indifferently. He sounded quite confident. Everybody turned around and looked at the man who had brought the lion into the cage.

The man pointed at Mu Fan and said indifferently: “He was the first one to arrive at the cage. He will fight this beast.”

When he heard these words, a huge smile appeared on the face of the young man who had just helped Mu Fan.

When Lin Feng saw the arrogant expression on Mu Fan's face as well as on the faces of the other students of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue, he said: “You're the one who decides here, good. I will not return to this place to be scammed into paying for this. I also advise to everybody else never return to this place again, stupidly

spending purity stones to watch pathetic losers fighting rigged fights.”

When the young man heard Lin Feng, he frowned and said: “What do you mean?”

“Was I not clear enough for you? I will explain again then.” said Lin Feng while smiling underneath his mask: “I have heard a few times about the scandals which take place here. Surprisingly, there were some people who were seen losing fights in the cage but were saved. Can you believe it? I didn’t believe the rumours but now I see that this kind of scandal must actually be a common occurrence. The Prisoner Arena is unable to properly apply their own rules. This place is a joke.”

Chapter 155: Battle to the Death

When the crowd heard Lin Feng, they all started whispering amongst themselves. Many people had also heard about the scandals which occurred here and some had even witnessed these things with their own eyes.

At that moment, the faces of the young man and the man in charge of the cage drastically changed. They looked extremely cold.

When the man in charge of the cage saw that Lin Feng had returned to the viewing platform and didn't try to come into the cage, he turned to Mu Fan and said: "Alright, since the problem is solved and you were the first to arrive at the cage, you may enter. Show everyone how majestic and heroic the students of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue are. Show to everyone how easy it is for people like you to tame the Daemoniac Fire Lion."

Everyone was surprised. The man didn't care at all about what Lin Feng had just said.

Lin Feng had been the first to arrive at the cage, so why was the man now saying that Mu Fan had been the first one to arrive? Lin Feng was disgusted. Besides, the man was also publicly advertising how great the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue was. Lin Feng thought that such obvious methods were pathetic.

But of course, Lin Feng's words had made everyone furious. He had humiliated them all, and not everyone could just ignore him.

“I don’t want to hear anything else from your filthy mouth.” said the young man on the viewing platform coldly.

Lin Feng looked at him through his mask, laughed and said: “That’s the way noble cultivators do it, by cheating. If you want to give him the Daemonic Fire Lion as a present, you just decide to change the rules of the Prisoner Arena and use your influence to rig the fights... Isn’t it nice to be able to use such a grand arena to give presents to your friends?”

“Oh, by the way, I forgot to tell you. Directly giving him the Daemonic Fire Lion as a present will not help the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue gain prestige, so the whole purpose of this fake show has failed.” said Lin Feng coldly and indifferently. His words were getting sharper.

Most people in the crowd agreed with Lin Feng. Even though Lin Feng was being very aggressive, nobody could refute what he was saying. He had been able to force the man to give Mu Fan the right to enter the cage before Lin Feng only because the young man on the viewing platform had a high status. That was unfair. This was definitely premeditated.

The young, noble cultivator was furious. At that moment, Mu Fan looked at Lin Feng and said: “Since you’re angry about it, then why don’t we fight and the winner can go inside.”

“For what reason would I battle against you?” said Lin Feng while glancing at Mu Fan. He then indifferently said: “You never

said that you wanted to battle against the lion in the first place and I arrived before you, but you still wanted to go in first by using unfair arrangements.” said Lin Feng.

Mu Fan would definitely win the battle against the Daemonic Fire Lion, but that wouldn't be a real victory because it wouldn't help the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue gain a better reputation. It would actually be the opposite. It would be a humiliation for the Holy Courtyard. Mu Fan didn't want that.

Mu Fan smiled and said: “I understand now. You just have a big mouth and like to talk big, but in practice, you aren't able to do much.”

“Exactly! Apart from a big mouth, you don't have much else to show! You don't even dare show your true colours.”

“Hehe, how could that liar compete with Mu Fan anyway? Mu Fan is considered as a genius at the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue. Defeating the Daemonic Fire Lion is a piece of cake for him.”

Each and every single student of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue was bragging about how great their institute was as if they were all extremely strong, as if they were all the best cultivators in the world just because they cultivated in that institute.

Lin Feng then said: “The Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue seems be filled with the mightiest cultivators in the entire world. It seems like I was pretty ignorant!”

“Yes, he acted recklessly. He surprisingly dared to provoke Mu Fan.” More and more people firmly believed that Lin Feng was scared to fight against Mu Fan.

But at that moment, Lin Feng smiled and said: “But I am really curious to see how strong a genius of the mighty Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue really is.”

All the students of the Holy Courtyard were pleasantly surprised. Lin Feng surprisingly accepted the fight, which meant that he was going to die and they would regain their face.

Everybody looked at Lin Feng, who slowly turned around and said: “You and me go inside the cage. If you win then you get to live, but if you lose then I will kill you. How does that sound?” When Lin Feng finished talking, the entire atmosphere in the Prisoner Arena became completely silent. Everybody, especially the students of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue, was astonished.

If you win then you get to live, but if you lose then I will kill you...

Lin Feng knew how to talk big!

Many people had their mouth wide open and simply stared blankly at Lin Feng. How cruel! How heartless! Not only had he accepted the battle, but he was proposing a battle to death. He was probably sure that he was going to win, otherwise he wouldn't stupidly gamble with his life at stake.

Mu Fan was fixedly staring at Lin Feng. How could that guy be so arrogant as to propose a battle to the death?

When Lin Feng saw that nobody was talking, he smiled and said indifferently: “Don’t worry, I only know how to talk big and overestimate myself. After all, he’s a genius of the mighty Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue. He proposed the battle to save himself from losing face. I’ve just been showing off so far, but the students of the majestic and great Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue should be able to easily defeat me. After all, he has the power to defeat a daemonic fire lion extremely easily. There is no reason for him to refuse.”

Lin Feng sounded extremely aggressive and was clearly making fun of him. The students of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue were gnashing their teeth and fixedly staring at Lin Feng.

Immediately after, they looked at Mu Fan. The prestige of the entire Holy Courtyard was in his hands at that moment.

When he felt that everybody was staring at him, Mu Fan felt oppressed. He felt like his heart was weighed down by a thousand ton weight. After everything that happened, he had no way out of this situation. Defeating Lin Feng was the only possibility, as he had to show everyone that he was strong and protect the reputation of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue.

If he didn’t fight, he would never be able to look people in the eye again. People would also start to have a mediocre opinion about the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue as well.

Mu Fan had no choice.

Besides, he could see Lin Feng's eyes through the mask. His eyes always looked calm throughout their whole exchange. Seeing such emotionless eyes staring at him was terrifying.

Lin Feng had challenged him to a battle to the death, could it be that he was sure of his power to win?

Mu Fan wasn't weak. He was quite strong and confident in his own power. But at that moment, Lin Feng's confidence had shaken his belief in his own power. He felt like the pressure was too high.

A light flashed through Mu Fan's eyes and he said, while gnashing his teeth: "I accept your challenge to a battle to the death."

"Now, let's get into the cage." said Mu Fan coldly while walking inside.

"Wait, wait." said Lin Feng at that moment. Mu Fan stopped, turned his head and said: "What's wrong?"

"You and the man in charge of the cage already have an arrangement, as I already stated. I don't want to fight with both of you in the cage at the same time."

"What do you mean? Do you think that I am going to interfere and hurt you?" asked the man in charge of the cage to Lin Feng.

“The same thing happened a few days ago here. I heard the story on my way here. If it has happened once, then it can happen again. I heard it is also a very normal thing here.”

The man in charge of the cage was speechless. He looked at Lin Feng and asked: “Well, what do you want?”

“I want someone else to referee our battle to the death. Of course, it cannot be a student of the Holy Courtyard and it also cannot be someone who works here in the Prisoner Arena.”

“Pfff, where are we supposed to find someone like that to referee the battle? You are being ridiculous. Are you fighting or not?” said Mu Fan impatiently.

But at that moment, someone in the crowd spoke: “I will referee your battle to the death.”

At that moment, everybody looked at that person. He surprisingly wasn't sitting in the first rows of the viewing platform. He was actually a young man who sat at the back of the viewing platform.

He looked incredibly friendly and courteous. He had a warm smile on his face, which gave the impression that he was incredibly friendly and easy to get along with. But he also gave other people the impression that they were inferior in comparison with him.

The noble, young man shrank back when he saw that young man. He was gasping with astonishment.

It was him! He surprisingly was there!

Chapter 156: Energy Attack!

The smiling young man moved down towards the arena and slightly nodded at Lin Feng. He then said: “I’ll referee the life and death battle, but I don’t know if anyone has any objections to me being the referee?”

Lin Feng was pleasantly surprised. The young man had a very kind and friendly look to his face. He had a warm smile on his face, and he gave off a gentle impression. He was perfect to referee. Nobody would believe he held ill intentions when seeing the young man.

Even though Lin Feng didn’t know him, he thought he seemed like a perfect referee.

Lin Feng’s gut feeling made him think that there must be something wrong. It was too perfect to possibly be true.

“I agree with that.” said the young, noble and wealthy cultivator. He looked surprised.

Mu Fan was astonished when he heard his friend. Mu Fan didn’t know the young man who had just appeared. However, the young man who had proposed to be the referee had to have a high status; otherwise, his friend would have never accepted. Besides, he couldn’t contradict the young noble cultivator even if he wanted to.

“What about you?” asked the young man towards Lin Feng. He

smiled and added: “Don’t worry, I will make sure that the rules are applied and that you both can have a fair battle. I will also make sure that nobody comes provoke you after the battle.”

What nice words!

Lin Feng looked pensive. He was trying to guess who that young man could be, but he had no idea. Lin Feng was sure that the young man had a very high status and wasn’t an ordinary person.

“Alright, since it’s that way, you can referee our battle.” said Lin Feng while nodding. Even though Lin Feng had the impression that it was too perfect to be true and that there was something happening behind the scenes, he still agreed. If he had a high status, then he wouldn’t propose to referee and then violate the rules; he would lose face... And that would be unnecessary.

“Thank you.” said the young man while smiling and nodding his head in a very polite way.

Lin Feng turned around, looked at Mu Fan and said: “Shall we.”

Mu Fan stared at Lin Feng’s eyes but couldn’t see anything inside except coldness and calmness. There wasn’t the slightest bit of anxiousness.

The man in charge of the cage left.

Mu Fan and Lin Feng were facing each other in the cage. Lin Feng

still looked calm and fearless.

Mu Fan raised his head and asked ironically: “I am Mu Fan, student of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue, would you like to tell me your name?”

“Duo Ming.” said Lin Feng without thinking.

At that moment, Lin Qian and Lin Hong were astonished!

“Duo Ming!”

Why did that name sound so familiar! His name was surprisingly Duo Ming.

Back in Yangzhou City, Lin Feng had also worn that mask when he introduced himself as Duo Ming.

“Lin Feng?” whispered Lin Hong. It was such a coincidence that Lin Hong couldn’t believe they were different people.

“It can’t be Lin Feng.” said Lin Qian while shaking her head. “If it were Lin Feng, how could he remain that calm while next to us? He even calmly glanced at us a few times. Besides, Lin Feng was not weak but in Yangzhou City, he had only recently broken through to the first Ling Qi layer... It is impossible that he broke through to the fifth Ling Qi layer within half a year.”

There was a four layer difference between the first and the fifth Ling Qi layer and it was a huge difference. The great majority of people required much more time to achieve something like that. If somebody was able to break through to two Ling Qi layers in less than a year, they were definitely a great genius. But even the greatest cultivation genius in the world could never break through four Ling Qi layers in six months.”

Lin Hong nodded when he heard Lin Qian. Lin Feng would have never been willing to fight against the Fifth level Daemonic Fire Lion. Therefore, it was impossible for that person to be Lin Feng.

What was happening at that moment was just a coincidence, nothing more.

Inside the cage, Mu Fan laughed and said: “Duo Ming? We’ll see if your arrogance is founded.”

When he finished talking, Mu Fan released a cold force which crashed into Lin Feng’s body and oppressed him. He had the feeling his body was being weighed down by a mountain of weight.

“Force?” Lin Feng was surprised. He hadn’t thought that his opponent would be able to control forces. No wonder that the noble young man was willing to give him the Daemonic Fire Lion as a gift. Mu Fan was a talented genius and would probably be able to tame the Daemonic Fire Lion with only a little work.

When Mu Fan saw that Lin Feng was surprised, he felt proud of the power he had obtained. It seemed like Duo Ming had

overestimated himself after all. If he was already feeling oppressed by such a small amount of force, it would be easy to win against him.

“You just have a very big mouth! You’re oppressed by just a little bit of force. Your strength doesn’t even enable you to resist my power. Don’t worry, I can release much more force than this. You could never compete with me. I now know that I was wrong to think you could be my opponent. You were just rushing to your own death.” said Mu Fan.

When he finished gloating, he took a step forward and released even more force which immediately surrounded Lin Feng’s body, causing him to feel extremely heavy.

“Force, so what?” said Lin Feng while smiling. His body made a slight movement, and suddenly, the force around his body weakened a great deal.

Lin Feng took a step forward, transformed into a shadow and then he moved directly into the opposing force.

With each movement Lin Feng made, whirlwinds were created around him and the atmosphere was emitting noises which sounded like tearing paper.

It seemed like Lin Feng wasn’t affected by the force and was tearing through it.

“Huh?” Mu Fan frowned and groaned. He took another step forward and released an incredible amount of his force, which emanated extremely high-pitched whistling sound. His force was getting sharper and sharper as it moved towards Lin Feng.

But at that moment, Lin Feng raised his hand and ignored the force released by Mu Fan. Something, which looked like a poisonous Qi, emerged from Lin Feng’s hand and surprised everyone.

Lin Feng controlled force on a much higher level than Mu Fan. The force he released was different from that of Mu Fan. Because Lin Feng had a great deal of understanding when it came to forces, he knew how to make force almost invisible or change it to a thicker and heavier force. That is why Mu Fan’s force didn’t affect Lin Feng in the slightest.

When the crowd saw the small amount of force that Lin Feng was using, which wasn’t sharp at all, they were all surprised and had the impression that he was in an incredibly dangerous situation.

“I can control forces and my attacks are extremely powerful. Besides, I have already broken through to the fifth Ling Qi layer. I am not scared of you at all.” said Mu Fan while laughing. He stamped his foot onto the ground, which made a cloud of dust rise into the air.

An even larger quantity of force emerged from his body and was moving towards Lin Feng’s shadow at full speed. Suddenly, a bright white light illuminated the area between them. Everybody’s eyes were wide open watching this scene.

“That guy is very strong. He can move quickly, he can control forces and I can even feel some pure Qi.” said some people in the crowd while gasping in astonishment.

It seemed like Mu Fan was incredibly dangerous. He definitely deserved to be a member of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue. He was extremely strong. The situation was getting dangerous for Lin Feng.

“Hehe, that guy, Duo Ming, will regret that he acted so aggressively against brother Mu Fan. He will not be able to withstand a single attack that our brother Mu Fan will launch. Mu Fan will definitely be able to kill Duo Ming with little effort.” said the students of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue. They all agreed on that and were all convinced that Lin Feng was just going to die.

Lin Feng’s calm expression never left his face. It seemed like everything that was happening had no effect on him, as if the battle wasn’t affecting his mood at all.

Lin Feng and Mu Fan were moving closer and closer to each other. The forces were getting more and more intense within the atmosphere. Dust was sent flying all around. The two silhouettes were becoming hidden within the cloud of dust.

There was still energy in Lin Feng’s palm, which emitted a dazzling light.

“Psss...” Suddenly, a small noise spread through the air, and a

small dark light flashed through the air which made Mu Fan's body freeze in terror.

“Energy attack...”

How terrifying! In his mind, Mu Fan could only see the hideous silver mask transforming into an omen of death!

Chapter 157: Humiliation of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue

Energy attacks were an extremely powerful tool for cultivators.

Not only did it enable a cultivator to absorb all the energy around them, it also enabled them to control it and use it as their own.

The energy attack was incredibly faint and did not look dangerous at all, but in fact, it was terrifyingly powerful.

Mu Fan's force was absorbed by Lin Feng's energy attack. All the energy in the atmosphere was combining and adding to Lin Feng's power. How could he compete with him?

At that moment, Mu Fan understood that Lin Feng could use an energy attack, which is why he hadn't been affected by his attacks. A cultivator of the fifth Ling Qi layer who could carry out energy attacks was beyond strong... How frightening!

Mu Fan had only thought about retreating and escaping once he saw the energy attack!

A cloud of dust appeared around Mu Fan and he started retreating backwards at full speed.

"Too late." said Lin Feng in a terrifyingly cold tone. Lin Feng moved like a shadow and his hand was rushing towards Mu Fan's

body.

“BOOOOOM!!”

A gigantic cloud of dust appeared all around the cage. Lin Feng's energy attack had struck Mu Fan's body in the blink of an eye, tearing apart Mu Fan's body and leading to his immediate death.

“Huh?” The crowd was wondering what was happening inside of the cage. They couldn't see anything through the cloud of dust that was surrounding the cage.

The students of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue were nervously looking at the cloud of dust and trying to see what was happening inside.

“Hmph, that guy, Duo Ming, dared be that aggressive and arrogant. He must already be dead by now. It's a shame that we cannot see his end through the dust.” said one of the students of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue, which confirmed everyone's thoughts about the battle. Nobody was worried about Mu Fan losing against some nobody with no background.

That's right. How could a person, whom nobody knew, compete with a genius of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue who could control forces and had broken through to the fifth Ling Qi layer? However, they did not know that the person was Lin Feng, and he could easily overshadow Mu Fan. They would never put the likes of commoners in their eyes.

“Brother Mu Fan, congratulations on your victory.” said the young noble student of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue. He was convinced that Mu Fan had won the battle. If he lost, all of the students of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue would lose face. How was it possible for Mu Fan to lose to a nobody?

“Don’t get excited too early.” said a cold and indifferent voice coming from the cage. Everybody was astonished, and they could feel their hearts pounding in their chests.

“Someone who has no determination to risk their life on the path of cultivation. Someone who relies on status and puts themselves high above other cultivators... can never be strong.” said the voice coming from the cloud of dust, which was slowly fading until only Lin Feng could be seen standing in the cage.

Lin Feng slowly turned around. Mu Fan’s body was lying on the ground in a terrible state. There was no doubt when looking at this scene that Mu Fan was dead and almost split in two.

“Boom.” It was if a bomb had detonated in people’s brains. Their hearts were racing at full speed. The result of the battle was completely different from what they had expected. Lin Feng had won the battle.

They had never heard of this person before and he was wearing a silver mask to hide his face... yet he had required only his bare hands to mercilessly kill a genius of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue with a single strike.

Lin Feng's eyes were still calm and his emotions were still steady; he had known the result of the battle since the beginning.

“Mu Fan lost?” Each and every single student of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue had their eyes wide open in shock. They couldn't believe the results of the battle, especially that Lin Feng had required only a single bare handed strike to kill Mu Fan.

“Hehe, a genius of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue only amount to this much, I see.” said Lin Feng indifferently.

Everybody from the Holy Courtyard felt anger in their hearts. They had been humiliated time and time again by his words. Lin Feng had just humiliated the students of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue to the extreme and thus indirectly humiliated the entire Holy Courtyard.

If the geniuses of the Holy Courtyard of Xue were not even strong, how could it even have a chance to become recognized as the strongest institute?

The students of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue had such evil expressions in their eyes that it wouldn't be surprising if they ignited and flames burst forth.

“You were lucky to win, that's all... So you shouldn't be arrogant like that.” said the noble and wealthy young man, which stupefied Lin Feng.

How was it possible to be so unbelievably shameless?

“Alright, shall we test my luck again? You can be the next to come down and fight me.” said Lin Feng while raising his head to look at the young man. The young man was shocked.

When Lin Feng saw that the young man wasn't replying, he continued: “I guess as a student of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue, you are too weak to fight against me. Go and flap your filthy mouth somewhere else.”

The young noble student furiously glared at Lin Feng.

“Each and every single one of you keeps bragging about how strong and powerful you are, but when you are in a real battle, you cannot withstand a single attack. You often advertise how great the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue is, but you are relying on such weaklings who fight rigged battles. You are all remarkably shameless.” said Lin Feng ignoring the young man's expression and then continued: “But I understand that you guys need to gain some prestige. You need to make other people believe that the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue is influential and powerful... but it is clear from what happened that the Holy Courtyard only knows how to put on a show.”

Lin Qian was fixedly staring at Lin Feng. This guy's words were sharp... His words had killed all hope of the publicity strategies having any success for the Holy Courtyard.

Everybody was wondering why this young man hated the Holy

Courtyard of Xue Yue so much that he would directly interfere with their publicity efforts.

The friendly young man was staring at Lin Feng and paying attention to every single movement and detail of his body.

“He’s only broken through to the fifth Ling Qi layer and he can already carry out energy attacks... That’s not an easy accomplishment.” thought the friendly young man who had been the referee. He still had a warm smile on his face, and he said: “Winner!”

At that moment, a silhouette was quietly leaving the cage.

Lin Feng wasn’t talking anymore. He turned around, looked at the cage and started to leave. Lin Feng said to the man in charge of the cage “Can I come in now”?

The noble young man still did not reply to Lin Feng.

It seemed like everybody actually gave a great deal of face to the warm and friendly young man. He then said: “Since he won the fight, what are you all looking at him for?” Everybody was surprised, especially the students of the Holy Courtyard, who then nodded in a docile way.

“Alright then, twenty purity stones for killing it or you can tame it.” said the man in charge of the cage to Lin Feng.

It seemed like everybody was particularly scared of the friendly young man, especially those students of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue. Who could talk that calmly and make the students of the Holy Courtyard obey so easily?

Lin Feng was looking at that daemoniac fire lion and smiled. That beast was really a terrifying monster.

It was extremely strong, quick and agile. These two wings could lacerate the atmosphere.

How could the noble young man refuse to offer it to Mu Fan? Besides, if Mu Fan had accepted, he would have had a debt towards the noble young man.

Lin Feng happily handed over twenty purity stones, and the man in charge of the cage immediately let go of the daemoniac fire lion. He looked at Lin Feng with an envious expression.

“ROAR.” roared the daemoniac fire lion. Its body started shaking and it moved towards Lin Feng. It opened its gigantic mouth and unleashed flames from its mouth. The entire atmosphere was fire red and filled with a scorching heat.

Lin Feng was surprised. He jumped up into the air, brandished his long sword and moved it towards the beast.

Chapter 158: Auction Square

“CRACK!”

“Raahhh.... oooo.....”

Two clear and distinct sounds spread throughout the atmosphere. The first one was the sound of bones being crushed. The second one sounded like an extremely painful howl...

Both sounds were emitted by... the daemoniac fire lion.

A gigantic sword mark was slashed across the back of the daemoniac fire lion. A blurry blood stain appeared on his fur. Its gigantic body was crawling across the ground in pain. A weak white Qi emanated from its mouth but it was still mixed with some scorching flames.

The crowd was stupefied when they saw the result of the attack. Even though Lin Feng was incredibly strong, how could the extremely strong fifth level Ling daemoniac fire lion not withstand a single attack from him?

Lin Feng was quite surprised as well but immediately, a big smile appeared on his face. This battle was definitely interesting. So this was the plan all along, the lion couldn't withstand a single blow from an opponent.

“Thank you for your gift. I really appreciate it!” said Lin Feng

while raising his head and looking at the noble student on the viewing platform. Lin Feng was sneering at him with eyes filled with delight.

The daemonic fire lion had surprisingly been unable to withstand a single attack and there was only one explanation as to the reason for this. They had weakened the daemonic fire lion before the battle even started. They had prepared this weakened beast as a gift for Mu Fan, then Mu Fan would have easily been able to defeat it. A student of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue defeating such a strong and powerful ferocious beast with a single strike, how much prestige would the institute gain from such a feat?

Everyone's thoughts were chaotic. They were confused because nothing had happened according to plan. Lin Feng had defeated the daemonic fire lion... Lin Feng had tamed the beast while Mu Fan had lost his life with a single strike.

Lin Feng understood why the one in charge of the cage had looked at him with envy a moment before. He knew that this purposely weakened beast was ultimately going to belong to Lin Feng.

When he heard that Lin Feng was thanking him, the noble student looked annoyed. His expression was incredibly ugly. Anyone would be able to guess that he had made the beast weaker so that he could rig the victory in Mu Fan's favour.

The entire crowd looked at the group of students of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue as if they were despicable.

The Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue was really shameless and its methods were really cowardly. They were not as strong and influential as they always acted. They always tried to make it seem so but in fact, this was not the case, they were all just frauds.

The young noble student coldly smiled at Lin Feng and said: “Why thank me? Even though you brought the daemoniac fire lion under your control, it doesn’t mean that it will always follow and obey you. It’s not that easy to tame such a ferocious beast. It would be best for you to be very careful, just in case the beast feels like devouring you someday.”

When Lin Feng heard what the noble student said, he looked amused and said: “Don’t worry, what you’re saying is not my concern even if the daemoniac fire lion is many times stronger than me.”

When he finished talking, Lin Feng went to the man in charge of the cage and said: “So this daemoniac fire lion now belongs to me, right?”

“Yes it does.” the man said not sounding reluctant to hand it over, but Lin Feng didn’t wait to hear the reply; he had already grabbed the chains on the beast and started to pull the daemoniac fire lion out of the cage.

Lin Feng walked out of the cage and took a deep breath to savour and enjoy this moment, Lin Feng then glanced at the incredible amount of people who were watching him.

Under his mask, he had a huge smile on his face. He then said: “Being able to win a fifth level Ling ferocious wild beast is indeed a great thing. Once it grows to maturity it will reach the Xuan level. I have really made quite a sum.”

The crowd was surprised. Made quite a sum? He actually meant that the daemoniac fire lion had earned him money.

What did Lin Feng mean?

Nobody had time to ask before Lin Feng continued: “If you like this daemoniac fire lion, it’s still not impossible for you to obtain it, shall we go see how much this will sell for? Let’s head to the auction.”

Everybody was astonished when they heard what Lin Feng said. How very cruel of him.

Auction?

He wanted to sell such a valuable ferocious beast after winning it?

At that moment, the crowd understood what Lin Feng had said before. He would not get devoured by the daemoniac fire lion because he initially didn’t intend to take it with them. Lin Feng had never wanted the daemoniac fire lion to begin with.

“Is that guy crazy? That’s a daemoniac fire lion!”

Many people thought that Lin Feng was crazy for selling such a beast. They all thought that selling the daemoniac fire lion was a stupid choice.

Of course, it was Lin Feng’s choice to make and he didn’t feel like having the ugly daemoniac fire lion walking by his side.

He would do best not to commit the crime of cherishing a jade ring.

He wasn’t strong enough to keep such a valuable beast. Even if it was a great ferocious beast to possess, he couldn’t afford attracting the provocation of so many people. While he would not shy away from provocation, he did not want to invite it. He understood that in this world he would attract the attention of the wrong types of people and possibly get into trouble that could be avoided by having such a valuable pet.

What Lin Feng needed at this moment was to become stronger and quickly, he did not want to rely on the strength of a ferocious beast. Lin Feng couldn’t afford attracting other people’s envy which would cause him trouble. He already had too many enemies, owning such a beast would be like provoking people to become his enemy.

The opinions of other people wouldn’t make Lin Feng change his mind. It was difficult to make him change his mind. He understood that he did not have the strength to own this pet.

Lin Feng then left with beast and left the Prisoner Arena. He was walking towards the Market District.

Some people from the Prisoner Arena left and followed alongside Lin Feng. The entourage looked incredibly majestic.

Some people wanted to see how agitated the auctions would become with such a beast. Some others were interested in trying to purchase the daemonic fire lion.

Many of the people who followed from the prisoner arena were not short on purity stones. They had enough purity stones to spare and a daemonic fire lion was extremely valuable to them.

If they had a daemonic fire lion, they would be able to raise it until it reached the Xuan level which would make it invaluable. Besides, having such a ferocious beast walk next to them as they traveled would make them have an impressive and commanding presence.

As Lin Feng and the group of people were walking, the crowd was growing larger and larger, the people were attracted by the prestigious impression this crowd gave. It was slowly getting out of hand.

They were the subject of a widespread discussion. The news that somebody wanted to sell a daemonic fire lion was quickly spreading through the districts. That's why more and more people were approaching to see the spectacle.

Lin Feng was satisfied with this. He had feared that there wouldn't be enough people who would be interested in buying it.

The more people that were interested, the better it was. That way, the price would be extremely high, which was a very good thing for Lin Feng.

Lin Feng arrived in front of a square made especially for auctioning. There was a pavilion with several thousands of seats.

The place wasn't as big as that of the territory of the Prisoner Arena , This place gave a cozy feeling when looking at the scenery. People could watch the auctions while being served tea and decide whether or not they wished to purchase the treasures.

When Lin Feng saw this place, he smiled and walked towards it.

When Lin Feng was about to arrive at the auction square, a group of people appeared in front of him which made him stop.

"Someone like you cannot have a daemoniac fire lion." said a boy coldly while staring at Lin Feng.

Lin Feng looked and said indifferently: "If I were you, guys, I would get the hell out of my way and go far away from here."

These people were stupefied when they heard Lin Feng speak.

Cold Qi was being released from their bodies. All of them were far from being weak.

“We will pay a hundred purity stones of medium quality and take that daemonic fire lion with us.” Said one of the group.

“I gave you a chance, yet you are still morons.” said Lin Feng coldly and then continued: “I will count up to three, if you don’t get out of my way, I will have the crowd of people behind me kill you. Who would sell a daemonic fire lion for one hundred purity stones of medium quality? How stupid can you be?”

When they heard Lin Feng, the expression on the group of people’s faces changed. There were many people who were behind Lin Feng who suddenly stepped forwards and gave intimidating looks towards the group. They were eager for the group to give them a try.

“ONE!” Lin Feng started counting. At that moment, even more people started moving forward from the crowd.

“TWO!” continued Lin Feng. He had a strange smile on his face when he noticed that these people were not reacting.

Lin Feng’s eyes suddenly revealed murderous intent which made the group blocking his way completely shocked.

“Remember me, this is not over.” threatened the leader of the men who was blocking the path and then their group started

moving out of the way.

“As expected, you do not accept my goodwill, bunch of morons.” said Lin Feng coldly and then added: “In your next life, learn how to use your brains and remember not to threaten someone who just showed you a great kindness.”

“How could someone dare to try and get my daemoniac fire lion for a hundred purity stones of medium quality! Kill all of these people for threatening me and I will set aside 100 medium purity stones for you regardless of who wins the auction.” said Lin Feng coldly.

He was extremely calm as always, but the expression on the faces of the people who blocked the way suddenly changed drastically.

Chapter 159: Noble Cultivator Seating Area

Lin Feng was looking at all the corpses on the ground with his normal calm expression. Lin Feng had already given them an opportunity to leave when they had attempted to intimidate him and buy the daemoniac fire lion. But even after showing them mercy, they dared to threaten him. Since they had decided to make him their enemy, there had been no other choice but to kill them or have they would have caused greater trouble in the future.

As far as Lin Feng was concerned, he hadn't needed to move a single finger. A simple sentence had been enough to make many people move forwards to kill them.

Many people had listened to Lin Feng thinking that if they managed to win the auction, then Lin Feng would definitely decrease the price for them. One hundred purity stones of medium quality wasn't a small amount either. Lin Feng would obviously set aside the hundred purity stones of medium quality for them, no matter who won the auction.

"There are many strong cultivators within the Imperial City." thought Lin Feng while looking at all the people around him. A lot of them had already broken through to the seventh or eighth Ling Qi layer. There were even some people at the ninth Ling Qi layer. They were not dressed too extravagantly, but they could kill other cultivators as if they were stray dogs.

Lin Feng continued walking towards the auction pavilion with his daemoniac fire lion.

A pebble street was built leading into the pavilion. People of every status could walk on that pebble road freely.

Lin Feng arrived at a passage inside the pavilion. Between two flights of stairs, there was a beautiful woman who was there to assist guests. She had a red face and looked very fresh and alluring. She was wearing very bewitching clothes. It made Lin Feng feel very comfortable seeing such a beautiful girl.

“May I help you, Sir?” asked the beautiful woman in the middle when she saw Lin Feng arrive with the daemoniac fire lion. She was smiling at him and welcoming him as she would for any customer. She seemed friendly and her voice was pleasant to listen to.

“Yes, you can. I would like to sell this daemoniac fire lion.” said Lin Feng while smiling back at her with a friendly attitude.

The beautiful girl looked at the daemoniac fire lion, smiled and said: “Please follow me.”

The beautiful woman then made Lin Feng follow her into the passage.

The crowd who was sat on the seating platform inside the pavilion suddenly saw a daemoniac fire lion arrive with Lin Feng. They were stupefied. They fixedly stared at Lin Feng. Could it be that that guy wanted to sell his daemoniac fire lion?

Lin Feng didn't pay attention to the excited people within the

crowd, and instead, he paid attention to the atmosphere inside the pavilion and thought that the place seemed very warm and comfortable. It seemed like it was specially made to make people feel comfortable and at ease.

At the end of the passage, there was a stage where things would be sold. There was a set of heavy curtains at the side of the stage.

“Sir, this way, please.” said the beautiful woman when they arrived near the high stage. She then continued and went behind the curtains.

But when they arrived behind these heavy curtains, there were other curtains and going through them led to a place dedicated to the people who had placed things up for auction.

“Master Rong, this good sir would like to sell a daemoniac fire lion.” said the beautiful woman to an old man. The old man was already standing up when Lin Feng entered the backstage of the auction pavilion. He was looking at the daemoniac fire lion and looked very interested.

“The daemoniac fire lion of the Bai Clan ended up in your hands.” said the old man while smiling at Lin Feng. That smile was mysterious, but the old man seemed very happy.

“Bai Clan?” said Lin Feng.

“Yes, the Prisoner Arena is owned by the Bai Clan.” said the old

man while smiling. His smile was very strange, which made Lin Feng feel strange when seeing it.

“Now it makes sense. The Bai Clan are the sole owners of the Prisoner. This is why they used to call Bai Ze the “young master” and which is also why they sent some people to the Celestial Academy to catch me... But whether it is the young man in yellow clothes who was with Bai Ze or any of the people working at the Prisoner Arena, I hate them all.” thought Lin Feng.

He was wondering what the relation was between all of those people and the noble student who had wanted to offer it to Mu Fan. He knew they were all connected, but he did not know how.

“Hehe, I heard that many members of the Bai Clan went to the Celestial Academy and got killed. Even Bai Ze got killed when he went with those members. It seems like their strength is not infinite after all. Sooner or later, they were bound to offend the wrong person.” said the old man. A light flashed through his eyes. His eyes seemed to be revealing that he knew something that he was not saying.

Lin Feng was almost sure that this small city inside the Imperial City had only one owner... And that its many districts were divided between many clans who were in direct economic competition; for example, the owners of this auction square and the owners of the Prisoner Arena would have been in direct competition. The owners of the Prisoner Arena were probably making more money than the auctions.

“Do you have a particular request as far as the auction is

concerned?” asked the old man while looking at Lin Feng and then continued: “For example, what is the minimum price you are willing to receive? Or will you accept only certain specific items for an exchange?”

“Purity stones are good.” replied Lin Feng.

“Alright, at the time of the auction, it is possible that some people will want to use other goods to bid. We will accept those items and then convert them into purity stones equivalent with their economic value... Then, we will take a small transaction fee from the total.”

“Alright. Can you please put a hundred purity stones of medium quality aside after the auction and provide it to those people within the crowd. I promised those people in the crowd that I would provide it to them for their help.” said Lin Feng.

“There is no problem.” said the old man while nodding. He then handed a golden sheet, on which the full contract was written, to Lin Feng. He then said to Lin Feng: “When the auction is finished, come back here and provide that sheet to receive your purity stones.”

“Alright.” said Lin Feng while nodding and then left.

The beautiful girl smiled to Lin Feng and said: “Sir, our auction market has many good products. You can have a rest and see what we have to offer. If you are interested, you can also bid on the items.”

“Of course.” said Lin Feng while smiling. He didn’t need that girl to tell him that. He would obviously bid if he was interested in something.

“Sir, this way, please.” said the beautiful girl while showing Lin Feng to an available seat. There were already many people sitting and watching the auctions.

Besides, Lin Feng noticed that many of the people there were wearing masks; they were all hiding their identities like he was. Nobody wanted to be recognized and let other people know their social status.

“Why did you bring me here?” asked Lin Feng perplexedly, as this was obviously a place for the wealthy guests.

“Sir, this is where our distinguished guests are seated and all noble cultivators are also seated in this area. Only those who bring us valuable items to sell or who have a high status in society are allowed to sit within this area. This offers the best view of the auctions for all of our esteemed clients.” explained the beautiful woman to Lin Feng. Her voice was so sweet and gentle. She was so pleasant to listen to that many people would patiently listen to her explanations.

“Noble cultivators!” thought Lin Feng while laughing. No wonder so many people were wearing masks. They didn’t feel like being recognized by other people when buying from the auction. That would be too inconvenient. Those who didn’t wear masks

were just ordinary people.

When Lin Feng walked towards them, everybody glanced at him and immediately ignored him.

“Sir, please sit here.” said the beautiful girl while pointing at a seat which was available.

Lin Feng nodded and sat there. The seat that the beautiful girl had chosen for him was quite good. He could see everything with a single glance from here. He could clearly see all the items that were being sold.

That woman was criminally beautiful. Her beauty and charm would definitely appeal to many men.

Lin Feng moved towards the stone seat that the beautiful woman had shown to him and sat down.

“Huh?” At that moment, Lin Feng had the sensation that the people behind him were staring at him and directing killing intent in his direction. He couldn’t help but slowly turn around.

A young man wearing magnificent clothes was sitting behind him. That young man said coldly: “Get lost, can’t you see that you’re preventing me from seeing the stage?”

Lin Feng was stupefied. The beautiful girl then politely said to the young man in magnificent clothes: “Sir, you can sit on those

seats over there as you please. If you don't like your current one, then I will gladly help you find a better seat."

"Who do you think you are to speak to me like that?" said the young man while slowly turning his head towards the beautiful woman. He looked incredibly cruel.

He then looked at the beautiful woman with an evil smile on his face and said: "You're just a servant, nothing more. Come sit next to me, I will take you home and discipline you."

Chapter 160: Who's furious?

When the girl heard the young man's evil words, her facial expression slightly changed but immediately after, she smiled again and said: "Young master, please don't joke like that."

"Who would waste their time joking with you? Get over here, damn it. You're just a servant, that's all. There is no need act like a noble woman." said the young man sounding impatient and aggressive.

Lin Feng frowned when he heard these words. In the Imperial City, there were many strong cultivators who kept to themselves, but it seemed like there were even more of these arrogant and idiotic noble cultivators, who thought that everyone else was beneath them.

The beautiful woman turned ghastly pale. She bit down on her lips. Her social status was indeed extremely low. In the Continent of the Nine Clouds, being a servant was really one of the lowest positions one could have. Her job was just to welcome every guest with a big friendly smile, her status was closer to a slave than a noble.

Therefore, if that young man wanted to humiliate her, she really had no choice but to accept it without the possibility of defending herself.

She remembered that one of her friends had been abused by someone from one of the noble families. He had bought her then

forced himself upon her. He had been so violent and brutal to her that shortly afterwards she died. What a tragic death! However, the auction market didn't intervene in such situations. Servants were just like slaves and not worth angering someone from a powerful family.

They had been trained to entertain guests. That was their job.

When the noble young man saw the woman's expression, his evil smile started to grow. He then continued, "I remember last time Meng Chong found a servant he liked... he enjoyed her until she literally died. If you don't come over here and do as I tell you, I will send you to the military barracks and we'll see how many men you can satisfy before you die."

The woman was scared to death. Surprisingly, there was someone who wanted to take advantage of her.

At that moment, a murderous light flashed in Lin Feng's eyes. What a shameless animal! That guy was pleased with the fact that he had the power to cause such a vulgar scene. The fact that the people of this world allowed animals like him to continue breathing was tragic. He was the filth and impurity within the world that needed to be cleansed.

"You're not shutting the hell up because you obviously don't know how disgusting it is for other people to hear you speak, right?" said Lin Feng, still wearing his silver mask, while turning around and coldly glancing at the noble young man.

Lin Feng's words surprised the man who coldly said: "Do you know with whom you are talking?"

"Of course, I know." said Lin Feng while nodding which made the noble young man look interested. The noble young man smiled coldly and said: "Since you know who I am, don't you care about the consequences of talking to me that way? Or is it that you lost yourself because of the woman?"

"Do I even need to think about the consequences when talking to a stray dog?" said Lin Feng with a mocking tone.

"Hehehehe....." when the other noble cultivators heard Lin Feng, they couldn't help but giggle and laugh. Lin Feng was utterly humiliating this young noble.

When the noble young man heard the other people laugh, he was stupefied. His expression became even colder and he shouted: "Cripple his cultivation and throw him the hell out of here! Now bring the girl over here!"

"Alright." Someone who was sitting next to him stood up and walked towards Lin Feng.

That cold-looking man was wearing a simple gray robe. His posture was very straight. A whistling sound was emerging from his body as he moved.

Lin Feng was stupefied when he saw the man launching himself

towards Lin Feng as he clearly had murderous intentions. The Qi that he was releasing from his body looked like the deadly Qi which military troops released!

He then remembered that when the noble young man spoke he had mentioned the military barracks. Could it be that he had a military background?

“Wait, wait!” said a loud voice at that moment which made the man in the gray robes stop and turn to the person speaking.

At that moment, a silhouette approached and said to the young man: “Young master Meng, everybody who is here is a distinguished guest participating to our auction. Therefore, within the territory of our marketplace, I must ensure that everybody is safe. Please abide our rules. Sorry for the inconvenience.”

“Of course, if you are interested in that woman, I can give her to you and then you’ll be able to use her as you wish.”

The person who had come was extremely polite which made the young man suddenly look relaxed again. It wouldn’t be a good idea to cause the managers of the auction to lose face. After all, their status was also extremely high.

“Consider yourself lucky.” the noble young man coldly said to Lin Feng. He couldn’t attack Lin Feng in the marketplace but as soon as he left, he would make sure to teach him a good lesson.

“That servant girl can come to me herself. I will make her taste my hard rod in front of everybody here.” said the young man which made the girl turn even paler. She had given up all hope.

She hadn't thought that a simple and innocent sentence would put her in such a difficult situation. Besides, she hadn't made any mistakes, the young man could have sat somewhere else if he didn't like his initial seat and she had offered to help him.

But in this world, being right or wrong wasn't important, strength was important. Evil cultivators could do as they wished as long as they had the strength or status to do so.

“Alright.” said the manager. He then looked at the beautiful woman and said: “Haven't you heard what young master Meng said! Why have you not gone to his side already?”

The beautiful woman was scared to death, she could only stand there shaking. She didn't know what would happen to her if she went over to the young man. How could this world be so wrong?

“Huh?”

The young girl had tears in her eyes and was starting to sniffle. She had to accept that this was the way of this cruel world. She then started walking towards the young man.

When the noble young man saw that, an evil smile appeared on his face.

But after one step, the woman was surprised that she had been stopped.

She only saw that her little and delicate hand had been grabbed by a strong manly hand, preventing her from moving any further.

“Sit here next to me.” said Lin Feng coldly which stupefied the beautiful woman. She looked moved yet hesitant to listen to him.

“I am telling you to sit down here, you have no need to go anywhere else.” said Lin Feng while holding her hand even more tightly and forcing her to sit down. The crowd was astonished.

“I hope you will not make things any more difficult for us.” said the manager of the auction. It seemed like Lin Feng didn’t realize that the manager was doing him a favour. Lin Feng was treated as a distinguished guest. The manager hadn’t considered how Lin Feng felt. The manager had even come in person to protect him, but Lin Feng couldn’t distinguish good from bad, so obviously the manager didn’t care about being polite.

“Make things more difficult?” said Lin Feng while smiling and looking at him. He then asked indifferently: “Am I a distinguished guest here or not?”

“Obviously, otherwise you wouldn’t be sitting here.” said the manager while nodding.

“Indeed, I am a distinguished guest which is why she had to receive me properly as was her job, but because she did, she is going to get punished and you want to give her to that filthy mutt. Don’t you think that your actions are not respecting me at all?” said Lin Feng coldly.

The manager did not care about respecting Lin Feng or him losing face.

That beautiful woman had taken care of Lin Feng and had done her job properly which is why the noble young man had gotten angry. Because of that, she was going to be forced into a fate worse than death. He was done being a bystander to the wrongs of this world, how could Lin Feng not intervene?

From the beginning, the manager hadn’t taken Lin Feng’s thoughts into consideration and had completely ignored him. To avoid making the young man furious, he didn’t care about Lin Feng becoming furious.

When the manager heard what Lin Feng had said, he was surprised. He had indeed not taken Lin Feng’s thoughts into consideration at all. He had only cared about the young man. Besides, he thought that the young man’s status was much higher than that of Lin Feng, so Lin Feng should have shown him gratitude for stepping in.

The manager suddenly looked less pensive and said to the beautiful woman: “Who allowed you to sit? Didn’t you hear what I said? Go to young master Meng.”

The young man had been furious because of Lin Feng, but because of what the manager had said, he felt overjoyed. Lin Feng and his status weren't even on the same level.

“He's really shameless...” said the noble young man in a low voice. He had a warm smile on his face. The manager of the auction market also thought that Lin Feng was being shameless.

Lin Feng was stupefied. He looked at the manager and said indifferently: “What did you just say?”

“Hmph.” snorted the manager. He pointed at the beautiful woman and said coldly: “Let her go to young master Meng.”

“BOOOOOOOM!”

The sound of stone being broken spread in the atmosphere.

Chapter 161: Compassion

When the crowd heard the noise of stone being smashed during the auction, they all looked in Lin Feng's direction.

The crowd was stupefied. That area was reserved for distinguished guests, how could anyone make trouble in that area?

There were also many people who had come with Lin Feng and they couldn't help but be stupefied when they saw Lin Feng smash the stone seating table into pieces. Lin Feng had caused trouble in the Prisoner Arena and was now causing trouble again.

The beautiful woman was astonished as well. A moment ago, she had hidden her tears behind her hands by covering her face and when she put her hands down, she saw the table and chair had been reduced to tiny pieces. She didn't know what to think anymore.

Surprisingly, there was one person who was protecting her at her workplace and it wasn't the manager.

The manager was also surprised to see that Lin Feng had become so furious that he had reduced the furniture to rubble. Because he had ignored Lin Feng again, Lin Feng had become furious and the manager was actually slightly frightened.

He was staring at Lin Feng. He looked cold yet vigilant.

But Lin Feng ignored his facial expression and said coldly: “I brought my daemoniac fire lion to sell it here at your auction market which makes me a distinguished guest here, is this how you treat your distinguished guests though, by ignoring them and humiliating them?”

The people in the crowd were very nervous. The daemoniac fire lion was very attractive.

But they were very curious about Lin Feng. Someone who had brought a daemoniac fire lion had to be a distinguished guest of the highest level, but why was it that he was being ignored by the manager?

“I am one of your distinguished guests, just like him, but from the moment I got here he has not stopped offending me. I did not go out of my way to offend him. You obviously have no idea how to treat your clients, you disregard me to make him happy and want to hand over the waitress that was serving me to him. You never once asked for my opinion or cared about offending me. He was the one in the wrong and yet you grovel to him like a dog. As one of the managers at the auction market, by acting with such disregard for me, do you believe I am unable to sell my daemoniac fire lion anywhere else?” said Lin Feng. He then stood up and said: “Since you have treated me with complete disregard, I want my daemoniac fire lion back. I don’t care about being a distinguished guest here. I will take the daemoniac fire lion and all of the customers that followed me to another auction.”

When the crowd heard these words, they all looked at the beautiful woman on his side, as well as the noble young man who

was sat behind him. They instantly understood that the young man was part of the Meng Clan. This is why the manager did not dare to offend him.

However by doing that way, he was disrespecting Lin Feng who had become furious. He was making Lin Feng lose face. Anyone who was in Lin Feng's position would also be furious, to be ignored and humiliated to such an extent was infuriating.

The manager's face had a rigid expression. That little bastard...

He didn't know that Lin Feng was the esteemed guest who was selling the daemonic fire lion. He hadn't thought that Lin Feng would react so aggressively. The manager had no way to justify his behaviour towards Lin Feng.

At that moment, a silhouette appeared in the area reserved to distinguished guests. It was the old man from the backstage of the auction who had previous spoken with Lin Feng. It was clear that after hearing the noises from backstage he was angry.

"Apologize now! You do not know how to treat esteemed guests." said the old man while sounding extremely angry at the way the manager had behaved.

"Apologize? Do you think words are enough?" said Lin Feng in a cold tone.

The old man's body diffused a cold energy and he transformed

into a shadow.

“BOOOOM!”

The old man’s shadow slapped the manager who had angered Lin Feng across the face. The power contained within this strike sent his body flying backwards.

“What a useless person.” said the old man coldly.

That young manager was a completely not even worth his time. Even though as a manager he has a high status, how could he ignore anyone sitting in this area? How could he completely disregard one customer and side with the other who was causing the trouble? Treating Lin Feng that way in front of everyone was like a slap in the face. How could Lin Feng not be furious? Was no one capable of using their brains?

The manager was crawling on the ground, stood up and wiped the blood from corner of his mouth. He looked furious. He then looked at Lin Feng with murder in his eyes, but he didn’t dare say a word.

“Are you still not begging for forgiveness?” shouted the old man coldly. The manager was stupefied but when he saw the old man’s murderous expression, he started shaking. He looked at Lin Feng and said: “I’m sorry.”

“You initially thought that you were smart to put him first, but

now you know you are nothing but a fool.” said Lin Feng when he heard that the manager wasn’t sincere in his apology. He then added: “Get him out of here.”

“Didn’t you hear him? Get lost!” said the old man. The manager was so furious that his cheeks were burning. He evilly glanced at Lin Feng. Immediately after, he turned around and left. How he looked at the moment was a huge contrast in comparison to a moment ago when he had seemed so majestic.

When the old man saw that the manager was leaving, he smiled at Lin Feng with a regretful expression and said: “Are you satisfied with how things were solved?”

Lin Feng looked at the old man and pointed at the beautiful woman in front of him and said: “That will take it out on her because of me. If I ask you to give her to me, will you refuse?”

“Your intentions are good, of course you can have her.” said the old man while looking at the beautiful woman. She was lucky to have met Lin Feng. Besides, giving her to Lin Feng wasn’t a problem for the auction market as they had plenty of servants to replace her.

Lin Feng slightly nodded looking satisfied. He then said: “I hope that every distinguished guest will be treated the same from now on and not be more degenerates who will cause trouble.”

The noble young man’s pupils shrank and he looked at Lin Feng in a very aggressive way. Lin Feng had humiliated him many

times, calling him a dog and a degenerate.

When the old man heard Lin Feng, he understood what he really meant. He then immediately turned to the young man and said: “Young master Meng, this is the auction market and I hope that you do not plan on making us lose face. We will not accept such a disturbance from you again in the future. What you do outside is your business, but when inside the auction market, you best behave.”

The young man looked at Lin Feng in a particularly evil way and thought that after the auction, he would be able to deal with Lin Feng. He would definitely kill Lin Feng after the auction, this was not finished.

The old man took the silence as an understanding to his warning.

“Thank you, young master Meng, for understanding.” said the old man indifferently. He then immediately added: “I hope that everybody else will be wise enough to respect our rules. Now, I have spoken enough, let the auctions continue.”

When he finished talking, the old man glanced at Lin Feng one last time and his silhouette flashed as he left.

Lin Feng looked at the vanishing silhouette while smiling happily in his heart. The old man had made things extremely clear, if the young man wanted to fight against Lin Feng outside of the auction then he could, but as long as they were inside he would be under the old man’s protection. Lin Feng had made the young master

furious but as they were still inside the auction, he had no choice but to calm down and let Lin Feng sit in peace.

However the moment that Lin Feng left that old man's protection, the young master would have his revenge.

“Thank you, kind Sir.” said the beautiful woman while looking at Lin Feng. The expression in her eyes looked infinitely grateful. She clearly understood that Lin Feng had felt compassion for her which is why he had asked the old man to become her new master. She understood that Lin Feng knew that her situation would be miserable in the future.

Lin Feng was saving her from an extremely tragic destiny.

“I just did what any good person should do, no need to thank me.” said Lin Feng.

But the beautiful woman shook her head showing that she disagreed with him. In her eyes the young man wearing the silver mask was so mysterious!

He looked insolent and arrogant but actually beneath his mask he was hiding many emotions. Looking very strong, he had attracted everybody's attention by smashing that table which had purposely gained the attention of the old man to their current situation.

The beautiful woman was endlessly grateful to Lin Feng. In spite of everything else, Lin Feng had protected her and had humiliated

the noble young man because of her. He had also humiliated the manager of the auction because of her. If Lin Feng hadn't taken care of her, she would have become the property of the young man and her death would have been certain.

Before she used to think that she was just a servant in the auction market; she was just a servant who was only slightly above a slave. If she hadn't been beautiful and kind, then she would have probably been forced into slavery. She had never been respected by anyone, her dignity never mattered to anyone.

But Lin Feng had protected both her life and her dignity. He had saved her from trouble and even thought about her well being. She would be loyal and devoted to Lin Feng ever since the moment she became his.

Lin Feng hadn't thought about any of this. Lin Feng had only done this because the mask could not hide the compassion which was within his heart.

That woman had been humiliated by the young man because of Lin Feng. Lin Feng couldn't stand watching such a beautiful woman get defiled. He could not stand by and watch someone innocent suffer without doing something, such actions were not within his heart.

Chapter 162: Ba Dao

The auction continued. The heavy curtains opened and two silhouettes came out. It was the old man and a slave with a huge marking carved into his face. The marking was “Ba” in huge letters on his face, which was the mark of his enslavement. His arms and legs were restrained with chains.

The huge mark coupled with his long and messy hair made him look like a savage.

“Cultivation slave.” thought Lin Feng stupefied. Surprisingly, there was a cultivation slave at the auction.

Surprisingly, one could buy actual people at the auctions.

At that moment, the crowd became really excited, especially those who had come from the Prisoner Arena and would frequently watch the fights on a regular basis.

“Ba Dao. It’s Ba Dao.” Finally, Ba Dao had reappeared. Part of the crowd had been waiting to see him again for a long time.

The old man glanced at the crowd and saw that they were all very excited, which caused him to have a smile across his face.

“Ba Dao has broken through to the sixth Ling Qi layer. He has won eighty one battles at the Prisoner Arena.” said the old man indifferently, which astonished the crowd. Eighty one victories?

How scary! He had killed eighty one people and had never lost a single battle. How terrifying!

Lin Feng was stupefied as well. Winning eighty one battles was easier said than done, especially against extremely strong cultivators of the sixth Ling Qi layer. Eighty one cultivators of the sixth Ling Qi layer had fallen by his hand; that wasn't a small amount. That was a terrifyingly large number and to make things even more terrifying, he never got to choose his own opponent. Making the blood of eighty one extremely strong cultivators flow had made him as strong as he was at that moment.

“I do not need to talk much about the price. Everyone understands that he will most likely break through to the Xuan Qi layer. When he does, then he will be able to compete with even one of the eight high officials. Everybody can imagine what it's like to possess a slave who is as strong as one of the eight high officials.” said the old man indifferently while smiling and then continued: “For Ba Dao, the starting price is two hundred purity stones of medium quality. Let the auction begin now!”

When the old man finished talking, the crowd became even more enthusiastic and excited. Everybody was fixedly staring at Ba Dao. That's right, in the future, he would be as strong as one of the eight high officials. If he was free, how powerful a figure he would be!

As if he had just realized how enthusiastic and excited the crowd was, Ba Dao slowly raised his head. At that moment, a sharp force burst from his body. The crowd was shocked and got the feeling that it was dangerous to even look at him for too long.

Ba Dao was glancing at the crowd. When he looked at Lin Feng, Lin Feng had the feeling that Ba Dao's sharp glare could cut through anything. It gave Lin Feng a shiver down his spine.

That was definitely blade force.

While Ba Dao and Lin Feng were looking at each other, blade force and sword force filled the entire atmosphere. It was very sharp.

But very quickly, Ba Dao glanced at other people which suddenly relieved Lin Feng. His heart was pounding.

“How strong and powerful! That slave can control blade force. His force is also extremely thick and powerful.” thought Lin Feng.

No wonder that he had won eighty one battles and never lost a single time. He could control blade force much better than even Mu Fan. It seemed like his blade force made him invincible against cultivators of his own layer.

If there was a person like him who could use energy attacks, he would be able to oppress extremely strong cultivators who are even a few layers higher.

The noble young man behind Lin Feng was extremely excited. A slave of the sixth Ling Qi layer who had killed eighty one people? How tempting! If he could buy that slave, who would probably

break through to the Xuan Qi layer in the future, he would look imposing and majestic when ordering him around.

“Three hundred purity stones of medium quality.” said one person. He immediately raised the starting bid by one hundred purity stones.

“Five hundred purity stones of medium quality.” said another person without hesitation. That price was already extremely low.

A slave of the sixth Ling Qi layer wasn't necessarily very valuable, but a slave who had killed eighty one people and would probably break through to the Xuan Qi layer in the future was extremely valuable.

“One thousand purity stones of medium quality.” said another voice sounding detached, which made Lin Feng's heart twitch for a second. These people were really rich. Lin Feng remembered how poor he was in the past and how miserable that was. He was now much better off, but he still did not have the money that these noble cultivators had.

The one who had just said that bid would probably spend the money of his family to buy that slave.

“Five thousand purity stones of medium quality.” said another voice just at the moment when Lin Feng was thinking about how high the previous price was. He was stunned.

Five thousand purity stones was a terrifying price. That was enough to practice in the cultivation tower for as long as you wished.

Besides, that price had come from the noble young man behind Lin Feng. It was young master Meng who wanted to buy the slave.

When the crowd heard that price, they were all astonished. Many people were making a wry smile. At five thousand purity stones of medium quality, they couldn't afford to pay more. That price was even slightly expensive for the slave.

The old man uncommunicatively looked at the crowd, smiled and then said: "Young master Meng has raised the bid to five thousand purity stones of medium quality. This is a slave who, in the future, will break through to the Xuan Qi layer. Is there anyone else who wants to bid?" said the old man trying to tempt the others into bidding, but everybody remained silent. After all, five thousand purity stones of medium quality was a terrifying price.

"Five thousand and one." said a calm voice.

The crowd was stupefied. They looked in the direction of the person who had just bid. The bid had come from directly in front of the young noble man, and it belonged to Lin Feng.

The young man's pupils shrank. He coldly stared at Lin Feng's back.

“Five thousand, one hundred purity stones of medium quality.”

“Five thousand, one hundred and one.” said Lin Feng as calm as before.

The crowd felt like they were watching a marvelous show. It seemed like Lin Feng was increasing the bid by a single purity stone each time on purpose.

“Five thousand, five hundred.” said the young man sounding colder and colder.

“Five thousand, five hundred and one.” said Lin Feng sounding calm and indifferent.

The young man looked even more ferocious. But at that moment, the man next to him, who was wearing the gray robes, loudly interrupted him.

“Young master, the auctions are just one method.”

The young man was surprised and then started smiling coldly. Indeed, if he wanted the slave, he didn't necessarily need to get him through the auctions.

The crowd was stupefied. He had probably said that only to scare Lin Feng.

The young man had decided not to bid again. A short moment later, the old man said: “Congratulations. The slave is yours.”

“Leave him in the back for when I leave. You can auction my daemoniac fire lion and take the purity stones for the slave from its sale.” said Lin Feng indifferently.

The old man remained silent for a few seconds and then said: “No problem.”

The price of the daemoniac fire lion was always going to be much higher than the price of a slave. After all, when the daemoniac fire lion reached the Xuan Qi level at maturity, it would become a god like existence.

When the daemoniac fire lion came out from the backstage, the crowd became extremely excited and enthusiastic. They were almost going insane with excitement.

In the crowd, there was one person with long golden hair who looked very strange with a golden glow in his eyes.

The young man with the golden hair whispered indifferently: “Nobody can take that daemoniac fire lion from me today.”

The old man on the stage was calmly looking at the excited crowd. He waited until the excitement of the crowd reached its climax. He then raised his hand to make the crowd calm down and immediately said: “I don’t need to say much about the value of this

daemonic fire lion. I am convinced that many of you have already seen it at the Prisoner Arena and dreamed of having it for yourself. Finally, it is now available at our auction market. Now, everybody has an opportunity to win this fierce beast. As it matures, it will reach the Xuan Qi level and maybe even breakthrough to the higher Tian Qi level.”

The old man was extremely excited too. He didn't understand how the daemonic fire lion of the Bai Clan had ended up in Lin Feng's hands. The Bai Clan would have never given it to someone who wasn't a member of their clan. They also wouldn't ever dream of taking it to the auction. It would always remain within their clan.

The old man had no idea of what had happened at the Prisoner Arena. Back then, the young man in yellow clothes had wanted to give the daemonic fire lion to Mu Fan as a gift but it hadn't worked. Lin Feng had killed Mu Fan... But what made the young man in yellow clothes feel even more depressed is that he was also at the auction market and was forced to witness the sale of the daemonic fire lion. He hadn't had a chance to steal the beast back from Lin Feng, as what he had expected was that Lin Feng was going to use the daemonic fire lion himself and not immediately sell it.

He had never thought that before he had a chance to act, he would see the daemonic fire lion on sale at the auction!

Chapter 163: Horrifying Price!

The old man looked at the crowd who were bursting with excitement. He then finally said: “Alright, the starting price for the daemonic fire lion is five hundred purity stones of medium quality. Now, let the auction begin!”

When the old man finished talking, the crowd became extremely agitated.

“One thousand!”

“One thousand two hundred!”

“One thousand five hundred!”

Many people were quickly raising the price but everybody knew that the real bidding had yet to begin. How could a few thousand purity stones of medium quality be enough for a daemonic fire lion?

Lin Feng looked calm and indifferent on his seat. He had underestimated the price of the daemonic fire lion, but after he had seen the price of the Ba Dao, he had understood that the price of the daemonic fire lion was going to be extremely high.

The beautiful woman next to Lin Feng was looking at him. The eyes under that silver mask surprisingly looked extremely calm when watching this scene.

“Master, how should I refer to you?” asked the beautiful girl to Lin Feng.

“Refer to me?” thought Lin Feng surprised. He then immediately said: “You can call me Master Feng.”

“Master Feng, my name is Yi Xue.” said the beautiful girl in a sweet voice. Lin Feng slightly nodded and at that moment, the price of the daemonic fire lion had already been raised to three thousand purity stones. It wouldn’t last too long until it reached the same price that was paid for the slave.

The young master Meng glanced at Lin Feng with a cold smile across his face.

He stood up and walked towards the edge of the area reserved for all the distinguished guests. He put his hand on the railing and said: “Today, I, Meng Cong, am determined to obtain this daemonic fire lion. Nobody should try to make me unhappy, otherwise it will not end well for that person. If you don’t make me unhappy, then there will not be a problem and we can be good friends after the auction.”

When the crowd heard what Meng Cong said, they were surprised. What a bastard! He was suddenly threatening the entire crowd. This area was filled with noble and powerful cultivators and yet he dared to threaten them all. They had the choice: become his friend or become his enemy.

Many people were staring at Meng Cong but when they thought that he was from the Meng Clan and was a distinguished guest for the auction, most people chose to remain silent.

There was only one aristocratic family in the Imperial City and their family name was Meng!

“Now, I say three thousand and one purity stones of medium quality.” said Meng Cong with an indifferent smile on his face while glancing at Lin Feng. Lin Feng had dared to outbid him for the slave that he wanted so he would prevent Lin Feng from obtaining a high price on his daemonic fire lion.

The old man looked at Meng Cong from the stage. The fact that he was behaving like this had made the old man feel uncomfortable.

“The daemonic fire lion is now mine.” said Meng Cong sounding proud. Suddenly, a strong and imposing voice said: “Four thousand purity stones of medium quality.”

“Who said that?!” said Meng Cong with an extremely cold tone. As proud he was a moment ago, he wouldn’t have thought that someone would dare to make him lose face. That was intolerable.

Meng Cong glanced at the crowd looking for the person who had bid higher than him.

“I said that.” said a cold and indifferent voice. Immediately after,

a silhouette in the crowd slowly stood up. It was a man with golden hair. He looked strange and it seemed like he was surrounded by a golden light.

When the crowd saw him, their pupils shrank. It was him!

“Kuang Shi.” Meng Cong’s eyes shrank.

“What do you want?” said Kuang Shi. His golden eyes were looking directly towards the area where Meng Cong was sitting. Meng Cong was surprised. His facial expression had frozen, he then said: “Hehe, you are a brilliant disciple of the Wan Shou Men Sect. Since you want that daemoniac fire lion, I will not make you lose face and I will let you have it.”

Kuang Shi turned around and ignored Meng Cong which made him even more furious. He was being humiliated over and over again.

“Hehehehehe.” some laughing and giggling sounds spread in the atmosphere. While everybody was silent, this laughter sounded particularly sharp in Meng Cong’s ears. His face was disgusting to look at. He slowly turned around and looked towards Lin Feng.

“What are you laughing at?”

“I’m laughing at people who proudly say words that are worth less than a fart.” Lin Feng said sharply.

Meng Cong was extremely aggressive and had threatened everyone within the crowd, but once Kuang Shi had come out, he had taken back everything he had said. He was even using the excuse that he just didn't want to make the other person lose face. It was just ridiculous and laughable.

The Wan Shou Men Sect was one of the strongest sects in the Xue Yue Country and they were considered extremely strong even in the Imperial City. Even though Meng Cong's status was extraordinary, even he didn't dare to offend a member of the Wan Shou Men Sect.

At that moment, Meng Cong was silent. On that day, he had already been humiliated a few times by Lin Feng and had not been able to regain face. He initially wanted to get the daemoniac fire lion to regain face and wanted to take advantage of his social status to threaten everybody within the crowd. He hadn't thought that he would be humiliated again, but this time by Kuang Shi. And even after that, he had been humiliated again by Lin Feng who loudly made fun of him. Meng Cong had made his entire clan lose face.

But nobody took his mood into consideration. The old man smiled indifferently. He was still standing on the stage and said: "Four thousand purity stones of medium quality, is there anyone else who wishes to bid on the daemoniac fire lion? This daemoniac fire lion, I guarantee it will reach the Xuan level in the future and could even reach the Tian level. It would become the overlord of the Xue Yue Country."

"Four thousand five hundred." said someone after hearing the old man's words which were very tempting. Even though they

probably wouldn't be able to get the lion from Kuang Shi, they still might get lucky. That was a daemoniac fire lion, who didn't want to try their luck?

"Five thousand." said Kuang Shi looking expressionless. If he wanted something, he would definitely get it. Even Meng Cong had had to retreat because he understood Kuang Shi's temperament.

"Six thousand." said an old man in a black chang pao while gnashing his teeth.

"Ten thousand." said Kuang Shi calmly which stupefied the entire crowd. When he said that, he looked absolutely unperturbed.

"No wonder people thought that the Yun Hai Sect was one of the sects with the least influence in the Xue Yue Country. It seems like it was really true." thought Lin Feng. The Yun Hai Sect was really surpassed in wealth. The Yun Hai Sect lacked natural resources. It didn't have any vein of the earth for its disciples to practice within. A single disciple of the Wan Shou Men Sect could spend ten thousand purity stones of medium quality while remaining unperturbed. The Yun Hai Sect still regarded purity stones of lower quality as extremely valuable.

"Eleven thousand." said the old man in black chang pao looking angry while exhaling through his gnashing teeth. His strength had already reached a bottleneck and he needed the aid of a ferocious beast.

“Fifteen thousand.” said Kuang Shi. The crowd was astonished. Immediately after, some people smiled wryly. As expected, nobody could compete with that guy. Fifteen thousand is a sum that many wealthy and noble people couldn’t afford... Coming from a single person and not a clan, it was even more monstrous. Nobody wanted to continue bidding after that.

Finally, the final price for the daemonic fire lion ended at fifteen thousand purity stones of medium quality.

Lin Feng was smiling. He was very satisfied by the price. He had promised a hundred purity stones of medium quality to the crowd of people who had come with him. He had never thought that he would manage to get such a monstrous price.

He originally thought that if he could sell it for four thousand purity stones of medium quality, then it would be a great sum for him.

He walked towards the backstage with Yi Xue. At that moment, a group of people came out with a pile of purity stones.

“There should be Nine thousand, three hundred purity stones of medium quality here. You can check yourself.” said the old man while looking at Lin Feng. Lin Feng smiled. Nine thousand was much more than what he had anticipated.

He took the purity stones and instantly the purity stones disappeared. The old man was stupefied. He looked at Lin Feng with a strange look.

“I must be too old. My sight is getting blurry.” said the old man while staring at Lin Feng’s eyes under his silver mask. He had given so many purity stones to Lin Feng, that wasn’t easy to carry. He hadn’t thought that Lin Feng had a Na stone.

Ordinary people didn’t possess a Na stones. Lin Feng was so mysterious.

Lin Feng smiled under his silver mask. The old man didn’t ask much either. He pointed at Ba Dao and said: “He’s also yours now. Take him with you.”

At that moment, the old man was curious. Ba Dao had already broken through to the sixth Ling Qi layer, would he obey to Lin Feng who was only at the fifth Ling Qi Layer? Was Lin Feng strong enough?

“Come with me.” said Lin Feng while looking at Ba Dao and sounding indifferent. Immediately after, he left and took the lead.

Ba Dao was already unchained, he looked expressionless and was following behind Lin Feng.

A short moment after leaving the auction market, Lin Feng turned around and stopped walking. He coldly looked at Ba Dao through his silver mask. Ba Dao looked cold and expressionless.

If a cultivation slave was unchained, he could do whatever he

wished. He didn't need to obey a master. After all, a cultivation slave was a human being!

Chapter 164: The Dangerous Follower

Lin Feng looked calm and serene under his silver mask. Ba Dao looked calm as well and didn't look agitated in the slightest.

Lin Feng wanted to say something and then immediately asked: "Do you want to be free?"

Ba Dao frowned. The letters that were carved onto his face made him look extremely cold.

Ba Dao remained silent and uncommunicative. This was his way of staying obedient. Of course he wanted to be free. Who enjoyed being someone's slave?

"I'm not the one who carved these letters onto your face. I don't force people into becoming slaves." said Lin Feng while looking at Ba Dao, who remained silent. He then slowly added: "If you want to leave, you can turn around and leave now. I will not try to convince you to stay, and I will definitely not try to stop you. If you want to stay with me, then you will need to follow me."

When Yi Xue heard what Lin Feng said, she was surprised. She was looking at Lin Feng in a strange way. He was surprisingly willing to let Ba Dao go even though he had spent over five thousand purity stones of medium quality to buy him. Five thousand purity stones of medium quality was a great quantity and was enough to buy a great deal of strong slaves.

Ba Dao seemed like he was going to say something. His bestial

eyes were staring at Lin Feng. He looked pensive.

“I am only going to give you this single chance to make up your mind. If you want to leave, leave now. If you want to stay with me, then you will follow me and never betray me.” continued Lin Feng. He would give Ba Dao only one chance and no matter what his choice was, he would have to live with it.

Ba Dao's choice would influence his future destiny.

Ba Dao's facial expression became sharper. His cold and aggressive eyes were intensely staring at Lin Feng through the silver mask. Lin Feng's eyes looked as calm as before.

Lin Feng could lose five thousand purity stones of medium quality if Ba Dao left him, but if he decided to stay with Lin Feng, he would have to follow Lin Feng for the rest of his life and would not be allowed to regret his choice.

Destiny often depends on choices. If Lin Feng hadn't bought him at the auction, then Ba Dao would still have been a slave, but now, Lin Feng was giving him the opportunity to regain his freedom. However, if he decided to stay, then he must follow Lin Feng and never betray him. Lin Feng couldn't afford spending so many purity stones on someone who would only cause him trouble in the future, as his virtue had limits.

Lin Feng and Ba Dao were staring at each other. Their expressions were as sharp as blades, and the atmosphere was incredibly intense. In the atmosphere surrounding them, a cold

and deadly Qi filled the air. Yi Xue started shivering just from the atmosphere created by these two staring at each other.

How cold... That coldness didn't make a person's body feel cold though, the cold penetrated deep into the soul.

"I will follow you, and I will never betray you." said Ba Dao after having remained silent for a while. His sharp and cold expression vanished. His voice was soft, and he was nodding to Lin Feng.

"Alright." said Lin Feng while smiling. Lin Feng had spent over five thousand purity stones for this slave. If he had decided not to stay with him, then Lin Feng would be slightly disappointed. Now that Ba Dao had decided to stay with him, it was obviously the best outcome for Lin Feng.

"Remember what you said and make sure to never go back on your words. You could have had your freedom, but you chose to stay. You chose to stay and follow me. Since it's that way, if you betray me in the future, I will be forced to punish you." said Lin Feng coldly. The air around him became much colder too.

Ba Dao remained silent and nodded. He understood what Lin Feng meant.

On that day, if Lin Feng hadn't been there, he would have been sold to someone else. If somebody else had bought him, then they would have wanted to exploit him as a slave, but Lin Feng had given him his freedom. Lin Feng wasn't treating him like a slave and gave him a choice. Lin Feng was treating him like he would

anyone else, and he was not being treated like a slave.

Ba Dao was just a slave. He had his name carved into his face. If he had chosen to leave Lin Feng, then no matter where he went, he would still be treated like a slave. People would have tried to capture him again, and he would have never been able to break free. If he was to gain his freedom, he would never be able to show his face again. The markings on his face had made him a slave and that is how people would treat him.

Therefore, the choice that Lin Feng had given to Ba Dao was to follow Lin Feng, who would not treat him as a slave, or attempt to find a place which would treat him as mercifully as Lin Feng.

Since it was Ba Dao's decision and he had been given the right to choose, he would never be able to regret his choice. He had chosen his destiny for himself. Lin Feng had not attempted to influence his decision.

"Let's go." said Lin Feng while starting to walk. Yi Xue and Ba Dao quickly followed behind him.

At that moment, Ba Dao started walking slightly faster, and he moved close to Lin Feng without completely catching up and said from behind: "There are some people who are following us."

"I know." said Lin Feng, who sounded indifferent and didn't even turn his head. Ba Dao looked at him in a strange way.

Yi Xue's heart was also beating faster. She couldn't help but turn her head around.

She just saw that about a hundred meters away, a man in grey robes was following them while glaring at the group. He didn't even try to hide, acting as if he didn't care about being spotted by them.

"It's him." said the beautiful Yi Xue. The man behind them was the man in gray robes who was with Meng Cong before.

"Ignore him." said Lin Feng sounding indifferent. Yi Xue turned around. She couldn't understand how Lin Feng could remain so indifferent. She found it uncomfortable.

"He's broken through to the seventh Ling Qi layer. His blood vessels are very strong and he is filled with power. The Qi that he keeps releasing is very strong and thick. A deadly Qi is emerging from his body as well. He must be very used to killing, so he will be very hard to defeat. It would be very difficult for me to fight against him, and if the battle lasts for too long, then I would probably lose." said Ba Dao in a low voice.

Ba Dao was surprisingly able to determine other people's strength and abilities only by looking at them. Lin Feng was stupefied. He looked at Ba Dao with an incredibly strange face.

"Well, do you know how strong I am?" asked Lin Feng.

“Fifth Ling Qi layer. You have a strong and thick Qi. Your blood vessels are extremely vigorous. Besides, it seems like all the energy within your body is in perfect fusion. If I am not mistaken, it seems like you understand sword force to an extremely profound level. Any ordinary cultivator of the sixth Ling Qi layer would be unable to defeat you and maybe even myself. I would not guarantee that I could defeat you in a fight.”

Ba Dao said these words very calmly, which stupefied Lin Feng. It seemed like when he was describing the strength of the man in gray robes, it was very precise. With only a glance, Ba Dao could clearly determine a person’s actual strength before actually fighting against them.

Yi Xue was looking at Lin Feng in a strange way. He had just broken through to the fifth Ling Qi layer, and he surprisingly had dared to buy a slave of the sixth Ling Qi layer. Besides, he looked extremely confident and careless.

“We’ll solve the problem.”

Lin Feng didn’t speak much more. After that simple sentence, he started to accelerate his pace and kept walking forwards.

Besides Lin Feng and the two others, the man in gray robes was surprised and then immediately smiled coldly. He said: “I can easily catch up with you. Do you think that you can escape?”

Lin Feng was walking with a slave of the sixth Ling Qi layer and had over nine thousand purity stones of medium quality on him,

this was definitely tempting.

The man in gray robes started walking on the tips of his toes. His entire body looked extremely skilful and agile while floating over the street like a gentle breeze. He was moving closer and closer to Lin Feng.

But at that moment, Lin Feng and the two others changed their direction and went inside a restaurant.

The man in the gray robes frowned. He then started walking even faster and finally arrived at the restaurant. He looked inside the restaurant but didn't see Lin Feng and the others.

“First floor!”

The man in the gray robes raised his head and looked at the flight of stairs when he saw a handsome young man standing around the stairs with a smile on his face.

“Get lost!” said the man in the gray robes while walking towards the flight of stairs and moving past the handsome smiling boy.

While the man in the gray robes was walking up the stairs, a silhouette appeared at the top of the stairs. That person was holding a long dagger. An extremely strong and sharp Qi was emerging from it. Blade Qi filled the atmosphere and an overwhelming blade force was present, which made the people in the restaurant shrink back in fear.

“What sharp blade Qi and he is actually using blade force!”

When the man in gray robes saw Ba Dao, he smiled coldly and said: “Ba Dao, join our young master Meng, he will be sure to treat you well. There is no need to bring about your own destruction.”

Ba Dao ignored what the man in gray robes said and raised his long dagger into the air. An extremely sharp force was being released from it. While force was continuously flowing from his dagger, the atmosphere continued vibrating under the pressure.

“Pshhh...!”

The man in the gray robes jumped into the air.

Ba Dao's dagger released a magnificent light, which rushed through the air like a meteor. The mark of a blade suddenly appeared where the man in gray robes once stood.

A rumbling noise spread down the flight of stairs. Suddenly, the rumbling noise stopped. The man in the gray robes saw the power of that strike and then shouted: “Die!”

While shouting toward Ba Dao, the man in the gray robes made a quick movement with his hands. An incredibly strong force emerged from his hands and moved straight towards Ba Dao's dagger.

Under the pressure of the force released by the man in gray robes, Ba Dao's body was slowly being pushed down.

The man in gray robes raised his hand and was about to launch an attack, but at that moment, he had the sensation that something dangerous was behind him.

His heart started to beat faster. He suddenly had the impression that he hadn't been vigilant enough and it had almost cost him his life.

He turned around and immediately saw the handsome young man he had seen a moment ago. He had forgotten about all about him, but at that moment, the young man's black eyes looked expressionless and cold. They were filled with endless desolation.

His heart cruelly twitched once again.

Chapter 165: Frozen to Death

“It’s him.”

The heart of the man in gray robes was unceasingly pounding. He finally understood that he had forgotten about someone. He had surprisingly forgotten his initial target, Lin Feng. It was the friendly looking and handsome young man he had just encountered at the bottom of stairs.

At that moment, blade force filled the atmosphere once again. It seemed like the blade force was lacerating the entire atmosphere. The man in the gray robes was still floating mid air. He did not know what to do, no matter if it was Ba Dao’s extreme strength or the young man with the expressionless eyes, he had the feeling that both were extremely dangerous.

He suddenly had an idea and finally came to a decision. Ba Dao who had broken through to the sixth Ling Qi layer was the one who scared him the most. If Ba Dao was behind him then it would be way too dangerous. Eighty one people of the sixth Ling Qi Layer had died by Ba Dao’s hands. He used to be a slave at the Prisoner Arena, where his life was at stake during each battle. He was not someone who could be taken lightly.

“Ahhh!”

The man in the gray robes was strongly shaking. His robes were fluttering in the air. His rigid body suddenly released a violent and deadly Qi.

The extremely strong attack of the man in the gray robes moved through the air straight towards Ba Dao.

“Rumble Rumble Rumble!”

The entire restaurant was shaking. The force that was released by the two fighters was ripping the ornaments in the restaurant and the furniture was being crushed. People were moving farther away from the fight. The tables and chairs where they were sitting were breaking apart and some even exploded under the pressure. The blade force was extremely cold.

Under the pressure of Ba Dao’s dagger, the man in the gray robes progressively moved back down the stairs. He glanced towards Lin Feng and saw that Lin Feng was moving towards him as well. He looked as cold and expressionless which sent shivers down the man’s spine.

“Heavy Mountain Fist!” shouted the man in the gray robes. He surprisingly still had the ability to attack Lin Feng from such a dangerous position. His fist attack was extremely powerful.

At that moment, he had a strange and evil expression within his eyes.

“Pssssh!” At that moment, a clear and distinct sound spread through the atmosphere. It was as if something was being cut apart. The man in the gray robes wanted to move but couldn’t.

The forearm of the man in the gray robes was firmly being held by Lin Feng and his other hand was holding a mysterious dagger. The glow that it was diffusing couldn't be seen because the blade of that dagger had already penetrated into the throat of the man in the gray robes. Only the handle of the mysterious dagger could be seen.

The eyes of the man in the gray robes were still looking at Lin Feng's incomplete shadow. That attack had been so quick. How could he possibly be that quick? Besides, how could he dodge his fist attack so easily?

"In your next life, you should serve a righteous person." said Lin Feng coldly while pulling his mysterious dagger out of the man's throat. Blood poured onto the ground. The man's throat immediately collapsed and blood gushed forth. Even though he was dead, both his eyes were still open as if he was unable to close his eyes in death and pass on peacefully.

Lin Feng wiped the blood from his dagger and put it away. His facial expression became cold and indifferent once again. He was calmly looking at the man's corpse.

That man was of the seventh Qi layer. He was extremely powerful. If Ba Dao hadn't been there to distract him then Lin Feng would have never been able to defeat him so easily.

At that moment, Ba Dao and Yi Xue moved down the stairs. They looked at Lin Feng's handsome face and were deeply moved.

What a genius. Lin Feng was only about seventeen years old but his strength was monstrous. He had killed the man with a single deadly strike. He had immediately gone for the man's vitals.

Ba Dao knew he had become powerful over time. He had evolved in an environment full of blood and fighting. That's how he had become so powerful. But Lin Feng, his Qi and blade force were very dense and his fighting abilities were extremely high. His attacks were almost masterful.

A light also flashed in Yi Xue's eyes. A moment before, she thought that Lin Feng was weak because he had only broken through to the fifth Ling Qi layer but at that moment, she didn't have the same impression any longer. She also hadn't thought that such a handsome face was hiding under the silver mask, which made her unable to break her gaze from Lin Feng, she couldn't look anywhere else.

"Let's go." said Lin Feng. After saying that, he started walking and left the restaurant.

Ba Dao and Yi Xue followed behind him like before. They were closely following Lin Feng. Behind them there was only a corpse lying on the ground in the restaurant.

In the blink of an eye, a strong cultivator of the seventh Ling Qi layer had been slaughtered by two people who were weaker than him, in the presence of the entire restaurant.

No matter if it was the slave with the name 'Ba Dao' marked on his face or the handsome and delicate looking young man, the crowd just had the impression that they had just dreamt what had happened.

Suddenly, a black silhouette appeared and moved inside the restaurant. The crowd was surprised again.

That black silhouette hadn't emitted any noise, just like a ghost or a spirit. It had just appeared in front of them. Such a thing was terrifying.

"He died!" Said the mysterious silhouette.

When the black silhouette saw the corpse on the floor, it looked irresolute.

The hand of the black silhouette moved and a strong energy was released. It enveloped the dead body and immediately the body disappeared.

The entire crowd was incredibly surprised. A mixture of veneration and dread filled thoughts rushed through the minds of the onlookers.

"Xuan Qi layer!"

That black silhouette was of the Xuan Qi layer and seemed to have been following the people from a moment before.

The black silhouette flickered and disappeared from the crowd's vision. A short instant later, it appeared outside of the restaurant. It was looking into the distance then the silhouette flickered again and it disappeared from that location.

Suddenly, the black silhouette was surprised and stopped moving.

Because at that moment, there was a calm looking person who had blocked the path of the black silhouette.

That person was whiter than snow and it was floating in the air like a celestial being.

It was a woman and the black silhouette could only see her back. Even if one wanted to pass, it seemed impossible. She looked like a glacier separating him from his desired location.

“How monstrous.”

The black silhouette could determine that that holy and pure silhouette was an extremely strong cultivator of the Xuan Qi layer. She was very dangerous.

“You followed us for such a long time. Now you have finally stopped.”

That holy and pure silhouette slowly turned around. Her face was covered by a fine veil. People could only guess what was underneath and would be very eager to gaze under the veil.

The black silhouette hadn't been so anxious for a very long time but at that moment his heart was pounding inside his chest.

Breathtaking, stunning!

At that moment, a stunning body was slowly moving towards the black silhouette.

The atmosphere was becoming colder and colder. Following every single movement, a freezing coldness invaded the atmosphere. The atmosphere around that person was covered with frost. That was a very strange coldness. Even strong cultivators who were far away were looking in that direction gasping in astonishment.

The expression of the black silhouette seemed to have solidified and a shiver ran down his spine. The silhouette transformed and shot away like an arrow being released from a bow. He released a violent energy from his hand as he retreated.

“Ice Heart!”

The white silhouette just said these two words. At that moment, the body of the black silhouette started shaking from head to toe. These two words seemed to have encircled his heart with a layer of

ice as if it was trapped by the ice.

An ice-cold Qi was released in the atmosphere. The black silhouette resisted the extreme coldness. The energy that had been released from his hand had turned white and had frozen inside the atmosphere. This scene looked like a dream.

“Kacha, kacha.”

The ice in the atmosphere was growing thicker and thicker. It seemed like the entire atmosphere was covered with a layer of ice. The energy emerging from the hand of the black silhouette were bombarding against the white ice.

But that freezing white ice seemed to be endless, as if the entire world belonged to this ice.

“Ice reigns over the World.”

A cold and detached voice came from that stunning silhouette. The entire atmosphere suddenly froze solid and there was not a movement to be seen.

The black silhouette suddenly sensed an extreme coldness invade his body. He quickly thrust his palm forward. A pure energy started pouring out from the black silhouette's palm. But in that world of ice, everything seemed to belong to the ice. The ice was becoming thicker and thicker. It seemed like the entire world was turning into a single block of ice, oppressing the body of the black

silhouette. Finally, his body and heart were completely frozen.

What did they see?

That world of ice was actually a gigantic block of ice as big as a house. Such a thing seemed like a dream.

After a long time, that block of ice finally started to crack and rapidly started melting under the hot sun. Ice cold water started to flow down onto the ground.

In the middle, there was a black silhouette which had been frozen in the moment of its death. This person was already long dead but had been frozen in the scene of their own death.

That black silhouette had once been an extremely strong cultivator of the Xuan Qi layer but at that moment, it was only a frozen corpse. It was silent and breathless, it was completely lifeless!

Chapter 166: Slave Exchange

Lin Feng had no idea what had happened after he had left the restaurant. Even though he had a little bit of a sixth sense, he had never sensed that a cultivator of the Xuan Qi layer was following him.

Lin Feng hadn't realized that Meng Qing was also following him the whole time. She had been following him since the moment when he left the Celestial Academy. She had never once left his side.

Lin Feng had put on his silver mask again, which gave him a majestic and cold appearance. He wasn't the only one for whom that was the case; it was the same for Ba Dao, who was on his side, who was now wearing a bronze mask. Ba Dao looked ferocious and savage, especially when wearing the bronze mask.

"Ba Dao, except for auctions and fights to the death, are there other places where cultivation slaves of the Prisoner Arena end up?" asked Lin Feng while walking down the street.

"Yes." muttered Ba Dao irresolutely. He then immediately nodded and said: "No need to talk about those who have already died in the arena. The ones who are docile and obedient enough are allowed to stay inside their cages to be sold. Those who aren't sold at an auction will eventually be sent to the black market. Many of them are sold on the black market to people who need cultivation slaves."

Lin Feng looked at Ba Dao. It was clear that he was very stubborn and hardly the docile type.

“Where can we buy slaves?” asked Lin Feng.

“I don’t know.” replied Ba Dao while shaking his head. He then added: “I have never been a witness to slaves being bought before. I am just familiar with what happened to me.”

Lin Feng looked pensive. Then, Yi Xue, who was standing on his side, said: “There is a slave exchange where you can purchase slaves, it’s widely known in this district. The wealthy and noble cultivators go to the slave exchange when they need slaves. They can exchange purity stones or other items and receive slaves.”

“Exchange?” Lin Feng was surprised. Surprisingly, there were places called slave exchanges.

“Yi Xue, take me to the slave exchange.” said Lin Feng indifferently.

Yi Xue was surprised. She looked at Lin Feng and immediately nodded: “Alright.”

They immediately started walking. Soon, they had arrived at the slave exchange.

Lin Feng could already see the slave exchange from a distance, as the roads of the city were vast and wide. When he saw the slave

exchange, his pupils shrank.

On both sides of the road, there was a large number of cages with slaves inside. Their powerful masters were sitting there looking indifferent, waiting for people to come and buy their slaves.

In that place, slaves were like animals. There was nothing humane about the slave exchange.

These slaves were war prisoners, prisoners sentenced to death, or people who had offended an influential clan. For example, those who had survived the massacre of the Yun Hai Sect had been turned into slaves by Duan Tian Lang. These survivors were humiliated and maltreated to the extent that they wished that they could die. Many of them did.

Besides, the exchange marketplace was very busy. People were unceasingly walking on the central road and buying slaves. There were some very strong slaves and they belonged to the noble families that had purchased them.

Lin Feng and the two others entered the slave exchange. They glanced at all the cages on both sides. There were all sorts of slaves, skinny ones as well as robust ones. There were also extremely attractive male and female slaves. The nobles of the city who were fond of beauties could buy them in order to enjoy various pleasures.

“Master Feng, this area is for slaves who are mainly at the Qi layer. Slaves of the Ling Qi layer are very expensive. The large

clans of the Imperial City have the monopoly over them. Don't even give them a look."

At that moment, Yi Xue explained these things to Lin Feng. She didn't know why Lin Feng would want to come to that place. However, if Lin Feng was going to buy slaves, then it was no use to look at slaves of the Qi Layer.

"Alright, let's go and see the slaves of the Ling Qi Layer." replied Lin Feng. He started walking again, but he didn't feel comfortable, and he actually felt very uneasy seeing the scenes around him. Each and every slave was staring at their group. It was clear that these slaves had been mistreated, and the master looked truly disgusting. This was the impurity of the world.

Shortly after, they arrived at the middle of the slave exchange. It didn't look like the outside area at all. While the rest of the exchange was like a market, the area here was a small ancient castle.

"Master, this is the biggest place to exchange slaves. Eighty percent of them are slaves of the Ling Qi layer."

Yi Xue whispered these words into Lin Feng's ears. Outside of the ancient castle, a silhouette was intensely staring at Lin Feng and the others. When a slave merchant heard Yi Xue call Lin Feng "Master Feng", he quickly interrupted: "Master, did you come here to purchase slaves? I can guarantee you that you will find very high quality slaves here."

“Show me.” said Lin Feng indifferently. His eyes under his silver mask were fearless.

“As you wish, master. Please follow me.” said the slave merchant sounding extremely polite while smiling. Lin Feng and the two others entered the building, which looked like a small fortress.

The interior was huge. Only half of the cages were locked while others had been left open. The interior was full of slaves. They were all sitting on the floor looking sluggish. When they saw Lin Feng enter, a deadly Qi started invading the entire atmosphere.

“Master, you can choose one from here. The number of chains that they have on their body represents their strength. If they have one chain, it means that they have broken through to the first Ling Qi layer, or if they have five chains, it means that they have broken through to the fifth Ling Qi layer.” said the slave merchant to Lin Feng.

Lin Feng could look at the slaves and determine their strength depending on the number of chains on their body without them having to move.

“There are two hundred slaves of the Ling Qi layer here. The strongest ones are at the sixth Ling Qi layer. Their masters must be from the influential clans.” thought Lin Feng as he roughly glanced at the slaves.

There were about two hundred slaves, and they had all broken through to the Ling Qi layer. Besides, they were all quite young. If

they had all been outside slavery, they would have definitely been an influential power. They could have even composed a small sect.

“Master, don’t worry. All of them have come from the Prisoner Arena. Amongst them, some were disciples of the Yun Hai Sect, which was destroyed by Duan Tian Lang. Many of them used to be Elite Disciples or even Core Disciples. There is absolutely no chance for you to be disappointed.”

The slave merchant was talking attentively. Lin Feng was greatly astonished. Disciples of the Yun Hai Sect? He had finally found some of them!

Last time, Lin Feng had heard that many people of Yun Hai Sect had ended up at the Prisoner Arena. He was hoping to find some of the former disciples of the Yun Hai Sect, which is why he had come to this place.

“I plan to go hunt some extremely strong ferocious beasts in the forest, and for that, I need slaves to open the way. It seems like I ended up in the perfect place.”

Lin Feng was smiling. All these slaves looked at him with a cold glare. He wanted them to open the way for a strong ferocious beast; this meant that they were all going to be sacrificed. What a bastard!

“Hehe. Master, you really came at the right moment.” said the slave merchant while smiling. In his heart, the slave merchant was cursing Lin Feng. He didn’t know which noble clan he was from,

but he was stupid enough to tell the slaves his plans for them.

“What is the price for the slaves in here?” asked Lin Feng.

“Slaves of the first Ling Qi layer are ten purity stones of medium quality, those of the second Ling Qi layer are thirty, those of the third Ling Qi layer are eighty, those of the fourth Ling Qi layer are two hundred, those of the fifth Ling Qi layer are five hundred, and those of the sixth Ling Qi layer are one thousand.”

Lin Feng slightly nodded. He looked at all the slaves and said: “Those who were the former disciples of the Yun Hai Sect can serve my purpose. Who will be coming with me?”

When the slave merchant heard him, he cursed him again. What an idiot!

Even the slaves were looking at Lin Feng indifferently. There was no solution. Who would be willing to go with him? It wasn't written on any of their faces that they had once been disciples of the Yun Hai Sect. If they didn't want to leave, they didn't need to. If they didn't say that they belonged to the Yun Hai Sect, who would even know?

Even Ba Dao and Yi Xue didn't understand Lin Feng's actions.

But Lin Feng looked as calm and indifferent as before. He took out a ring and placed it onto his finger.

Lin Feng had taken out a ring which looked ordinary, but when the slaves saw it, they were stupefied.

That ring looked ordinary, but amongst these slaves, many of them had already seen it. It had belonged to the Patriarch of the Yun Hai Sect, Nan Gong Ling. They had already seen it on his finger many times.

Chapter 167: Inspiration

Each and every single disciple of the Yun Hai Sect stood up and stared at Lin Feng, or more precisely, at his ring. They couldn't understand what was happening.

But at that moment, Lin Feng put his hand on his waist and said to the slaves: "Those willing to follow me, stand up."

The hearts of these Yun Hai Sect disciples were pounding. They were stupefied. Flashes of hope appeared in their eyes. That was the Patriarch's ring, Lin Feng might be a disciple of the Yun Hai Sect, just like them.

"I am willing to follow you."

At that moment, a silhouette stood up and walked towards the edge of his cell. He looked excited.

"I am willing to follow you."

"I also want to follow you."

More and more people were standing up and expressing themselves. The whole situation stupefied the slave merchant. He was deeply surprised by the actions of these slaves. Why were so many people willing to follow Lin Feng? They would certainly bring about their own destruction.

Could it be that they found living here so horrible that they had chosen death?

Ba Dao and Yi Xue were astonished too and looked at Lin Feng trying to get a hint of what was happening. Lin Feng had just said that he was looking for slaves to clear the path against some ferocious beasts, how could they be so willing to go with him?

More than thirty slaves had stood up and were standing at the entrance of their cells. Lin Feng sighed with mixed emotions. The number of people who had managed to survive that day, was quite important. They hadn't been killed on the spot but their lives was far from being one of happiness. They had been made into slaves and a great number of them had died in the Prisoner Arena. There were also many people that had been sold in the slave exchange previously.

"Release them, I want to buy all of them." said Lin Feng indifferently. A light flashed in the slave merchants eyes and he slightly nodded. Even though he didn't understand what was happening, he couldn't deny that someone buying so many slaves at once was a large amount of business.

"Are you sure that you want me to release all of these slaves?" At that moment, the slave merchant wasn't smiling any longer and was no longer trying to sell his slaves. He looked solemn and calm as if it was a completely different person.

Lin Feng looked at the slave merchant in a strange way but, immediately after, was relieved. The slave merchant was concerned that Lin Feng wasn't strong enough and something bad

would happen to him if he was unable to control the slaves.

“Yes, I am. Release them.” said Lin Feng while nodding. It was clear to him that the slave merchant was worried about him not being strong enough; which would be problematic if he did not have the power to control all of these slaves. But did Lin Feng need to keep them under control?

“Since you have insisted, I will release them.” said the slave merchant while nodding. The slave merchant moved to the large cell in which most of the slaves were inside and unlocked it. He then said: “Those willing to follow him, come out one by one. If you dare do something suspicious, you will die!”

When the slave merchant finished talking, a deadly energy emerged from his body and spread into the air. A light flashed in Lin Feng’s eyes.

How powerful. The slave merchant had broken through to the seventh Ling Qi layer. It seemed like this person was a completely different person from the one a moment before.

The slaves had their heads down and did not look anyone in the eyes. They were all moving out of the cell one by one so that each person could fit through the small door. Their hearts were pounding out of excitement. Very quickly, thirty two people were standing by Lin Feng’s side.

“How many purity stones?” calmly asked Lin Feng.

“Eight slaves of the first Ling Qi layer, nine slaves of the second Ling Qi layer, seven slaves of the third Ling Qi layer, five of the fourth Ling Qi layer, three of the fifth Ling Qi layer and none of the sixth Ling Qi layer. That’s three thousand four hundred purity stones of medium quality.” said the slave merchant after having counting the total in his head.

Lin Feng slightly nodded. A light flashed and at that moment, a thick pure Qi emerged. In Lin Feng’s hand appeared a huge number of purity stones.

“He can store things in a pocket of space!”

The crowd was stupefied. Lin Feng surprisingly could store things into a special pocket. That didn’t seem like an easy thing for one to achieve.

“You can count them if you would like.”

Lin Feng put all the purity stones on the ground while saying this.

The slave merchant indifferently glanced at the ground and then immediately said while smiling: “No need to count. You can leave with your slaves now.”

“Alright.” said Lin Feng while slightly nodding. He turned around, looked at the slaves and said: “Come with me.”

When Lin Feng finished talking, he started walking. Those thirty two slaves followed behind him as a group. Everybody's pace was surprisingly identical and their formation was clear and neat which surprised everybody that saw.

It didn't seem like that group of people came from the slave exchange at all. The way they moved in formation was way too strange. They looked like Lin Feng's subordinates, calmly following behind him.

The slave merchant of the slave market looked at the backs of the departing slaves and a thought flashed through his mind. He then said: "Master, walk slowly!"

Walking on the large road with thirty two slaves would obviously attract everybody's attention. How could people outside not see the marks that the slaves had on their faces.

Besides, they were still within the slave exchange, if they were outside then they would draw even more people's attention.

.....

In a mansion not far from the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue, Lin Feng, Ba Dao, Yi Xue and thirty two slaves were cultivating.

The place they were training was a rocky terrain. There was a pavilion in the middle with a small bridge, flowing water and even a small lake. This was the mansion that Lin Feng just recently

bought. He spent five hundred purity stones of medium quality to buy the mansion which was incredibly expensive.

Lin Feng needed a place for the slaves to stay. The Celestial Academy wasn't his after all. Even if he could enjoy all the benefits of the academy, he couldn't draw everybody's attention by walking in with so many slaves following him. That would not have been appropriate.

Each and every slave from the Yun Hai Sect was looking at Lin Feng. They were curious to know who he was. They were very troubled by not knowing who it was under the mask. They all wanted that mask to be removed so they could see the face underneath.

Who could be wearing the Patriarch's ring?

Lin Feng calmly glanced at the crowd and said: "You've gone through a lot of hardships."

While talking, he put his hand on his mask. The heart of the people in the crowd started beating faster. Lin Feng then slowly took off his mask.

"BOOM." Seeing Lin Feng's face made the group completely shocked. Everybody knew the young man, who was wearing the Patriarch's ring. It was Lin Feng. That was the unique, exceptional and frivolous Lin Feng.

Back in the days of the Yun Hai Sect, Lin Feng had stood out because he had killed the elite disciples and he defeated top ranking Elite Disciple: Wen Ren Yan. He was like a conquering hero.

In the Life and Death Arena, he had made the Patriarch regret his actions and reflect upon his mistakes. How imposing was he when reprimanding the patriarch!

Lin Feng had become a source of hope for the future of the Yun Hai Sect. Everybody thought that, sooner or later, Lin Feng would make the Yun Hai Sect rise again to new heights and regain its place in the Xue Yue Country.

But the Yun Hai Sect, instead, had been the victim of a tragedy.

And at that moment, they could see Lin Feng again. Their hearts were beating from just looking at the wonderful disciple of the Yun Hai Sect standing there alive. It was the young man who had refused Duan Tian Lang's offer because he stayed true to his own convictions. They were infinitely touched and surprised by his actions.

Lin Feng was still alive.

Lin Feng had freed them from their slave status and took them from the slave exchange. They wouldn't have to live as slaves again and could regain their humanity. They wouldn't be enduring pain and humiliation on a daily basis.

“No need to look at me that way and no need to be too excited either. Don’t forget that your faces still have the mark of the slave carved into them. Your hearts are still filled with an endless shame.” said Lin Feng when he saw that the crowd was growing excited.

Lin Feng’s coldness quickly ended the excited feelings that had begun. That’s right, they still had the mark of a slave carved into their face, so they still had the status of slave.

“Have you forgotten how our sect was destroyed? How you forgotten the people who carved these letters into your faces.” said Lin Feng coldly. The crowd was filled with hatred. They hated Duan Tian Lang. He was the one who had destroyed the Yun Hai Sect. They were marked as slaves because of him. He had made them become slaves.

“Because the Yun Hai Sect was weak, it was destroyed. It didn’t have the power to even defend itself. As far as you are concerned, you are weak, that is why you have the mark of a slave carved onto your face. This is why you were humiliated each day.” said Lin Feng. He then slowly added: “If you do not have enough strength you will never break free from your status as a slave. You will, as before, remain slaves and could even get taken away just like an animal.”

Lin Feng’s words were not pleasant to hear but every single sentence made their heart beat even faster. Lin Feng was right though, if their strength didn’t increase, they would never be able to change their destiny.

“If you are sick of being bullied and humiliated, if you want to change your destiny and not be a slave for your entire life, if you want to hold a festival to celebrate the end of your past hardships and humiliations, there is only one way!” said Lin Feng, whose voice was becoming louder and louder, while looking at everyone in the crowd. He then spat out the following words: “Become stronger! Unceasingly stronger! Only the strong can change their Destiny!”

Chapter 168: Forbidden!

“Become stronger!” All of these Yun Hai Sect disciples were turning red; with anger boiling in their hearts. Lin Feng was right. If the Yun Hai Sect had been strong, who would have been able to destroy it? If they were strong enough they would have never had the mark of a slave carved into their faces.

Exceptionally strong cultivators could annihilate a whole sect and even a country, this is what only the really strong cultivators could do, they could shake both heaven and earth. However the weak of the world could only get bullied to the extent that they would become slaves and be treated like animals. This was the fate of the weak Yun Hai Sect.

Lin Feng looked at the crowd and felt that his words had the desired effect. They were all clenching their fists to the extent that their tendons could be seen on their arms. Their hearts had been filled with shame. Now they truly knew what the words humiliation and shame meant. They understood that, in this world, the weak would always be at the mercy of the strong. If their determination and willpower became stronger then they would also grow much stronger too.

Suddenly a few agility techniques and martial skills appeared with a wave of Lin Feng's hand. They were from the temple of the Yun Hai Sect. Now that he had become the patriarch; he needed to help the disciples become stronger so they needed to have access to these skills.

“Nan Gong Ling, before dying, appointed me as the new

Patriarch of the Yun Hai Sect. All of these martial skills and agility techniques are at the Xuan level. You can look for a few which would be suitable for you. Once you find one, just go and practice it to perfection.”

Lin Feng laid these skills and agility techniques on the floor. Everybody was stupefied. Martial skills and agility techniques were extremely attractive to any cultivator.

A few of the disciples rushed towards the agility techniques and martial skills to choose, but many people stayed in their initial position while staring at Lin Feng.

“Get Back!” Lin Feng moved forwards and released a burst of Qi and force into the air which surprised the people who had already rushed forward to greedily choose their own skills. They all raised their head and looked at Lin Feng.

“Damn it, I said GET BACK!”

Lin Feng’s pupils shrank. He looked extremely cold. This group of disciples didn’t understand why Lin Feng was losing his temper but they all moved back towards the other disciples who were patiently waiting.

“Patriarch.” Amongst those who hadn’t moved a moment before, there were some who suddenly decided to bow and give face to Lin Feng. The ones who rushed forward understood and bowed to Lin Feng as well and said: “Patriarch.”

Lin Feng coldly looked at the crowd and said indifferently: “You have all disappointed me.”

When they heard him, the crowd was stupefied.

“I don’t want to hear you all call me Patriarch. I just want to see how many of you can control your hearts when faced with greed. Someone who is just interested in satisfying their own interest and their own greed will never be able to gain a strong heart. They will never take into consideration the others around them and will only work to satisfy their own desires. I’m telling you, you’re a bunch of idiots.”

Lin Feng said very impolitely: “I don’t know if it’s because you’ve been slaves for too long but some of you no longer have honour and integrity. Do you think that I released you so you could greedily help yourselves to skills without showing the slightest bit of respect or consideration...? Do you think that I wanted to hear you shout “Patriarch” to satisfy my own ego? Do you think I want people who will only call me Patriarch because I am the one with the power? What happens if the person with power changes?”

“You all disappoint me.”

Lin Feng repeated himself again. The cheeks of the Yun Hai Sect disciples who were bowing to Lin Feng felt like they were burning.

“Do you think I owe you something? I spent thousands of purity stones to buy your freedom. Could it be that you think I did this so you could continue to think of your own interests? Do you think I

bought you so you could continue without a sense of integrity and honour? Do you think I need people who forget to show gratitude to those who show them kindness? If I teach you to only care about yourself and how to grow stronger then in the future, you might just end up selling out your comrades or even me. If I taught you that then you would be no better than the people who made you slaves. ”

Lin Feng stared at the crowd and continued: “Of course, because you have been living like animals, you may have forgotten what it is to act like a decent person. What I said just now is only to remind you of what it means to be a good person. You need to remember that in the future you will need to think about others and be selfless, or you may end up dead in the future.”

“Remember that I don’t want to hear any bullshit and I have heard enough from moronic people already.”

The people in the crowd looked at Lin Feng and slightly shook their heads, they had realised that their hearts had truly started to become selfish.

“Remember that you will be judged on your own choices.” said Lin Feng. Immediately after, he turned around and started walking away while saying: “You can choose from any of the martial skills and agility techniques on the ground. You are not allowed to leave the pavilion, use that time to meditate and train. In three months time, I will come back.”

Lin Feng started leaving while Yi Xue and Ba Dao were calmly following behind him.

“Ba Dao, you stay here too.” said Lin Feng to Ba Dao. A martial skill appeared in Lin Feng’s hand and he handed it over to Ba Dao. He then said with a soft tone: “Ba Dao, that martial skill is perfect for you. Take it, learn it and practice it. If any of them try to run away after receiving their skills, kill them!”

When Lin Feng said the word “kill” a strong killing intent could be felt from him. Ba Dao and Yi Xue were stupefied when looking at Lin Feng.

Lin Feng looked expressionless and continued to walk, leaving the mansion.

Lin Feng only thought about the future of the Yun Hai Sect from the beginning. This world was definitely a selfish and cruel world. These people were the former disciples of the Yun Hai Sect. He had spent a fortune of purity stones to change their fate and had given them agility techniques and martial skills for only one reason: the Yun Hai Sect.

Lin Feng had saved them, but if they had chose to run away with the skills or continue to live selfishly then Lin Feng would kill them. If they showed no gratitude and had no honour then he would remove them.

If they had chosen to run away and steal from the Yun Hai Sect then they should have thought about it. They would have known they were betraying the mercy of Lin Feng and the Yun Hai Sect itself. Even if they were former disciples of the Yun Hai Sect, why

would Lin Feng need people who only thought selfishly and did not care about the Yun Hai Sect or the kindness that Lin Feng had shown them?

The former disciples in the mansion were the new generation of the Yun Hai Sect, Lin Feng wasn't going to abandon them, but he was not going to let his sect be corrupted.

Ba Dao who had stayed behind was watching Lin Feng's back as he left. He then started looking at the martial skill that Lin Feng had given to him, it made him shiver.

"Tyrannical Blade. A blade attack of pure energy, Di level martial skill of lower quality. Pure energy is released from the user in the form of blade which annihilates anything in its path."

"Tyrannical blade! Di level martial skill of lower quality!"

Ba Dao whispered these words to himself as if he did not believe it. That martial skill seemed to be perfect for him. Besides, it was a terrifying technique of the Di level.

Ba Dao raised his head again and looked at Lin Feng's back. Lin Feng's heart was mysterious and unfathomable but one thing was sure, he was an extremely intelligent person and he definitely had a very good nature.

He had confidently given that martial skill to Ba Dao. He had faith in Ba Dao and trusted him, even though they had spent such a

small amount of time together. Ba Dao was very moved by the trust that Lin Feng had shown him.

He could never repay the kindness which Lin Feng continued to show him.

.....

Lin Feng returned to the Celestial Academy. He first brought Yi Xue to a suitable living quarters and then immediately went to the peach orchard where he could hear a pleasant zither melody playing.

Lin Feng had said three months to the slaves, this was not just for their cultivation but his as well. He wasn't going to forget his own cultivation for his battle against Hei Mo.

At that moment, Lin Feng had broken through to the fifth Ling Qi layer and with his current power, he could defeat cultivators of the sixth Ling Qi layer.

But Hei Mo was at the peak of the sixth Ling Qi layer. At the academy, those of a similar level couldn't even compete with him. Even many cultivators at the seventh Qi layer didn't dare to fight against him. Hei Mo was extremely powerful and could cross the gap in power between the layers.

Hei Mo was one of the ten strongest students of the Celestial Academy and considering his talent, that was a well deserved title.

Besides, who could say that Hei Mo hadn't also become much stronger in these three months? Was he supposed to stay the same level for Lin Feng to catch up?

Lin Feng's strength wasn't sufficient. He lacked in many areas compared to Hei Mo.

Hei Mo could defeat a cultivator of the seventh Ling Qi layer with confidence, but Lin Feng would come close to death when fighting against one. He had defeated two cultivators of the seventh Qi Layer, however one had greatly injured him and the other had fought with someone.

Like in the restaurant, if Ba Dao hadn't helped him, the man in the gray robes would have been very difficult to defeat alone.

This is why Lin Feng went to the peach orchard to find serenity. Once he found serenity within his heart, he immediately headed towards the cultivation tower. What Lin Feng needed the most was to increase his cultivation.

At that moment, Lin Feng didn't go to the higher floors at all. He immediately went to the fourth floor. Only by stepping on the floor, he could feel the deep and intense pure Qi of heaven and earth fluctuating around him. It was extremely pure.

Some people who passed the fourth floor saw Lin Feng who had stopped. It looked like he was looking for a training room within the cultivation tower. However, he was currently acting strangely.

They didn't understand if Lin Feng was a new military student, since he didn't seem to understand how things worked. On the fourth floor, one thing that was important to know, each room was reserved by someone and the room was only used by them.

In other words, each room on the fourth floor belonged exclusively to someone. Even if they weren't there and the room was empty, nobody would enter them.

Therefore, when Lin Feng was checking the fourth floor, he surprisingly found that there were two cultivation rooms which were empty. Nobody was practicing inside them. Even more surprising was that the people who were passing by didn't stop and continued walking.

In the middle of these two rooms was a stone tablet which had the word "forbidden". Next to that was a name!

Chapter 169: Who Kills?

“Forbidden!”

Lin Feng was reading the words written on stone which made him smile indifferently.

The cultivation tower was one of the resources the Celestial Academy provided, it was there so that all of its students could benefit from it.

Strong students could go to the cultivation rooms on the lower floors and have priority over other people... but preventing other people from entering a cultivation room while not being there was much too exaggerated.

Could they really prevent other students from accessing the resources of the academy when they are not even using them?

Lin Feng stretched his hand and with a flick of his wrist, his Qi erased the name on the stone. He didn't even look at the name that was written next "Forbidden". Whoever that person who thought they owned the room wasn't important. That room was not being used, that was the main thing.

Lin Feng took out his purity stones and placed them inside the hole to activate the room. At that moment, a light appeared from inside the room.

The door of the cultivation room opened itself while emitting a loud rumbling noise. At that moment, a thick pure Qi emerged which made Lin Feng feel both happy and comfortable. He took a deep breath.

At the moment when Lin Feng was about to move inside the cultivation room, someone shouted: “Stop!”

When Lin Feng heard that shout, he stopped and turned around. He saw a beautiful woman who was walking towards him.

Surprisingly, it was a girl. She was wearing revealing clothes and looked very seductive. She was very slender and her waist was swinging with each of her steps. Each of her steps made her entire body look demonically bewitching. Her manner of walking looked both soft and smooth.

A light flashed in Lin Feng’s eyes. As far as that woman was concerned, her beauty wasn’t equal to that of Liu Fei. Even though her body was very similar to Liu Fei, it was much more enchanting than Liu Fei’s body. While walking, her back was straight and her chest was pushed forward. She looked very flirtatious and her waist was slender. Her forearms were folded comfortably under her chest. She could easily make most people burn with lewd desire.

From the front, Lin Feng could even see her cleavage protruding from her clothes. Her snowy white bosom was very large. She looked very alluring. She simply looked perfect.

“If that woman had been a model in the previous world, she would have been internationally famous.”

Lin Feng was secretly talking to himself. Lin Feng suddenly controlled and made his heartbeat slow down again. His determination and willpower as a cultivator was very strong. He could control all of his bodily functions much better than ordinary people.

“Haven’t you seen what’s written by the door? This room is mine.”

The girl had a light smile on her face, but her eyes revealed a certain coldness. She actually looked insufferably arrogant.

“I really haven’t seen anything.”

Lin Feng was speaking in a cold and detached tone. The girl took a few steps and looked at the stone between the rooms. Obviously, her name and the words “Forbidden” couldn’t be seen anymore, they had disappeared. Someone had completely erased them.

“Did you do that?”

The girl frowned while asking that question. At that moment, Lin Feng could feel the cold Qi she released.

“Since you can carve things into the stone, why can’t someone erase things from it?” replied Lin Feng indifferently without

openly admitting that he was the culprit.

She was looking at Lin Feng then suddenly, a bewitching and alluring expression appeared in her eyes which surprised Lin Feng.

Immediately after, the girl walked towards another cultivation room and suddenly punched its door which emitted a loud noise.

“Huh?”

Lin Feng looked surprised. What was that girl doing? Why was she attacking the door of somebody else’s cultivation room.

What surprised Lin Feng the most is that she didn’t stop hitting the door. She moved towards another door, then she punched the other stone door which made it slightly shake.

Loud noises spread through the air. A door slightly opened. A cold and detached voice spread through the atmosphere. An extremely cold Qi emerged from the room.

“Who is it?”

Immediately after, the two people came out of their respective cultivation rooms. They were stupefied to see the alluring girl waiting for them. Deep in their heart, they were annoyed but the cold expression on their face vanished. With a big smile on their face, they said: “Jiao Jiao, what’s the problem?”

“Zu Ning, someone is bullying me.”

That girl was trying to look lovely so she could manipulate these two young men. She was holding onto one boy's arm while her large chest gently pressed against the others body which made the one called Zu Ning become frozen. He then started looking at her body looking like a crazed pervert. Their willpower and determination on the path of cultivation was high and they could easily stop themselves from losing their mind because of a woman's beauty. They both wouldn't lose themselves in her beauty. However, once in a while, they liked to enjoy carnal pleasures. People who would openly refuse such things were rare.

Especially at the Celestial Academy, it was said that nobody had ever enjoyed being with this bewitching beauty. Yu Jiao was a gorgeous girl.

The other young man, when he saw that Yu Jiao was pressing her breasts against Zu Ning, looked extremely jealous. Yu Jiao made him drool with lewd desire. Unfortunately, he had never had the chance to be with her. At the Celestial Academy, the person who managed to spend a night in bed with her would become very famous.

“Ke Cheng, that guy is surprisingly using my cultivation room. He even deleted my name from it. He is bullying a weak little girl like me.”

Yu Jiao moved away from Zu Ning and then got very close to Ke

Cheng. She grabbed Ke Cheng's hand and hugged it tightly, Ke Cheng's forearm was in contact with her entire voluptuous body. Ke Cheng had the impression that he was imploding with desire.

Lin Feng was still calmly standing at his original place watching this scene unfold. That girl was using her body as a weapon. She had managed to arouse both Zu Ning and Ke Cheng. They were both fixedly staring at Lin Feng getting ready to fight for Yu Jiao.

"Trying to use Jiao Jiao's cultivation room was a reckless act on your part." said Zu Ning in a loud voice while coldly staring at Lin Feng.

"Hehe, what an uneducated animal. Don't you understand the rules here?" said Ke Cheng while smiling coldly, unwilling to lose against Zu Ning.

"Reckless? Animal?" Lin Feng's expression was slightly cold. He looked at the two guys with a cold smile. They wanted to use Lin Feng to show off in front of this girl?

Yu Jiao giggled and released Ke Cheng's arm. She then said while smiling: "I'm free tonight, I don't know if either of you would be interested in joining me in my room, so I have someone to talk with."

Zu Ning and Ke Cheng were stupefied and glanced at each other. A smile appeared on their faces. Even if she had said it would only be to talk with them, it was already a very good start, they might even have the opportunity to enjoy carnal pleasures.

“Are you going first or should I?” asked Zu Ning to Ke Cheng.

“We’re, of course, going together.” said Ke Cheng with a cold smile on his face. If he said he wanted to go first, how could Zu Ning accept?

“That’s precisely what I thought.” said Zu Ning while smiling coldly and said: “Well, let’s see who can kill him first? How does that sound?”

“Alright. The first to kill him wins.” said Ke Cheng while nodding. Immediately after, the two students looked at Lin Feng with clear killing intent and then quickly rushed towards him.

“Sixth Ling Qi layer.”

These two guys were releasing a cold Qi and Force into the atmosphere so Lin Feng could determine their strength. They had broken through to the sixth Ling Qi layer but they were still infinitely weaker than Ba Dao or Hei Mo. They still had a great deal to learn about cultivation.

“BOOM!”

A terrifying energy invaded the atmosphere. Zu Ning and Ke Cheng’s silhouettes were moving at incredible speeds.

“Get out of my way!”

Suddenly, a voice shouted, which stupefied Lin Feng. Zu Ning, who had started moving towards Lin Feng at the same time as Ke Cheng, was suddenly punching towards, not Lin Feng, but Ke Cheng.

“I knew that you would do something like this sooner or later.” said Ke Cheng while also attacking Zu Ning. At that moment, an extremely strong wind emerged separating the two bodies from each other but immediately after, they started moving shoulder to shoulder towards Lin Feng. However, they both remained extremely vigilant of the other.

Lin Feng was calmly standing there looking at the two students who were attacking him at the same time. The expression in Lin Feng’s eyes clearly showed that he found this scene to be ridiculous. They were enemies and were fighting each other and at the same time they were also joining force to attack Lin Feng.

Two stormy waves of energy vibrated in the air, Zu Ning and Ke Cheng looked at each other again and immediately after they both punched towards Lin Feng. Suddenly, a piercing force moved towards Lin Feng at full speed.

Zu Ning who was on the right side had a hideous grin on his face. His left hand thrust out attacked Ke Cheng. They were both using their right hand to attack Lin Feng. At that moment, Ke Cheng was on Zu Ning’s left. If Ke Cheng wanted to attack Lin Feng, he had to dodge the strike from Zu Ning.

“Argh.”

Ke Cheng groaned and shivered. He increased his speed even more to dodge Zu Ning’s attack and rushed forwards.

“His life is mine.” said Ke Cheng with a hideous grin on his face. The palm of his hand was about to reach Lin Feng but at that moment, a vast sword force suddenly burst out while emitting a whistling sound. It was extremely sharp and gave a the impression of death. It was terrifying.

That sword force made Ke Cheng’s body become frozen in fright. A glow of light suddenly emerged in the air. In that bright resplendent light, a thick and gray deadly Qi was floating.

“This doesn’t look good!” said Ke Cheng whose facial expression drastically changed. How was this possible? He knew all the strong military students... but he had never seen Lin Feng. How could Lin Feng be so strong? Besides, how could he control such a powerful sword force?

Zu Ning was one step behind Ke Cheng and his expression had also drastically changed. He suddenly stopped moving and froze in place.

That young man was strong. He could sense the terrifying power of that bright and resplendent glow.

“Retreat!”

That was Ke Cheng only thought at that moment.

He didn't want to attack Lin Feng. He had looked down on Lin Feng, he had attacked him alone because he wanted to avoid Zu Ning's attack. He hadn't been given any time to think, when he stopped and wanted to retreat, that bright and resplendent sword glow had already reached him.

Ke Cheng was gasping with astonishment. He regretted that he had taken the initiative to attack Lin Feng alone.

He was attentively looking at the resplendent sword which had finally reached him. Immediately after, his head no longer had a body to call it's own.

“Boom boom boom boom boom boom boom.”

Zu Ning and Yu Jiao's heartbeats could be heard, resounding through the atmosphere. They were fixedly staring at the corpse of Ke Cheng on the ground and were shaking with fear.

Beheading Ke Cheng without a second thought had taught them a good lesson. A lesson which needed to be paid in blood.

“You... killed Ke Cheng.... inside the cultivation tower?” said Zu Ning while staring at Lin Feng.

Lin Feng looked at Zu Ning as if he was joking.

When they wanted to kill him, they didn't care that they were inside the cultivation tower but when they found out that he was stronger than them, they immediately remembered the rules, it was as if they had selective memory when it came to them killing people.

“Not only did I kill him but I will also kill you.”

Lin Feng's words coldly flowed from his mouth. He then slowly started walking towards Zu Ning whose heart started violently pounding.

Chapter 170: Sword Awakening

Yu Jiao was staring at Lin Feng. Her bewitching look had disappeared. Now she only looked like a scared little girl.

A moment before, the Qi which Lin Feng had released was only at the fifth Ling Qi layer, but he knew how to control sword force to perfection. He had killed Ke Cheng because Ke Cheng had underestimated him. He hadn't really paid attention to his opponent; however, it was undeniable that Lin Feng was very strong even without this fact. Indeed, his strength was enough to threaten some cultivators at the sixth Ling Qi layer.

Yu Jiao frowned. She had never seen Lin Feng either, which is why she had despised Lin Feng for removing her name, but because of her carelessness, Ke Cheng had lost his life.

Yu Jiao giggled and said: "Zu Ning, Ke Cheng was so useless. He underestimated his opponent. Even though that guy knows how to control forces, a cultivator at the sixth Ling Qi layer is definitely able to defeat him." said Yu Jiao with a gentle smile on her face.

She had first told him that Ke Cheng was useless and that he had underestimated the opponent, but then she told him that a cultivator at the sixth Ling Qi layer could definitely defeat Lin Feng. Since one had already been killed, this was weird logic.

Zu Ning frowned. Even though he knew that Yu Jiao was trying to incite him to fight, he also thought that what she said was true. Could a cultivator at the fifth Ling Qi layer defeat him because he

knew how to control forces?

Zu Ning looked irresolute for a few seconds and then the fear disappeared from his heart. He blinked and instantly became ready to battle once again.

“Zu Ning, could it be that you’re scared because Ke Cheng died?” Yu Jiao’s voice sounded strange.

Zu Ning was stupefied. He gnashed his teeth and while looking at Lin Feng, he said: “How could I be scared? He’s just a brat at the fifth Ling Qi layer, that’s all.”

Lin Feng smiled coldly and said jokingly: “Why are you still standing there then?”

Zu Ning was stupefied by Lin Feng’s confidence and coldness. An ugly expression appeared on his face.

His heart started beating faster. At that moment, a pair of eyes appeared behind Zu Ning. They were hovering mid air and looked like the eyes of an eagle. They looked extremely sharp and fierce. From the moment that the pair of eyes appeared, Zu Ning’s expression also became strange and evil.

“It’s his spirit!” Lin Feng was astonished. What was floating behind Zu Ning was obviously a spirit! However, what shocked Lin Feng was that he had never seen such a spirit.

Lin Feng was surprised, but he knew that the Continent of the Nine Clouds was vast; Lin Feng just didn't know exactly to what extent. The Xue Yue Country was just one of the countries in the continent. There were, in total, four empires and nine countries. This was only the Xue Yue Country, an ordinary country. The number of spirits he had never seen were almost infinite.

“Roaring Thunder!” Lin Feng's sword slightly vibrated and he thrust forwards. Thunderous roars were spreading through the atmosphere with his attack.

Zu Ning's two strange eyes were staring at Lin Feng. Surprisingly, he remained motionless and was waiting for Lin Feng to make the first move. He just slightly turned and avoided Lin Feng's attack with extreme precision.

At the same time, Zu Ning raised his hand. He thrust his hand forward, which gave a similar feeling to the spirit. It was emitting a sharp resplendence as it moved straight towards Lin Feng's eyes. This was a truly diabolic attack.

Lin Feng's long sword made a buzzing sound as it rotated in the air to block the attack. Zu Ning's body simply moved to another angle with his hand still rushing towards Lin Feng's eyes.

Lin Feng slightly crouched and jumped backwards using his Moonlight Feather Agility. Then, without hesitation, he started his next attack. His sword started to glow as it moved as swiftly as thunder towards Zu Ning.

“Your sword probably wishes it had met another opponent and not me.” said Zu Ning in a cold tone. His body slightly moved, and he avoided Lin Feng’s attack again; however, this time, it was very extremely close. An iota closer and Zu Ning would have been struck by Lin Feng’s sword.

“Those two eyes can predict my actions from my movements and help him dodge my attacks. My Celestial Spirit gives me a similar ability to see things as if they were in slow motion.”

Lin Feng sheathed his sword and started to think. His energy gradually became colder. He looked expressionless. His eyes suddenly became pitch black.

When he noticed the changes to Lin Feng’s body, Zu Ning frowned. Lin Feng’s Qi had suddenly changed. Lin Feng looked completely void of emotion. This change made Zu Ning’s heart beat faster.

If Zu Ning’s eyes were strange and evil, Lin Feng’s eyes, at that moment, were those of nightmares. They were cold, expressionless and didn’t even look like something that should belong to a human being.

“You say my sword wishes it met another opponent?” said Lin Feng with a deep tone. An extreme coldness suddenly moved towards Zu Ning’s body. The sword force was growing sharper and sharper. It also contained a deadly Qi.

“Deadly Sword.” said Lin Feng while unsheathing his sword,

which looked like an illusion, as he threw himself towards Zu Ning.

Zu Ning groaned and then a swift and fierce Qi emerged from his strange and evil eyes. His body slightly flickered and dodged the sword attack.

“Fatal Sword.”

Lin Feng still looked expressionless. His sword moved through the air again. He was now releasing a fatal Qi. A fatal Qi surrounded Zu Ning’s body as well, which made him feel like he had been frozen. Even though he was of the sixth Ling Qi layer, he didn’t dare approach Lin Feng’s sword. Sword masters who knew how to use sword force were much too powerful.

His body transformed into an illusion. Lin Feng’s fatal sword moved even faster, forming an arch-shaped trajectory in the air. He could still see it very clearly and avoid it with precision.

At that moment, Lin Feng was fixedly staring at Zu Ning. Through his eyes, Zu Ning was moving extremely slowly, so Lin Feng could see everything very clearly and distinctly.

Lin Feng could see Zu Ning, just like Zu Ning could see Lin Feng’s sword.

Lin Feng’s sword kept moving in the air. His sword was unceasingly moving to where Zu Ning was. He was continuously

changing the trajectory of his sword, making Zu Ning retreat backwards.

While looking at the sword, Zu Ning kept moving backwards. A cold expression appeared on Lin Feng's face. He then said in a low voice: "It's the end."

He sounded very calm and emotionless. His words were also filled with confidence. All of this made Zu Ning's heart race. Immediately after, he had the impression that the sword force had completely vanished and nothingness had replaced everything around him.

It wasn't cold anymore and there was no sharpness either. There was only one sword, an incredibly ordinary sword moving towards him.

Zu Ning was staring at that sword, and he didn't feel convinced. He was curious to see how that attack could end the battle.

Zu Ning slightly moved leftwards and then his pupils shrank.

The sword was still aiming at his chest.

His evil and strange eyes emitted a sharp light. Zu Ning's body flickered again. He was staring at that simple sword. What shocked him was that Lin Feng's sword looked like a snake that followed him wherever he moved. There was absolutely no deviation and it continued to move towards his heart. Besides, what terrified Zu

Ning was that the sword was getting closer and closer.

“How’s this possible? I couldn’t have missed his movements... I have an eagle eye spirit!”

Zu Ning’s heart was pounding. He suddenly realized that that simple looking sword was actually the same deadly and fatal sword as before.

The closer the sword was getting, the more Zu Ning wanted to escape. He then realized that his spirit was willing to escape, but his flesh was unable to.

Since he wasn’t able to dodge, he raised his two hands to block. A swift and fierce energy emerged in the atmosphere, making Zu Ning’s heart drop. His face revealed that he had finally given up all hope. That energy was much more powerful than the endless force Lin Feng had released earlier.

That ordinary sword was actually an energy attack.

Lin Feng was also looking at his sword as it consumed the energy around it. It looked like force, but it was all the energy within the atmosphere which enhanced the attack power.

Energy attacks were a mixture of all the Qi and Force present. It was delicate and subtle. This attack contained a perfect combination of all sword energy. Every time, the attack looked simple but was extremely powerful. That was the magic of a real

energy attack.

Lin Feng's eyes returned to normal, and he didn't look expressionless anymore. Instead, there was a smile on his face.

Energy fusion required for energy attacks was similar to using force. It was just the next level above forces. Depending how much a cultivator practiced, it was only possible to control energy attacks after having mastered a force to perfection. Besides, just like for forces, there were different levels of mastery. At that moment, Lin Feng had only reached the first level of mastery with his fusion of energy.

At that moment, Lin Feng's sword didn't penetrate into Zu Ning's body in an extraordinary way. It softly pierced into his chest, and in the blink of an eye, all of his internal organs were destroyed.

Zu Ning's eyes were blankly staring at Lin Feng. The evil and strange expression in his eyes disappeared. He then said his last words: "I... regret... so.... much!"

He only managed to say that before he died.

Lin Feng looked expressionless. Zu Ning's body collapsed lifelessly on the floor with blood flowing from his chest. Lin Feng then turned his attention towards Yu Jiao, sending shivers down her spine.

Chapter 171: The Rules

Lin Feng had killed Ke Cheng, maybe the reason was because Ke Cheng had underestimated Lin Feng and he was also fighting against Zu Ning at the same time.

However, Zu Ning had witnessed Ke Cheng's death personally; it was obviously impossible for Zu Ning to go easy on Lin Feng. He had to use his maximum strength from the beginning, which he did. Zu Ning directly released his eagle spirit and fought at his maximum ability. Nonetheless, Lin Feng still killed Zu Ning. Lin Feng, relying on his strength of the fifth Ling Qi layer had suppressed Zu Ning's body until he had become unable to escape and then killed him with a simple sword strike.

“That guy is so strong! He even killed Zu Ning. How come I've never seen him before?”

Many people had already gathered on the fourth floor. They were whispering all sorts of comments between themselves. They had all seen how Lin Feng had killed Zu Ning in one sword strike which seemed completely simple.

“Hehe, you don't know him? That's surprising. His name is the name that is currently spreading through the academy.”

“Lin Feng!”

Yu Jiao looked stupefied. Sixteen or seventeen years old, an authentic sword master, frivolous and extremely confident... when

Yu Jiao recalled all the things that were said about Lin Feng, her heart started beating faster.

“Fifth Ling Qi layer and he could kill Ke Cheng and Zu Ning... and I’ve never seen him before. That guy has to be Lin Feng.”

Yu Jiao was feeling a bit shocked. She had, just like Ke Cheng and Zu Ning, broken through to the sixth Ling Qi layer, but she wasn’t a match for either of them. If she had fought against Lin Feng, he would definitely kill her too.

Lin Feng was holding his sword with the tip pointed at Yu Jiao which made her tremble with fear. Her eyes revealed a terrified expression.

“We are not enemies, if you want my cultivation room, I will give it to you. There is no need to harm a weak girl such as myself.”

Yu Jiao was smiling and trying to seduce Lin Feng with her charms. He just smiled coldly. That girl could still smile and flirt even under these conditions. She was so manipulative that it was scary.

“Initially, there was no hatred between you and me but a moment ago, if I had been a bit weaker, I am afraid that I would be the one lying dead on the ground right now. You say that there is no need to harm a weak girl like you? Don’t you think that’s ridiculous.” said Lin Feng coldly while continuing to walk towards her.

“Well, what do you want?” asked Yu Jiao.

“Cripple your cultivation.” said Lin Feng sounding detached. Even if it was a beautiful girl, she had to pay for her behaviour.

Crippling her own cultivation!

Yu Jiao was shaking in fear. Practicing cultivation all the way to break through to the sixth Ling Qi layer had been incredibly difficult, would he really have her cripple her own cultivation? Life would become torture.

“Aren’t there any other solutions?” asked Yu Jiao with a flirtatious gaze.

“There isn’t any.” replied Lin Feng with absolute resolution.

Yu Jiao’s expression was rigid, while gnashing her teeth, she said: “Damn it.”

While talking, she had moved through the crowd and over to another cultivation room. She immediately punched the door which emitted a rumbling noise. She then moved to another one and then another one. Four rumbling sounds spread in the air.

The crowd opened the way for Lin Feng. Lin Feng continued to walk. Immediately after, loud rumbling sounds emerged from the four cultivation rooms. Four silhouettes appeared. On the fourth floor, there were eight cultivation rooms. Two were already

empty, those of Ke Cheng and Zu Ning who had been killed. As these four people had come out, all the rooms on the fourth floor were empty and everyone was now standing outside.

But at that moment, nobody dared to fight. For many people, the fourth floor was almost like a restricted area. Only those who had reached a certain strength could go there.

“Yu Jiao, what do you want?” asked a young man while frowning from inside one of the rooms.

“Somebody wants to kill me.” said Yu Jiao.

“Kill you?” said the four silhouettes who had just come out of the rooms, sounding quite surprised. Surprisingly, someone wanted to kill such an alluring woman.

“Somebody wants to kill you, what does that have to do with us?” said one of them as a joke while smiling.

“Gong Lun, you really are heartless.” said Yu Jiao while seductively smiling at the young man. She then smiled and said: “Who will play with you tonight if I die?”

“Play with me?” said Gong Lun with a demonic smile on his face. A light flashed in his eyes while glancing at Yu Jiao’s body and he said: “Even when you are alive, have I ever had the chance to play with you?”

Yu Jiao looked at Gong Lun with a seductive look in her eyes and said: “If you really want to play with me, just do one thing for me.”

“Oh?” said Gong Lun with the same evil smile on his face and said: “Don’t count on me to do something impossible though.”

“Of course, I won’t. I just hope that you can help me kill him. If you can, I will let you play with me tonight.” said Yu Jiao while giggling with a seductive look. The crowd’s thoughts were filled with lust when they heard what she said. Yu Jiao was really a treasure to behold.

“Same for you three, if you kill him, I will sleep with all of you.” said Yu Jiao to the three others while pointing at Lin Feng.

Gong Lun and the three others had lust burning in their eyes. That offer was very tempting.

“If I am not mistaken, Ke Cheng and Zu Ning must have been killed by him. You want us to kill him, will it not be dangerous for us? It is forbidden to kill in the cultivation tower.” said one of them with a wry smile while looking at Yu Jiao.

“Indeed, he killed them. He has broken through to the fifth Ling Qi layer and can control sword force. He is a really strong cultivator who can fight above his own cultivation. He surprisingly dared to humiliate me. He stole my cultivation room. How should I have reacted when seeing such a thing? That’s why I asked Ke Cheng and Zu Ning to fight against him, but these two pieces of trash surprisingly fought each other and Ke Cheng was

immediately killed. Then, Zu Ning was alone, so he ended up falling to his sword.”

“He’s broken through to the fifth Ling Qi layer and can control sword force?” Gong Lun didn’t sound convinced. After all, he hadn’t seen Lin Feng fight the others as he was cultivating inside a sealed room.

“If he was really strong enough then he would already be on the third floor.” Yu Jiao knew that Gong Lun meant that Lin Feng was not strong enough to go to the third floor.

At that moment, Lin Feng looked at these people and said in a cold and indifferent tone: “Are you done talking shit?”

“Huh?” Gong Lun frowned while staring at Lin Feng.

“If you’re done talking shit, open the way.” A cold aura emerged from Lin Feng’s body and he released a deadly sword Qi. Gong Lun was surprised, but very quickly, a smile appeared on his face. As expected, he had only broken through to the fifth Ling Qi layer and relied on his sword force. That was barely enough to defeat ordinary cultivators of the sixth Ling Qi layer, but Zu Ning and Ke Cheng were really trash, they had been killed by such a weakling.

“Don’t you think that you are a bit too arrogant?” said Gong Lun while smiling and continued: “It’s a fact that you have broken through to the fifth Ling Qi layer which is not weak but in our eyes, it is still not enough. If you think that because you defeated Ke Cheng and Zu Ning, you can defeat us, well I will tell you now,

you are a fool. Zu Ning was far from being as strong as us.”

“Are you done talking?” said Lin Feng indifferently as if he hadn’t heard what Gong Lun had just said which surprised Gong Lun. A cold light flashed in Gong Lun’s eyes. Lin Feng wasn’t giving him any face.

“If you’re done talking, then move before I make you move.”

Lin Feng walked and released an even colder aura.

“How irresponsible.” Gong Lun looked incredibly murderous and said: “Yu Jiao, remember what you just said.”

“Hehehe, if you kill him, I will definitely sleep with you tonight and you will be the happiest man in the academy.”

Yu Jiao smiled as she spoke to the other three other students: “Same for you, if you kill Lin Feng, I will sleep with you.”

These three students had lustful smiles appear on their faces as they evilly looked toward Lin Feng. They started walking slowly towards Lin Feng looking at him with pure killing intent. Lin Feng had broken through to the fifth Ling Qi layer, it was impossible for him to fight against all of them.

“You don’t understand the rules... stealing other people’s rooms and even killing people here... Killing is against the rules. I will kill you for violating the rules.” said Gong Lun while staring at Lin

Feng.

“I don’t understand the rules? Could it be because I decided to use a room which you wrote “forbidden” on, even though nobody was using it? Isn’t that your own rule? When they tried to kill me, I ended up killing them in return, how do I not understand the rules? How do you decide who has broken the rules here and who has not?” said Lin Feng coldly.

“Strength decides.” said Gong Lun while smiling coldly. “Only those who are strong can make their own rules. The strong cultivators can write “forbidden” above a room, so you will not be allowed to enter. You managed to kill those two pieces of trash which will not be a loss to the academy. Now you are going to die too, and the academy will again not care about losing trash. That is the rule created by the strong.”

“I understand.” said Lin Feng with an indifferent smile. He started walking and like an illusion, a sword came out of nowhere.

That sword looked ordinary and did not have anything outstanding about it. There was no sharp sword force coming out of it, but in the blink of an eye, it arrived in front of Gong Lun.

Gong Lun smiled when he saw Lin Feng’s sword being thrust towards him. A deadly energy suddenly appeared and oppressed his body. His heart suddenly started pounding. He was staring at the sword moving towards him. He tried to dodge, but before he could move, he could only look down at the pain in his chest. The smile had already completely disappeared from his face. His face only expressed pain and agony.

There was just the handle of a sword sticking out of his chest, the sword had already pierced through his body.

Gong Lun had been killed without being able to even fight.

“I like these rules.” said Lin Feng indifferently. His words resonated throughout the fourth floor. Everyone’s hearts started to pound. So these were the rules of the strong.

Chapter 172: Strength as a Rule

One sword strike, a single thrust, and Gong Lun had been killed by Lin Feng. He wasn't able to fight anymore, as a sword had been lodged deep in his chest.

The crowd couldn't even understand what had happened; that sword had been too quick. Besides, no force or Qi had been released with the sword. That simple and ordinary sword had been enough to take Gong Lun's life.

“What terrifying strength!”

The crowd was looking at Lin Feng's sword, which was still inside Gong Lun's corpse, as it hit the ground. He had broken through to the sixth Ling Qi layer and could easily defeat Ke Cheng and Zu Ning, so why was he now laying dead on the floor beside them?

They obviously didn't think that Lin Feng's sword attack was ordinary. That was a confrontation between two strong cultivators, and they knew that they couldn't understand the mysteries behind that sword strike.

The three other students who were next to Gong Lun started shaking. They were moving backwards as they stared dumbfounded at Lin Feng. A moment before, when Gong Lun was still there, they wanted to fight against Lin Feng, but he had killed Gong Lun in a single strike. Their hearts began to fill with dread. If that sword hadn't been used against Gong Lun but against them,

would have they been able to dodge it?

The answer was that they would be lying dead on the floor. Gong Lun was the strongest of all of them so if he wasn't able to withstand a single attack, they were the same.

But at that moment, Lin Feng slowly turned around and looked at the three students. Their hearts were beating even faster.

“Are your rules the same as his?”

Lin Feng's tone was cold. They were blankly staring at Lin Feng.

One of them smiled and said: “Friend, don't get angry, I mean you no harm. If you need a cultivation room, just feel free to choose one.”

“Friend?” questioned Lin Feng. He then said: “Don't think that I am blind and couldn't see you standing with him a moment ago ready to attack me. There is no need to be a coward now and embarrass yourself.”

These students were stupefied. Indeed, the way they had behaved clearly indicated that they didn't differ from Gong Lun at all. They had replied to Yu Jiao's offer with killing intent towards Lin Feng. Lin Feng wasn't blind, so he saw it all. Retreating for them would be pointless, they were trapped.

“Friend, if you need purity stones, just let me know... and you

can use any of the rooms of the fourth floor.” said another of the three students. Since they couldn’t run, they had to try and negotiate.

“First, I have enough purity stones. Second, I will use all the rooms on the fourth floor as I wish. Is such nonsense necessary?” said Lin Feng indifferently, which made the three of them grow even more terrified. The last remaining one said: “Well, what do you want from us then?”

“Cripple your own cultivation.” said Lin Feng indifferently. The three students were astonished. A cold sweat ran down their backs. If they crippled their cultivation, they would become worthless, and they would be several times weaker than a normal person. They could be humiliated by anyone. A cultivator who had never provoked others didn’t exist, and if their cultivation was crippled, that would be the end for them.

The crowd was also shocked. If they crippled their own cultivation, that would be a fate much worse than death. But if they were in Lin Feng’s position, then they would do the same. They had wanted to kill Lin Feng a moment before, and Lin Feng wanted to teach them a lesson.

“I can give you another opportunity though. If you cripple her cultivation first, then you will be exempted from crippling your own cultivation.” said Lin Feng indifferently while pointing at Yu Jiao.

Yu Jiao was stupefied. A moment ago, she wanted them to kill Lin Feng and had offered them her body; however, it was now Lin

Feng who was asking them to cripple her cultivation.

When Lin Feng finished talking, the three students looked at Yu Jiao with murderous intentions. They were also vigilant to not get attacked while doing so.

“I will only give you the time it takes for ten breaths. If you don’t do it by then, I will cripple your cultivations.”

Lin Feng just said this one sentence. At that moment, the three students instantly released their energy at the same time. They all quickly rushed towards Yu Jiao.

In front of them was their lamb for slaughter, Yu Jiao.

Yu Jiao was scared to death. Being attacked by the three of them, who were all much stronger than her, was terrifying. When Lin Feng had spoken, her fate was already sealed... Or maybe, it had already been sealed when she tried to humiliate and kill Lin Feng.

A horrible shriek filled the fourth floor. Lin Feng didn’t even look in the direction of the shriek and calmly said: “Take her away and remove these corpses. After that, I don’t want to see any of you on the fourth floor ever again.”

These three students were shocked. Immediately, they took the corpses along with Yu Jiao, who did not even have the strength to stand by herself anymore, and then they left. While walking, they were still looking at Yu Jiao with a very cold look. That girl had

almost cost them their cultivation. Fortunately, they hadn't rushed towards Lin Feng like Gong Lun; otherwise, they would be dead.

Her cultivation had been crippled... She was now crippled for life and could not even live a normal life anymore. This was no joke.

Lin Feng ignored them as they left. He walked towards a room with "forbidden" written on it. A smile appeared on his face.

"Since these are the rules, I will also follow the rules." Lin Feng said as his hand moved over the words and vigorously erased them.

Immediately after, Lin Feng stretched out a single finger and a light emerged from the tip. In the blink of an eye, the word "Lin" appeared.

Lin Feng then moved to the other seven rooms and did the same. The entire fourth floor had been seized by Lin Feng.

The crowd was blankly staring at Lin Feng and remained silent.

That guy was extremely powerful and incredibly daring.

Even if Lin Feng hadn't been there, none of these rooms would have belonged to them because only the strong could use these rooms, that was the rule.

The weak cultivators had nothing to say.

Lin Feng, relying on his strength of the fifth Ling Qi layer, had easily killed people at the sixth Ling Qi layer. Besides, he had made other people at the sixth Ling Qi layer obey him out of fear. How majestic!

“Until I erase my name from these rooms, you are not able to enter any of these rooms. They are all mine, and if anyone enters them, then the consequences will be serious.” said Lin Feng sounding extremely powerful.

He then immediately went inside Gong Lun’s room. A rumbling noise was heard while the door closed itself. The pure Qi was emitting a bright and resplendent light as the door slowly closed itself.

When they saw how bright and resplendent the light was inside, they understood that Gong Lun had put enough purity stones inside to cultivate for a long time. Lin Feng didn’t need to spend anything.

At least, this would be enough to last until his fight against Hei Mo.

The pure Qi on the fourth floor was extremely thick and pure. Lin Feng had the feeling that all his pores were wide open and absorbing the Qi. He felt carefree and relaxed. He had the feeling that his body was hungry and thirsty for the Qi. He wanted to swallow all that pure Qi inside his dantian.

Lin Feng was sitting cross-legged, and he was using his celestial spirit as he entered in a state of mediation.

That pure Qi circulated around all of Lin Feng's limbs, bones, blood vessels and muscles. They were all becoming stronger as they absorbed the pure Qi. Besides, Lin Feng wasn't aware of it, but the pure Qi in his body was also becoming more and more refined.

While practicing cultivation, the notion of time didn't exist. Lin Feng had no idea that his name was becoming more and more popular in the Celestial Academy and that his battle against Hei Mo was getting nearer and nearer.

Chapter 173: Vast Power

Early in the morning there were no clouds for over a thousand miles. The Celestial Academy was bathed in sunlight. A layer of warmth covered the entire area.

At that moment, many people had gathered in one of the public squares as if they were waiting for something.

There was a gigantic fighting stage that had been erected in that public square. On its edge, a viewing platform had been constructed.

The viewing platform was huge and made from bluestone. The height of the viewing platform reached five meters and its width a hundred meters. On the viewing platform, more than a hundred chairs had been created as well. From these chairs, it was possible to see the fighting stage perfectly.

“What’s going on? It looks like there’s going to be a great battle.” said a person who just arrived at the public square with a puzzled expression.

“Could it be that you don’t know what day it is today? It is the day of the fight between Lin Feng and Hei Mo. I wouldn’t have thought that the academy would build such an arena for the occasion though.” Said another person to his side.

Everyone was puzzled by these events. In the Celestial Academy, challenges were very common. The people of high status in the

hierarchy usually didn't care except for when prodigious students were involved. They liked to watch battles involving prodigious students. However, the scenery, at that moment, was unprecedented.

“Hehe, it seems like there are many things that you don't know.” said another person moving towards them while smiling. He then said: “First, Lin Feng went crazy in the Bai Clan's Prisoner Arena. Then, he killed one of the Bai Clan members who was at the seventh Ling Qi Layer. He then liberated some of the slaves that were inside the cage. He even made a public spectacle of the Bai Clan. He slaughtered all of the Bai Clan members which came to the academy to apprehend him, except a person at the Xuan Qi layer. His reputation quickly rose to new heights. There is no one who does not know of his name inside the academy.”

“Then, there is another rumor saying that Lin Feng while wearing a silver mask, went back to the Prisoner Arena and killed Mu Fan of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue. He won a daemonic fire lion, which he then sold it in the auction market.”

“What? You're saying that the mysterious person wearing a silver mask was Lin Feng?” said the two other students while looking stupefied by what they had just heard. Surprisingly, that was Lin Feng as well. How was that possible?

“Hehe, not many people know about that. I also know that if you compare the man in the silver mask's temperament and insane attitude, all of these things resemble things of Lin Feng. It must be him.” continued the student while looking proud of himself.

“When he came back, Lin Feng then went to the fourth floor of the cultivation tower, killed Zu Ning, Ke Cheng, and Gong Lun. He scared three other students of the sixth Ling Qi layer so much that they escaped. He completely humiliated them. He then seized all of the eight rooms on the fourth floor of the cultivation tower. He doesn’t let anyone use the fourth floor anymore. He’s brutally strong. Nowadays, at the academy, nobody is as famous as Lin Feng. There are even people who say that few students of the sixth Ling Qi layer can defeat him. They even say that Hei Mo cannot possibly defeat him.”

“How powerful.” whispered the two other students.

He had killed a strong cultivator of the seventh Ling Qi layer. He had easily killed Zu Ning and some other students of the sixth Ling Qi layer. He was so strong that the entire fourth floor of the cultivation tower already belonged to him. Could it be the rumors were true and that Hei Mo, one of the top ten students of the academy, had already been surpassed by him? The battle was definitely going to be spectacular.

“But why did they build all these viewing platforms? What does that have to do with the story about Lin Feng?”

“That is a very complex question. Lin Feng is almost more popular than Hei Mo. There are even some people who say he is much stronger than Hei Mo. How could Hei Mo, who is one of the top ten students of the academy, remain indifferent? Arrogant as he is, he probably wants to prove to everyone that he is stronger. Therefore, he took the initiative to make the battle, a public event. This time, his clan will come. He will use this battle to gain

prestige and power.”

“Besides, the first time that Lin Feng went to the Prisoner Arena, not only did he provoke the Bai Clan but he also had a confrontation against a young man whose family name was Yu. That is not all, the second time that he went to the Prisoner Arena, he offended some students of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue. Amongst these people, there was another person whose family name was Yu. These two young men of the Yu Clan will come here as well as the members of the Bai Clan and some people of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue.”

When that student finished talking, the two other students were astonished and their heart was beating faster.

The Bai Clan, the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue, Hei Mo’s clan, people of the family Yu... were all coming to watch the battle.

That was going to be a magnificent battle. No wonder the Celestial Academy had built that fighting stage and viewing platform. There was even a row of seats at the level of the ground; which was probably destined for visitors of high status.

They were getting more and more impatient to watch the battle. They grew so excited they could not wait any longer.

The sun gradually rose higher in the sky and the Bai Clan, the people of Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue, Hei Mo’s clan, as well as some people of the Yu clan arrived at the Celestial Academy to watch the battle of Lin Feng and Hei Mo. At an incredible speed,

the public square of the academy was already packed with people... even though Lin Feng and Hei Mo hadn't even agreed on a precise time. The only sure thing was that the battle was supposed to happen on that day.

At that moment, a silhouette appeared on the edge of the public square. The person was walking slowly towards the stage.

That person was wearing a black robe and his entire body was covered with a cold and evil Qi. The expression on his face looked profoundly dark. Each of his steps was filled with determination.

“Hei Mo!”

When they saw the person approaching, the crowd started whispering all sorts of comments. The person who had just arrived was Hei Mo.

At that moment, they only saw Hei Mo step onto the fighting stage. He then sat cross-legged and closed his eyes. He wasn't looking at the crowd, it was as if they were all invisible to him.

Adopting such an indifferent and cold attitude was one way of making other people feel ashamed of their inferiority. That wasn't easy though to remain indifferent while tens of thousands of people were all watching you.

Hei Mo was one of the ten best cultivators of the Celestial Academy and had already reached the peak of the sixth Ling Qi

layer. His spirit was the rare Black Flame spirit. Even cultivators of the seventh Qi layer didn't dare fight against him.

Only those who had already fought against Hei Mo could tell how terrifying his strength was. Even though he was ranked tenth, the person above him in the rankings didn't dare provoke him. Hei Mo was very dangerous.

At that moment, far away, many silhouettes were moving towards the fighting stage. They were an extremely large group. Amongst them, there was a middle-aged man who was wearing purple clothes. Behind him were two young men. If Lin Feng had been there, he would have recognized them. One of them had been smashed into his stone chair by Lin Feng and the other was a student of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue, the one that had convinced Mu Fan to go and fight against the daemoniac fire lion.

Behind these three people was a large crowd of people. They were obviously members of the Bai Clan. The middle-aged man in blue clothes who had violently criticized the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue had also come.

“Yu Clan.”

Some people in the crowd surprised. Even though they had never seen the middle-aged man before, the crowd knew that the two young men standing next to him were indubitably members of the Yu Clan. The Bai Clan members were all walking behind them.

The Yu Clan and Imperial Clan were both standing at the top as

the most powerful clans. No matter what, whether it be the Prisoner Arena or the auction market, the Yu Clan always had to give their permission for the business to operate.

In the Imperial City, apart from the Imperial Clan, the Yue Clan, and the Wan Shou Men Sect, nobody could compete with the Yu Clan. The Yue Clan was very discreet and quiet as if they didn't care about external affairs, which gave even more power to the Yu Clan.

Walking on the left side, there was a group of people wearing the same clothes in which two words were written in big letters: "HOLY COURTYARD".

They belonged to the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue.

On the right side was a group of young men wearing black clothes. Each and every single one of them looked ice-cold and had a cold Qi emerging from their bodies.

That was the Nie Clan of the Imperial City. They were a very special clan. They didn't look like the Yue Clan in terms of influence, but nobody dared provoke them. There wasn't a single weak cultivator that belonged to the Nie Clan.

While the large group of people approached the public square, a gigantic and oppressive force fell down onto the crowd, which made them gradually calm down until silence had completely invaded the atmosphere.

“Visitors, please accept my most sincere apologies. I wasn’t able to come pick you up.”

A voice emerged through the air. Immediately after, a silhouette came down from the sky. Using an agility technique, his silhouette disappeared and landed in front of the Yu Clan and the other visitors.

The man in purple clothes frowned and looked at Vice-Principal Long. He was upset.

“Vice-Principal Long, how imposing, how arrogant.” said the young man in purple clothes indifferently. Obviously, he was referring to the fact that Vice-Principal Long hadn’t been very polite while descending from the sky.

“Hehe, Mister Yu’s prestige is vast and mighty, he can act just as arrogant as me.”

Vice-Principal Long was fighting with a small verbal confrontation. Immediately after, he pointed towards the viewing platform and said: “Please take your seats and let’s watch the battle.”

The man in purple clothes groaned coldly and walked towards the viewing platform.

Chapter 174: Beginning of the Battle

The man in purple clothes walked towards the main seat thinking that it was definitely reserved for him.

The Yu Clan had a strong influence. Even though Vice-Principal Long wasn't polite to them, he had to give them the main seat, otherwise he would make them lose face.

But at the moment when they were about to sit down, they heard Vice-Principal Long said: "Mister Yu, you cannot take that seat."

"I cannot take it?" The man in purple frowned. He looked in the direction of Vice-Principal Long and said: "Long Ding, if I cannot sit here, who will?"

"I can only tell you that that seat is reserved. Whether you still want to sit there or not is your own choice." said Long Ding impolitely to the man in purple while pulling up his sleeves. Immediately after, he sat down on the seat next to the main one. The man in purple clothes was hesitant.

If Long Ding had sat down on the main seat, he would have been extremely angry but Long Ding hadn't. He had sat down on the seat next to the main one. That made the man in purple hesitant. Could it be that someone extremely important was going to come, to the extent that Long Ding himself couldn't take the main seat?

"Could it be because of... him?"

A realization flashed in the man's mind and a silhouette appeared in his thoughts. He surprisingly didn't insist, groaned coldly and sat down on the other seat next to the main seat.

The members of the Celestial Academy calmly watched the scene from the viewing platform. They were wondering what was going on. It seemed like Vice-Principal Long and the Yu Clan were not on good terms. They were not friendly to each other and their conversation always sounded like an argument. It almost seemed like they hated each other.

The members of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue as well as the Nie Clan members were not sitting separately from the others. The crowd didn't know if it meant something or not. The members of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue sat down next to Long Ding and the other members of the Celestial Academy.

“Vice-Principal Long, I heard that the Celestial Academy had ten extremely strong disciples. As the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue is now created, I was thinking that there could be a competition between the two institutions. What do you think?”

In the middle of the crowd, belonging to the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue, the person took the initiative to ask a question which surprised many people belonging to the Celestial Academy.

The Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue had been created by selecting some of the most outstanding disciples of the biggest sects. Even two of the eight high officials, who were incomparably strong, had

joined it. Even though the students of the Celestial Academy were extremely strong, how could they compete with the best disciples of the biggest sects?

The Hao Yue Sect, the Yun Hai Sect, the Wan Shou Men Sect and the Ice and Snow Mountain Village were all very influential in the Xue Yue Country. They had made some of their students achieve extremely high levels of cultivation and the strongest of them had moved to the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue. The Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue was indubitably extremely powerful. If the Celestial Academy fought against them, they would definitely lose.

“My Celestial Academy is too weak. We still need to improve a lot to be able to compete with the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue. We try to become stronger step by step, but you selected the best students from the best sects and put them in one place. There is no need for such a competition. We are much weaker.”

Long Ding said these words while sounding like he was making fun of the Holy Courtyard. The Celestial Academy was too weak, but it was improving step by step and relied on its own strength. The Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue had been extremely strong directly from the beginning, but it had taken its strength from other sects, that wasn't a good method.

When the other person heard Long Ding, he immediately stopped talking.

At that moment, the crowd looked at the fighting stage. Hei Mo was still sitting there, remaining silent and motionless. Only one person hadn't arrived yet.

Lin Feng!

Time was passing and the sun was gradually getting hotter. It was already noon.

What upset everybody was that Lin Feng surprisingly hadn't arrived yet.

"Long Ding, your student is very audacious, making so many people wait." coldly said the man in purple clothes as he grew impatient. Why had he made so many people come to wait for a child?

"Lin Feng and Hei Mo's battle is planned for today. They haven't agreed on a precise time." replied Long Ding indifferently.

"Hmph, today? So many people came today to watch that battle. Even everybody in the Celestial Academy knows about it and he's still not coming, what's that supposed to mean?"

"Well, how do you expect me to know? When Lin Feng arrives, you can ask him personally." said Long Ding sounding as unfriendly as before.

The man in purple clothes wasn't the only one who was getting impatient. The members of the Celestial Academy were also getting impatient. They were unceasingly whispering.

“Lin Feng is really arrogant. He’s surprisingly not coming.”

“Hehe, maybe that he cannot fight, because he’s not ready for the battle.” said someone while smiling indifferently.

“Impossible. Even if he doesn’t fight, Hei Mo will not let him off. Whatever happens, Lin Feng will not be able to hide, so this battle would be the best solution.”

“Maybe he already ran away. Who knows?”

People in the crowd were all trying to guess what had happened with Lin Feng. No matter if they were right or not, only they could choose whether they wanted to stay and wait or leave.

Unexpectedly, Hei Mo was still sitting there as if nothing could disturb him.

The evening sun, floating in the west, had already appeared and was shining down upon the fighting stage, on which there was still only one person.

How exaggerated! He had made them wait whole day.

The crowd was getting more and more impatient. Besides, they were starting to get convinced that Lin Feng was scared and didn’t dare come.

“Long Ding, will you not do anything about it?” said the man in purple clothes a little coldly. Lin Feng had made them wait the entire day.

“The day is not over yet.” calmly said Long Ding while looking at the sky.

On his side, the members of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue looked impatient as well. How could a simple student of the Celestial Academy be so arrogant that he would make them wait so long?

“Lin Qian, you said that Lin Feng was your cousin?” asked a handsome man to Lin Qian who was in the middle of the crowd.

“Maybe it’s not him.” said Lin Qian while frowning. On that day at the Prisoner Arena, Lin Feng was wearing a silver mask so Lin Qian still had doubts. She had, since then heard that the man who was wearing the mask was called Lin Feng. She had been stupefied upon hearing the news. Therefore, she had come to the Celestial Academy to confirm with her own eyes.

“Even if it is, there is absolutely no problem. He is just a little kid of the fifth Ling Qi layer, nothing more. If I want him to die, he will die, if I want him to live, he will live.” said the handsome boy in a cold and aggressive way.

Lin Qian slightly smiled to the handsome man and said: “Thank you, Chu Zhan Peng.”

That man was precisely Chu Zhan Peng, the genius of the Hao Yue Sect. He was one of the eight high officials of the Xue Yue Country. At that moment, though, he had joined the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue.

At that moment, the crowd became extremely loud. The crowd moved aside and a path appeared. On that path, a silhouette was walking slowly.

“It’s Lin Feng, Lin Feng has arrived!”

Many people were surprised. They were really starting to think that Lin Feng didn’t dare to come. They wouldn’t have thought that Lin Feng would arrive so late in the evening.

At that moment, Lin Feng was wearing a white robe. He had a sword on his back. He looked clean and calm. Each of his steps was filled with determination. If one paid attention to his steps, one would notice that each of his steps was of the exact same distance as the one before.

On the five-meter high viewing platform, everybody could clearly see Lin Feng’s silhouette.

They could see that clean, handsome and familiar face. Lin Qian’s heart was pounding. She was shaking from head to toe as she stared at the person.

Lin Feng, as expected, it really was Lin Feng. That was really

him.

Lin Feng used to be a piece of trash. However, at that moment, he had already acquired a great reputation so many people had come to watch his battle. The Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue, the Mie Clan and even the Yu Clan had all personally come to watch his fight.

Lin Qian used to enjoy the same kind of prestige before inside the Lin Clan. Everybody attached so much importance to her that they had even expelled Lin Feng and his father from the Lin Clan. Although she wasn't very famous, she had become a student of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue... but Lin Feng was already able to defeat cultivators of the sixth Ling Qi layer; unlike her who had only just broken through to the third Ling Qi layer and was even very pleased with herself for doing that.

Lin Qian's eyes revealed a complex mixture of expressions containing envy, jealousy and coldness. She had to kill Lin Feng. She couldn't let him go back to Yangzhou City.

Otherwise, in the future, the Lin Clan wouldn't have her as head of clan, but instead it would be Lin Feng.

Hei Mo opened his eyes as if he had sensed someone coming. A piercingly cold Qi and force emerged from his body. He was staring straight at Lin Feng.

Lin Feng was looking at Hei Mo with the same cold glare. He was walking steadily towards the fighting stage. A cold and oppressive energy fell onto his body. Even though Hei Mo was still a far away

from him, Lin Feng could already feel the oppressive energy on his body.

Following suit Lin Feng released both Qi and force from his body. It was extremely sharp. His Qi and force were already rushing straight towards Hei Mo. Even though Lin Feng was still far from Hei Mo, Hei Mo could already feel the sharp energy piercing him into his skin. Lin Feng hadn't even arrived on the fighting stage yet and they were already fighting a battle of Qi.

Chapter 175: Your Highness!

“Sword force.”

When the crowd sensed Lin Feng's sharp force, they were stupefied. As the rumors said, Lin Feng could control sword force and was even a master at using it.

Following each of Lin Feng's steps, the force was getting more and more powerful. The entire atmosphere was filled with sword force. Under the pressure from his sword force, people around him began retreating.

At the moment when Lin Feng was on the fighting stage, an incredibly swift and fierce sword force whistled through the air towards Hei Mo.

One thing was sure, Lin Feng had come; therefore, he and his sword were going to provide the spectators with a spectacular battle.

Hei Mo had already stood up. A gloomy and cold Qi was emerging from his body. That whistling sword force from Lin Feng was unable to make his heart tremble even slightly.

In Hei Mo's eyes, there were deep burning flames. At that moment, he wanted to use Lin Feng's blood to become famous.

The crowd was fixedly staring at the fighting stage. Even though

Lin Feng had shown up quite late on this day, his incredible sword force had already made them forget about their dissatisfaction. This battle was definitely worth waiting an entire day for.

“How audacious.” At that moment, the man in purple, while looking at the fighting stage, said: “Lin Feng, you are very arrogant. You made us all wait an entire day and won’t even give us an explanation.”

His voice was very loud and intense. It violently resonated in Lin Feng’s ears. He was blaming Lin Feng for making him wait.

Lin Feng groaned. The energy around his body dispersed and he took two steps back. A moment before, he had spared no effort, using force and Qi to be able to compete with Hei Mo. He had been concentrating on Hei Mo only. He hadn’t thought that the man in purple would suddenly make a despicable comment and very loudly interrupt him. At the same time when his focus was broken, Hei Mo’s energy slightly penetrated into Lin Feng’s body, which injured him a little bit.

The crowd was stupefied and looked at the man in purple. How aggressive! That was an initial show of strength.

Long Ding frowned. His eyes revealed that he was upset.

At that moment, Lin Feng, from the corner of his eyes, slightly looked at the man in purple clothes and the two young people sitting on his side. He quickly understood what was going on. He then coldly said: “Haven’t I humiliated those two sitting by your

side? If you want to avenge them, just say it clearly. There is no need to use such despicable methods. You really are shameless. I really don't understand what even gives you the right to sit there. You're just making a fool of yourself."

When Lin Feng finished talking, the crowd was astonished. Lin Feng was really audacious. He was straightforward and his words were sharp and poignant. He even dared to talk in such an impolite way to members of the Yu Clan, humiliating and insulting them.

The pupils of the man in purple clothes shrank. He had thought that he would teach Lin Feng a lesson and that Lin Feng was just going to recognize he had made a mistake and apologise. He had thought that Lin Feng wouldn't dare refute his words. It seemed like his anticipation had been wrong, Lin Feng was much more aggressive than he had imagined.

"What... did you just say?" said the man in purple clothes with a cold expression in his eyes. He was an extremely important man in the Yu Clan to the extent that even Long Ding somehow feared him... and a junior actually dared insult and humiliate him?

"You say that I am audacious and that I made you wait the entire day and, on top of that, that I should give you an explanation. My battle against Hei Mo was planned for today, but we hadn't agreed on a precise time; therefore, even though I came in the evening, it doesn't mean that I was late. I would like to ask you something though. Did I, Lin Feng, invite you to come?" Lin Feng was speaking coldly and continued: "Whether I fight or not is my own business, and whether you want to watch or not is your own business. You rushed over here to watch, yet you ask me for

explanations... Why would I need to justify myself to you? Do I know you?"

Lin Feng's words were so sharp that the man in purple clothes was really astonished. Lin Feng didn't stop talking and continued.

"A senior, watching a battle, suddenly puts pressure on me. Don't you think that your behaviour is that of a shameless person? Are you not losing face with your actions? I don't know which clan you belong to, but you are a disgrace for them. If I were you, I would be very embarrassed to be sitting in view of everyone."

The crowd was utterly astonished. They were looking at the man in purple clothes in a strange way. It seemed like Lin Feng's statements were actually very accurate. Lin Feng hadn't agreed on a precise time and hadn't invited anybody to watch the battle. Coming to watch the battle was their own decision and had nothing to do with Lin Feng. That senior of the Yu Clan was surprisingly blaming Lin Feng, which was quite inappropriate.

The crowd agreed with Lin Feng, but nobody dared act like Lin Feng and say these things out loud in such a majestic way.

The man in purple clothes had an ugly expression on his face, and then Vice-Principal Long, who was sitting not far from him, said while slightly laughing: "Hehe, that kind of method is really low. The third most important man of the Yu Clan is really majestic and powerful."

Majestic and powerful.

He had already heard so many words of insult. The man in purple clothes wanted to teach Lin Feng a lesson. He hadn't thought that Lin Feng would endlessly humiliate him in one sentence.

“Crack!”

The stone seat on which the man in purple clothes was sitting on cracked open. There was a deep fissure, but it hadn't broken into pieces.

He was staring at Lin Feng, wishing he could kill him on the spot.

“Majestic and powerful... Indeed, I am really majestic and powerful. Lin Feng, if you lose today, Hei Mo will definitely kill you. And if you win, I will not let you off. No matter if you win or lose; today, you are doomed.” There was clear killing intent filling the eyes of the man in purple clothes. His voice was loud and aggressive. Everybody was stupefied.

I am majestic and powerful. I am an extremely strong senior. I always get what I want. No matter the result of the battle, loss or victory, Lin Feng would die for having dared to provoke him. That was how majestic important senior members of the Yu Clan were.

“Yu Qiu, it seems like you think that the Celestial Academy is your Yu Clan. Here, you cannot do anything you wish.” said Long Ding coldly. Immediately after, he turned towards Lin Feng and said: “Lin Feng, you and Hei Mo fight. Don't worry, even though I cannot kill him, if Yu Qiu dares attack you, I can still kill the junior

cultivators who came with him.”

“What are you saying?” said Yu Qiu coldly. He stared at Long Ding and said: “Vice-Principal Long, you are threatening the juniors of the Yu Clan?”

“How shameless.”

When the crowd heard Yu Qiu, they were astonished. It was indeed majestic to be extremely powerful, but they hadn’t thought that he could be so shameless.

Long Ding was also astonished. He immediately said in a mocking tone: “You threaten the juniors of the Celestial Academy but don’t allow me to threaten the juniors of the Yu Clan? Yu Qiu, is your brain working correctly?”

“Hmph.” groaned Yu Qiu, and then he said: “Are you not scared of making the Yu Clan angry?”

“You are within the Celestial Academy.” said Long Ding coldly while striving to get the last word.

“So what? I don’t care if this is the Celestial Academy. Humiliating the Yu Clan will lead to the destruction of the Celestial Academy.” said Yu Qiu while sounding evil. The crowd was astonished. They had originally come to watch Lin Feng and Hei Mo’s battle. They hadn’t thought that they would witness Yu Qiu and Long Ding’s confrontation, all because of Lin Feng. The

crowd was very surprised by the turn of events.

Besides, the entire crowd had become silent and was looking at Long Ding. Yu Qiu had threatened to annihilate the Celestial Academy. All of its members had become silent.

Everybody was absolutely silent.

“Mister Yu, you have a very bad temper.”

A voice emerged amongst the silent crowd. A silhouette walked in the middle of the crowd. That person had a warm and friendly smile on their face and looked very easy going.

Many people were astonished when they saw that person. Even Yu Qiu was shaking a little. As expected, the main seat had been reserved for him.

When Lin Feng saw that young man, he was astonished as well. He had already seen him. He had accepted to be the referee for Lin Feng's battle at the Prisoner Arena.

“As expected, he definitely has a mysterious status.” Lin Feng had also noticed the main seat, which was unoccupied. It was very likely that that seat was reserved for that young man. He even seemed to have a higher status than the man of the Yu Clan.

When Long Ding saw the young man, he smiled and stood up.

“Your Highness.” said Long Ding extremely politely.

Yu Qiu stood up as well. A smile appeared on his face and he said: “Your Highness must be joking, I don’t have a bad temper.”

“Hehe, if you don’t, that’s even better. Mister Yu, Vice-Principal Long, please sit down. No need to be so polite.”

That smiling young man was extremely polite and didn’t sound arrogant at all for a prince. He had already arrived next to the main seat.

At that moment, in the middle of the members of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue, Chu Zhan Peng had an aggressive look in his eyes. He was staring at the young man.

The young man turned his head and looked at Chu Zhan Peng. He nodded while smiling and said: “Chu Zhan Peng, as expected, always exceptional.”

“I salute, your Highness.” Chu Zhan Peng nodded and greeted the young man. His aggressive look gradually vanished. The second Prince Duan Wu Ya was, just like him, one of the eight high officials, and he was above him in the rankings.

Chapter 176: Black Lotus

Lin Feng looked at Duan Wu Ya. Duan Wu Ya was the second prince of the Imperial City. He had a soft and gentle temperament. He was kind and generous to other people, he wasn't arrogant at all. He was easy going and approachable. If people were nervous and tense, his presence immediately made people calm down.

Duan Wu Ya was just like Duan Feng described him. He was completely different from Duan Wu Dao, the crown prince. Lin Feng didn't actually know how unruly the crown prince was though.

“That guy is powerful.”

Lin Feng was talking to himself. Duan Wu Ya was an extremely important person and he was also very strong but at the same time, he was also amiable and approachable. He was incredibly powerful and prestigious.

Duan Wu Ya looked at the fighting stage, smiled and said: “Alright, you two can continue to fight. I will be the referee.”

Lin Feng slightly nodded to Duan Wu Ya. The second prince had also already helped Lin Feng. Last time, he had also acted as the referee for his battle at the Prisoner Arena.

Lin Feng turned around and looked at Hei Mo. Hei Mo had had his eyes closed. What just happened had nothing to do with him. His only purpose, at that moment, was to kill Lin Feng and gain

prestige. He wanted to prove to everyone that not just anyone could challenge him to a battle.

At that moment, Hei Mo opened his eyes. A cold and profound light filled his eyes. Once more, Lin Feng saw the black flames burning in Hei Mo's eyes.

Lin Feng started releasing a very sharp sword force. Hei Mo was one of the top ten disciples of the Celestial Academy, Lin Feng couldn't afford being careless.

"You have broken through to the fifth Ling Qi layer and your sword force is very powerful. No wonder that you can kill cultivators at the sixth Ling Qi layer but if that's all you are capable of, it will not be enough to fight against me. Zu Ning, Gong Lun and the others, even though they had broken through to the sixth Ling Qi layer, they were absolutely unable to compete with me." said Hei Mo very arrogantly while staring at Lin Feng.

"I also hope that you are as strong as you say." replied Lin Feng coldly. He took a single step forwards and his sword force became even more powerful.

"Alright. I will try and see if you really can compete with a truly strong cultivator like me." When Hei Mo finished talking, he took a few steps as his silhouette flickered and disappeared. In the blink of an eye, he was in front of Lin Feng and his fist was rushing through the air towards Lin Feng.

"Ice and sword!"

Lin Feng's palm moved. He was accumulated piercingly-cold energy as well as sword energy in his hand at the same time.

“BOOM!”

Lin Feng was surprised. His body had been pushed back of a few dozen steps. He had almost reached the edge of the fighting stage.

Lin Feng looked perplexed. He opened his hand and looked at his palm. In the center of his palm, there was a black mark caused by fire Qi. It was extremely painful.

“What a dark fire Qi.” thought Lin Feng while shivering. When the opponent's fist collided with the palm of his hand, Lin Feng had clearly felt the overwhelming fire Qi. It was completely evil. It wasn't violent or brutal but rather a ghastly fire Qi.

“As expected, Hei Mo is much stronger than Lin Feng. Lin Feng was blown away in one attack.” thought the crowd when they saw that attack.

Hei Mo wasn't one of the ten best cultivators of the Celestial Academy for nothing. Lin Feng was sufficiently strong to kill other cultivators of the sixth Ling Qi layer but in front of Hei Mo, he was just too weak.

“It seems like you cannot compete with Me. You cannot even withstand a single attack. Today, you will definitely die.” said Hei

Mo in an arrogant tone.

“You have broken through to the sixth Ling Qi layer, I am only at the fifth Ling Qi layer. Of course the strength behind your punches would be stronger. However, you are an expert at using fire, but I am an expert at using swords.”

Lin Feng completely forgot about the attack of a moment before as if it didn't matter. He reached to his back and grabbed his long sword. At that moment, his energy became increasingly more powerful.

“That's right, Lin Feng is an expert at using swords. His cultivation level is weaker than that of Hei Mo, if he fights recklessly, it can get very dangerous for him.” The crowd was getting impatient again. Even though they thought that Hei Mo was stronger, Lin Feng still couldn't be that weak. Otherwise, this battle would have been pointless to watch.

“Come here.” said Hei Mo indifferently while looking at Lin Feng.

Lin Feng walked forwards again. Lin Feng's sword energy which filled the atmosphere, suddenly enveloped Hei Mo's body. Hei Mo frowned, suddenly, a pain invaded his body, and he was being cut by the intense sword energy which surrounded his body.

Lin Feng wasn't rushing, he was slowly walking forwards. After each of his steps, his sword force was getting more intense and increasingly sharper.

“Hmph.” Hei Mo smiled coldly. He raised his fist and launched an extremely powerful punch towards Lin Feng.

“Deadly sword.”

Lin Feng’s sword fluttered in the air. His sword pierced the atmosphere while emitting a whistling noise. The sword energy was concentrated on the tip of his sword and rushed straight towards Hei Mo.

“Extermination.” shouted Hei Mo. A black Qi emerged from his fist and started to consume the sword energy. At the same time, it collided with Lin Feng’s sword. The fireball crashed into Lin Feng’s sword and the black flames were extinguished.

Lin Feng’s expression didn’t change. Lin Feng released an extremely cold Qi from his body. When the black flames collided with his palm, it left him with a small injury. However this time when using his sword Lin Feng seemed unperturbed.

“Flame attack.”

Hei Mo launched his fist forward with a new attack, two black flames moved straight towards Lin Feng.

“Fatal sword.”

Lin Feng thrust his sword forward. His sword Qi was even more intense and contained a deadly Qi.

Lin Feng's sword energy and the black flames were both tearing through the air as they collided. The deadly Qi of Lin Feng's sword invaded the entire atmosphere and it even made Hei Mo take a step backwards. Lin Feng's sword mastery made him look like a triumphant sword god.

Lin Feng had gained the advantage with that attack.

Hei Mo silently looked at Lin Feng for an instant and immediately said: "You definitely have the qualifications to fight against me, you are strong enough, but this is only the beginning."

While talking, Hei Mo lifted his hand into the air. A burning black flame appeared and danced around his hand. That flame was emitting an incredibly deadly Qi.

"BOOOM!"

Hei Mo quickly stretched out both of his hands and the flame burst into nine small flames. They were all black and were filled with the same sinister deadly Qi.

"Deadly Black Lotus."

The crowd was stupefied. Hei Mo surprisingly wanted to use the deadly black lotus. It seemed like he was taking this battle

seriously.

“How skillful. It’s a good thing I am also done warming up.” said Lin Feng while sounding indifferent. His eyes turned pitch black. His eyes were completely cold and expressionless. His mind started processing everything that was happening around him. At that moment, Lin Feng could even distinctly feel the deadly Qi that was contained within the nine black flames.

Lin Feng’s sword diffused a dark and deadly Qi. It was the same Qi as that of the deadly black lotus.

Even though the crowd was a distance from the fighting stage, they could still feel the deadly Qi released by the two fighters. Their bodies felt fear but the expression in the crowd’s eyes revealed excitement.

“I hope you don’t disappoint me and at least put up a fight until you die. Otherwise, this battle would be uninteresting.” Said Hei Mo arrogantly.

“Don’t you think that you talk too much crap?” said Lin Feng coldly.

Hei Mo kept calling in question Lin Feng’s qualifications to fight against him which gave the impression that he was monstrously strong. However Lin Feng was actually forcing Hei Mo to become serious, even though he said otherwise.

“Since you can’t wait to die, I will help you achieve your aim.” said Hei Mo coldly. He then shouted: “Black flames, lotus transformation.”

When Hei Mo finished speaking, each of his flames transformed into a lotus flower which rushed Lin Feng at full speed. The deadly Qi from the black flames had filled the entire atmosphere, surrounding Lin Feng’s entire body. The entire atmosphere started to turn black.

“How scary.” thought the people watching when they saw the deadly lotus flowers. These lotus flowers looked like they had come straight from hell.

Lin Feng was still calmly holding his sword in the same position. The dark Qi within his sword was getting more and more intense. At the moment when the lotus flames arrived in front of him, Lin Feng finally released his sword strike.

“Lonely sword.”

When Lin Feng attacked, the atmosphere filled with the Qi of his lonely sword. The black lotus flames collided with Lin Feng’s sword and upon impact they vanished. However, Lin Feng’s sword continued to move towards Hei Mo.

Hei Mo looked stupefied. Behind his body, an insanely violent black fire appeared. At the same time, an infinity of black lotus flames started orbiting around his body. His body was surrounded by black fire.

The entire atmosphere was being burned by the fire.

When Lin Feng's lonely sword was about to reach him, the multitude of black lotus flames turned into a gigantic lotus flower which rushed towards Lin Feng's sword and blocked his attack.

“My lotus flower is not only an offensive attack, it can also be used for protection. It is impossible for you to break through It.” said Hei Mo arrogantly while looking at Lin Feng and then added: “I said it already. Today will be the day that you die.”

Chapter 177: Cherish a fight

Lin Feng was staring at the huge black lotus, which looked like an illusion. His sword was stopped.

But Lin Feng still looked calm. His black eyes looked extremely cold. His mouth started moving and he began to speak.

“Really? I can’t break through?”

He said these words in a cold, indifferent tone, and when he finished talking, the Qi from his lonely sword became even more intense. It looked like it could annihilate anything that stood in its path, as if there was nothing else in the world but Lin Feng’s sword.

Sword of Nirvana was a very quick skill to perform. It was a high level Xuan skill. It made attacks much sharper and more lethal. It was better than some of the skills at the low Di level.

Lin Feng slightly closed his eyes. His sword emitted a whistling noise as the Qi rushed through the air. There was no surge of sharp sword force, but suddenly, Lin Feng’s sword started unceasingly shaking.

“Huh?” Hei Mo looked perplexed while looking at the sword upon his black lotus.

“Crack!”

A cracking noise spread through the atmosphere. On the gigantic black lotus, a small crack appeared which stupefied Hei Mo.

“Break!” said Lin Feng. The Qi from his Sword of Nirvana attack became even thicker. In the blink of an eye, the black lotus started shattering into pieces. Lin Feng was pressing forward with indomitable will and was moving straight for Hei Mo, who was unable to block the attack.

Hei Mo’s heart was pounding. His facial expression was hideous. He had been incredibly arrogant a moment before, but at that moment, he, Hei Mo, seemed to be much weaker than Lin Feng.

“I cannot dodge that sword.”

Hei Mo was looking at that majestic sword as it approached him. He knew that he would be unable to dodge the attack. He raised his hands and what seemed to be an infinite quantity of cold black flames emerged from his palms. The small lotus flames combined into a single lotus and moved towards Lin Feng.

“BOOOOM!” The sword and the black lotus collided. The white resplendence of the sword and the blackness of the black lotus were mixing together within the atmosphere. The deadly Qi rolled on the ground of the fighting stage. The fighting stage was completely covered with a terrifying deadly Qi.

Hei Mo and Lin Feng were still in their original locations, motionless.

The crowd was astonished. Their hearts were pounding. Whose attack had been more powerful? Who was winning? Who was losing?

“Crrrr!”

A subtle sound spread in the air. Immediately after, the crowd saw that Hei Mo’s clothes were pierced and blood was flowing from his chest. They were in complete shock.

As far as Lin Feng was concerned, his clothes were torn and a multitude of black marks had appeared on his body.

Both sides had been injured from that attack.

“Hei Mo is much stronger than Gong Lun and the others, just as I expected.” thought Lin Feng. A moment before, Hei Mo knew that he could not avoid Lin Feng’s lonely sword so he didn’t even try. He didn’t panic either, which was a crucial battle skill. Instead, he attacked Lin Feng so both sides had ended up being injured.

Hei Mo remained motionless and silent for a moment while staring at Lin Feng. He then looked at his chest.

“I admit that I underestimated you. You definitely qualify to fight against me, and I will have to use all of my strength to beat you.”

Hei Mo was talking with a cold tone. The crowd was surprised. Hei Mo, a moment ago, had shown extreme strength; how terrifying would it be if he fought with all his strength?

A light flashed through Lin Feng's eyes. He looked at Hei Mo and said coldly: "Can you stop talking crap please?"

"Since the beginning of the battle, you keep saying that I cannot compete with you. Where do these injuries on your body come from?" said Lin Feng coldly.

He was disgusted by Hei Mo's words. Lin Feng now had the qualifications to fight against him, and he had to use all his strength to beat him? That had been the case since the beginning of the battle. Hei Mo was a disgusting and shameless person.

"You will understand what I mean." said Hei Mo indifferently. He raised his head and a black fire emerged. A multitude of small black lotus flames surrounded his body and slowly started dancing through the air.

"Fusion." shouted Hei Mo in a deep voice. These small black lotus flames started rushing into Hei Mo's skin and muscles. Suddenly, black lines appeared all over his body. The crowd was astonished by what they were witnessing.

At that moment, it was as if the crowd had understood why he had called himself Hei Mo. He was named as a black evil spirit.

A gigantic amount of deadly Qi rushed from his body. The crowd could not believe their eyes. At that moment, Hei Mo's entire body looked like it was just a huge deadly black fire. That Qi was terrifying.

The scariest thing was that Hei Mo's Qi seemed to be increasing.

“BOOOOM!”

The hearts of the people in the crowd were pounding. Seventh Ling Qi layer. Surprisingly, that Qi had the strength of the seventh Ling Qi layer. It was a terrifying Qi.

“It seemed like Hei Mo had been hiding his real strength. Swallowing these black flames gives him the strength of the seventh Ling Qi layer. How terrifying. Lin Feng will definitely die.”

The crowd was absolutely astonished. Being of the sixth Ling Qi layer was scary enough. They hadn't thought that Hei Mo would be so strong. Could Lin Feng still resist him?

Lin Feng was equally surprised. What kind of trick was that? Being able to absorb the black flames to increase one's cultivation level?

“Seventh Ling Qi layer.” thought Lin Feng. Even though he knew that Hei Mo was close the seventh Ling Qi layer when they arranged the battle, his strength, now that he had reached the seventh Ling Qi layer, was actually terrifying.

While looking at the fighting stage, Yu Qiu smiled and said indifferently: “Lin Feng will definitely die.”

Then, someone amongst the members of the Nie Clan seemed moved and said: “Surprisingly, his father really helped him to reach a high cultivation level. Even if his second son is dead, he can still be proud.”

Nobody believed that Lin Feng had a chance to win anymore. They were all sure that Lin Feng was going to die.

Hei Mo looked at Lin Feng with despising eyes and slowly said: “You made me use my flame fusion skill, so you can be proud of yourself, but you are about to die.”

Lin Feng remained silent. He had an acute perception of everything that was happening around him, including Hei Mo’s powerful increase in Qi. He was still holding his sword calmly. His body moved again and he thrust his sword forward. His sword looked simple and ordinary.

“Hmph.” Hei Mo smiled. The black flames turned into a vortex and moved to block Lin Feng’s sword. Such an ordinary sword strike should be easy to block, but at that moment, Lin Feng’s sword started to shake.

Lin Feng’s sword pierced through Hei Mo’s vortex and moved towards his chest. An incredibly huge amount of sharp deadly Qi fell onto Hei Mo’s body.

“No....” Hei Mo’s facial expression drastically changed. A monstrous Qi emerged from his body. His hands were violently shaking. At that moment, an oppressive energy rushed towards Lin Feng’s body. It looked like a black flame was dancing around Lin Feng.

“Vanishing Shadow, die!”

Lin Feng looked serene while saying these few words. Immediately, his body vanished like a shadow. Even when seeing it from so close, it seemed like an illusion, but it felt extremely real. Lin Feng’s sword continued moving forwards.

“Pfssshhh...”

The noise of Lin Feng’s sword penetrating through Hei Mo’s flesh filled the air. His sword cut through Hei Mo like a hot knife cutting through butter.

“BOOOM!”

The crowd was stunned. They couldn’t believe their eyes. How was that possible? Really, how was that possible?

At the moment when Hei Mo temporarily enhanced his power to have the strength of the seventh Ling Qi layer, they all thought that Lin Feng was going to be exterminated by Hei Mo’s flames. They all thought that Hei Mo would easily kill Lin Feng. But Lin

Feng remained calm throughout the entire battle. He had taught the crowd a lesson to not be so quick to judge. His sword had pierced straight through Hei Mo's chest.

Yu Qiu was stupefied. Lin Feng had surprisingly killed Hei Mo with his sword.

“Yan Er.”

The leader of the Nie Clan stood up. The smile that he had on his face a moment before had completely disappeared. He was shocked. How... How could it turn out like this?

“Rrrghghghh.....”

The only sound that came from Hei Mo's mouth was something that sounded bestial. His long and messy hair was flowing in the wind. The black lines which covered his body were unceasingly moving while a surge of deadly Qi emerged from him.

“Die!” shouted Hei Mo. His fist rushed towards Lin Feng and crashed onto his body. Lin Feng's sword slipped from his grip and his body was pushed backwards. That punch left a black mark on Lin Feng's chest. His clothes were completely burned where the punch had landed.

“Psss...” Blood was flowing from the corner of Lin Feng's mouth. Hei Mo was walking like a madman towards Lin Feng. When he arrived in front of Lin Feng, he punched him again and Lin Feng's

body flew away. Blood filled the air.

“Die!”

Hei Mo was in a frenzy. He was completely insane. Surprisingly, Lin Feng had injured him with his sword. If he had bent down an inch, Lin Feng’s sword would have penetrated directly into his heart. That was an extraordinary humiliation for him.

He was walking very fast. At that moment, Hei Mo really looked like a demon. He wanted to brutally slaughter Lin Feng.

But at that moment, an extremely cold and powerful force emerged. It was so freezing cold that it made Hei Mo stop. The crowd was also stupefied. They looked behind Lin Feng. Not far from him, there was a pure and holy silhouette. She was walking slowly towards Lin Feng.

“It’s her again.” The crowd was astonished. It seemed like she was ready to attack. In the end, Lin Feng couldn’t compete with Hei Mo, but nobody would make fun of Lin Feng. Hei Mo’s strength was too incredible. Lin Feng had already achieved something great and had nearly killed Hei Mo. Lin Feng could be proud of himself. Everybody would remember that.

But what stupefied the crowd is that Lin Feng, who was kneeling on the ground, raised his hand and said to the silhouette behind him: “Let me do it myself.”

Meng Qing looked at him with a strange expression. She wanted to shake her head. How was she supposed to watch Lin Feng die and not help him?

At that moment, Lin Feng stood up. He looked like a proud and lonely man. He was firm and tenacious.

“Men, cherish a fight. If I die today, I will die happy and proud.” said Lin Feng calmly, which astonished the crowd. Cherish a fight?

Lin Feng was fighting to win or die.

He closed his eyes. His brain could analyze everything that was happening around him. It was as if everything was moving in slow motion.

“Celestial Spirit.” Lin Feng called out in his heart. Lin Feng could sense that his perception of the world surrounding him grew even more. At that moment, his body seemed to be moving at an incredible speed compared to the rest of the world. He was also looking at the Celestial Book. He hadn’t released the book spirit, but for some reason, he could still clearly see it. He started reading the first page slowly.

On the first page, there was a sword in suspension. It was a divine deadly sword.

Chapter 178: Sword energy

That sword was in suspension inside the celestial book. It was a deadly black sword.

Even though it was only a picture, when Lin Feng looked at that picture, his heart was racing.

It gave a feeling of pride and serenity. That sword could annihilate everything and its energy was majestic. It seemed like nobody could stop that sword as if that sword could annihilate all of creation.

Lin Feng had never thought that a picture could make his heart pound like it had. It seemed like that sword had been created for the sole purpose of destruction.

“If I could control the energy of that sword illusion, I could destroy anything in my path. I would need to fuse with that sword. I would become the sword and the sword would become Me.” thought Lin Feng.

His thoughts were actually correct. Even though he was using a sword and most people thought that he was a sword master, Lin Feng was aware of the fact that he was far from being a master. Only if Lin Feng could reach an extremely high level of mastery would he then consider himself as a real sword master.

Lin Feng took a deep breath and slowly exhaled. Lin Feng's thought was deeply profound. Everything was progressing within

his mind. In the blink of an eye, he had understood a great deal of things.

Lin Feng was closing his eyes. He was motionless. Other people thought that his injuries were too serious and that he was trying to recover.

Everybody wanted to see how Lin Feng was going to cherish his fight against Hei Mo.

Nobody doubted Lin Feng's determination because at that moment, he was still releasing an incredible amount of sharp sword force. What surprised the crowd even more is that Lin Feng's force was becoming more and more powerful.

Apart from his will to fight, Lin Feng was still releasing deadly Qi.

“How tough, how persistent!”

The crowd was astonished. Even in such conditions, Lin Feng was still determined to fight.

But at that moment, on the viewing platform, Yu Qiu and the leader of the Nie Clan were astonished as well. They were both frowning. How could Lin Feng be so strong and his strength seemed to be increasing. How could he reach such strength? Even his deadly Qi was become stronger and stronger.

“He’s controlling pure energy!”

The two of them suddenly thought of something. They were stupefied. Lin Feng was controlling energy.

The second prince Duan Wu Ya as well as Long Ding were fixedly staring at Lin Feng and could sense that his strength was increasing. Everyone was looking at him while looking perplexed.

Control, Lin Feng could control his energy.

“Yan Er, will soon kill him.” said the leader of the Nie Clan at that moment which everyone look towards Lin Feng and Hei Mo. Hei Mo was moving towards Lin Feng again.

“BOOOM!”

A terrifying energy emerged from Lin Feng’s body. It seemed like an infinite energy mixed with deadly Qi. It seemed like Lin Feng had fused with this energy. In the blink of an eye, Lin Feng released all the energy he had been controlling at the same time. Lin Feng was surrounded by a strong wind. Lin Feng’s torn clothes were fluttering in the wind.

“He has become stronger.”

The crowd was calmly staring at Lin Feng. The Qi that Lin Feng had just released was at the sixth Ling Qi layer and not of the fifth any longer.

Lin Feng, while controlling his energy, had broken through to the next Ling Qi layer.

Hei Mo's facial expression also slightly changed at that moment. His steps grew even more insane. When he arrived in front of Lin Feng, he threw a punch towards Lin Feng which was surrounded by black flames.

At the same time, Lin Feng opened his eyes. A bright and resplendent light suddenly blinded Hei Mo which forced him to close his eyes. When his fist should have reached Lin Feng, Lin Feng was already ten meters away from him.

When Hei Mo saw Lin Feng, he became anxious. He wasn't filled with the same determination as a moment before.

When Lin Feng was still at the fifth Ling Qi layer, there was a huge difference but Lin Feng had broken through to the sixth Ling Qi layer, how terrifying was that?

"You have already lost." said Lin Feng indifferently while looking at Hei Mo which surprised him.

"You are no longer an opponent for me. You are not courageous and powerful anymore. A short time ago, I still admired your strength, but now you are just acting like a sore loser. You are not qualified to fight against me anymore." said Lin Feng. His energy had reached a pinnacle and could oppress anything in his path.

Hei Mo's heart was racing in his chest. He was staring at Lin Feng. He didn't reply. Actually, what Lin Feng had said, made his heart start to beat faster. When Lin Feng had managed to injure him, Hei Mo's confidence and arrogance had been destroyed.

"Yan Er, he's killing your motivation, don't let him fool you." Shouted someone from the Nie Clan on the viewing platform. Hei Mo was surprised. He looked at Lin Feng, who had a smile on the corner of his mouth.

"Regardless of the fact of whether I am destroying your motivation or not, you cannot deny that your heart is racing and you do not doubt my words. That's enough."

When Lin Feng finished talking, he started walking again. His sword energy and deadly Qi were still growing stronger and stronger.

"Sword." said Lin Feng. At that moment, a sword illusion appeared in his hand. It was in suspension and it was pitch black. That was the sword from the picture.

"Sword energy."

The crowd was astonished. How was that possible? Lin Feng could also use sword energy. Only cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer could use pure energy to attack. That was one of the tools of the Xuan Qi Layer to kill their enemies.

Even though Lin Feng had broken through to the sixth Ling Qi layer, how could he use energy?

“Wrong, that’s not pure energy control. It’s a skill... or in other words, he’s controlling the sword energy with his own will.”

Some people on the viewing platform who were extremely strong understood what was happening. They were also stupefied. Even though it wasn’t pure energy, it was still very scary. Relying on his own control rather than on his spirit, Lin Feng had surprisingly been able to make a sword illusion appear. His sword illusion was even releasing deadly Qi. If someday, Lin Feng was able to use real pure energy then his strength would become monstrously terrifying. Then he would become a truly majestic figure.

Lin Feng was also aware of his weaknesses. Relying on control, he had been able to use the sword illusion which was in the celestial book but as before, his strength and his control was not sufficient.

A light flashed. Lin Feng unsheathed his soft sword which was around his waist. His soft sword and the sword illusion fused together. Lin Feng’s sword energy and the deadly Qi invaded the entire atmosphere.

“Hei Mo, this will end with one sword strike.” said Lin Feng. His body flickered and he transformed into a shadow.

Vanishing shadow skill.

From the viewing platform, people couldn't see clearly what was happening. They could only see a sword which was emitting a terrifying energy.

Hei Mo was intensely staring at the sword. That sword wasn't as resplendent or as simple as the sword which had injured him a moment before but he knew the strength of the attack was immense. The energy within as well as the deadly Qi around it was much stronger.

That sword was the result of the combination of the vanishing shadow skill and controlling sword energy.

When Hei Mo looked at the sword, he had the impression that it was a normal sword. However, when it was about to reach him, it started to glow and moved straight towards his heart.

“Black lotus.” shouted Hei Mo extremely loudly while using his spirit. A gigantic black lotus appeared in front of him and blocked the way.

However, when Lin Feng's sword arrived in front of the black lotus, it pierced directly through it. That sword was destined for Hei Mo.

“This doesn't look good. Yan Er is in danger.” said the head of the Nie Clan when he saw Lin Feng's sword. He stood up and instantly rushed towards the fighting stage. A brutal and oppressive Qi fell onto Lin Feng's body.

Considering his strength, he understood how terrifying Lin Feng's sword attack was.

“I didn't get involved, you cannot get involved either.”

While the head of the Nie Clan was getting involved, Meng Qing released some freezing Ice force which moved straight towards the head of the Nie Clan. His facial expression drastically changed. Yan Er was in danger!

“Boy, stop!”

At that moment, while Lin Feng's sword was piercing through the black lotus, a loud voice resonated in his ears which made his heartbeat accelerate.

Chapter 179: Death Ploy

“Sound attack.”

Lin Feng’s soul was shaking. Lin Feng was still holding his sword, but it seemed unable to move further.

Besides, under the pressure of that potent sound attack, Lin Feng was unable to move his body for a brief moment. How could such a fusion of deadly energy be stopped so easily?

Lin Feng’s opponent Hei Mo, could use a trick to gain the strength of the seventh Qi layer. He was extremely powerful, but he could not stop that attack.

“Die.”

The black lines on Hei Mo’s body started swirling in an insane way. His body released a terrifying deadly Qi.

“BOOOM!” Fluphy has exploded!!

The entire atmosphere vibrated. Lin Feng’s sword penetrated into Hei Mo’s body, but left only a faint trace of blood. Then Lin Feng’s body was blown away by Hei Mo’s brutal attack.

The noise of Lin Feng’s body falling onto the ground spread in the air. Blood was flowing from the corner of his mouth.

A deathly stillness filled the atmosphere. Had Lin Feng lost that battle after all?

Wasn't Lin Feng stronger than Hei Mo? Of course, it wasn't the case. He was, at least, as strong as Hei Mo. Lin Feng's sword had nearly killed Hei Mo. If Yu Qiu hadn't shouted like that, Hei Mo would have already been dead. Just like Lin Feng had pointed out, Hei Mo had lost his courage and was hesitant, he wasn't as determined as before. All of these things meant that Hei Mo had already lost before the battle even began.

Hei Mo was much weaker than Lin Feng.

However, Yu Qiu got involved and had influenced that battle. What happened was unfair, but who would dare blame Yu Qiu?

If somebody dared offend him and the Yu Clan, even if it was the Celestial Academy, he would destroy them, and even worse if it was a mere student of the Celestial Academy.

Lin Feng who was on the ground raised his head and looked at Yu Qiu, who was sat on the viewing platform. His eyes were filled with endless hatred.

"Truly shameless." Lin Feng was looking at Yu Qiu with endless killing intent, but he knew that he was nothing in comparison with Yu Qiu. If he dared to try and kill him, he would just bring about his own destruction.

In that world, only those who were extremely strong were respected. Honor and integrity didn't count for anything. If someone was strong, then nobody would dare to contradict them.

Meng Qing's body disappeared. She quickly moved next to Lin Feng and helped Lin Feng to stand up. Her beautiful face was filled with coldness.

"How are you?" She asked.

"I'm alright." Lin Feng wiped off the blood from the corner of his mouth. He looked extremely proud. He was standing perfectly straight.

"What a proud young man." thought the crowd while looking at Lin Feng. Their hearts were filled with admiration for him.

Lin Feng had surprised them throughout the whole battle. Hei Mo, one of the top ten students of the Celestial Academy, had to use all his strength against Lin Feng who was at the fifth Ling Qi layer. He even had to rely on the power of his black lotus to possess the strength of the seventh Ling Qi layer. Besides, at the moment when Meng Qing had wanted to help Lin Feng. He had refused and had said the outcome of the battle for him would be victory or death.

Immediately, when the entire crowd thought that he had already lost the battle, Lin Feng had broken through to the sixth Ling Qi layer. Then, he released an attack which should have killed Hei

Mo, but Yu Qiu interrupted him. But thanks to his strength and determination, Lin Feng had gained everybody's esteem and admiration.

Even in critical conditions, Lin Feng was still standing perfectly straight.

Hei Mo was looking at Lin Feng. He looked perplexed. He didn't look arrogant and proud anymore.

It was very clear to him that he had lost the battle. If Yu Qiu hadn't been there a moment ago, Lin Feng's sword would have pierced through his heart and killed him.

But Lin Feng wasn't looking at him, instead, he was staring at Yu Qiu as if Hei Mo wasn't there anymore. Hei Mo felt ridiculous.

The atmosphere was filled with deathly silence. It was very oppressive for everybody. Everybody felt uncomfortable.

At that moment, a faint laughter broke the silence. The second prince, while looking at the fighting stage, said: "You are both extremely strong, no matter who, you are both students of the academy, if one of you died, it would be a great loss for the Celestial Academy and even for our country. Let's put an end to the battle now."

Duan Wu Ya wanted to put an end to the battle but hadn't blamed Yu Qiu for having intervened. It seemed that, no matter

what the situation was, it was impossible to guess what the second prince really thought.

Long Ding looked at Duan Wu Ya as if he was surprised. He then immediately looked at the Yu Clan and the Nie Clan. As if the situation had suddenly become clear, he nodded and said: “Alright, that’s the end of the battle.”

The Nie Clan didn’t say anything. It wasn’t such a bad idea to stop at that point. After all, Hei Mo’s victory wouldn’t have been very honorable after all. If he had killed Lin Feng, people would have despised Hei Mo for his behavior.

“Hehe, how could a battle to death finish before the end result? The disciples of the Celestial Academy usually aren’t such cowards?” said Yu Qiu indifferently while smiling at Long Ding. The crowd was stupefied. He wanted Lin Feng to die.

Besides, he had said on purpose that the disciples of the Celestial Academy weren’t cowards. He wanted to make Long Ding angry. What an evil man.

Lin Feng had offended him so Yu Qiu was going to do anything to try and create difficulties for Lin Feng. He wanted Lin Feng to die and didn’t care about making His Highness the crown prince lose face because of it.

Yu Qiu was a member of the Yu Clan, he was obviously arrogant.

Long Ding was staring at Yu Qiu. He wanted to say something, but didn't open his mouth. He only heard the sound of a cold and detached voice.

“Of course! The people of the Celestial Academy are not cowards, unlike the members of the Yu Clan.”

The person who had said these words was obviously Lin Feng. He fixedly stared at Yu Qiu. He sounded cold and indifferent which gave everyone the impression that he was insane. He surprisingly still dared to insult Yu Qiu. Could it be that he really wanted to die?

They didn't think about the fact that Yu Qiu already wanted Lin Feng's life. Even if Lin Feng provoked and offended him again, it didn't matter much anymore.

“Even dead people dare to say such crazy things.” Yu Qiu's pupils slightly shrank revealing murderous intentions. He looked at Lin Feng and said: “When did my clan, the Yu Clan, ever contain cowards? What gives you the right to talk this way?”

“I don't have the right to talk that way?” Lin Feng smiled coldly, walked forwards and said: “I want to ask you though, how strong is the Yu Clan? ...and its young members, how strong are they?”

“The Yu Clan frightens everyone in the Imperial City. It can easily annihilate the Celestial Academy... and you ask me how strong we are?” sneered Yu Qiu before adding: “Besides, concerning the young generation, they are, of course, all giants

amongst men. They are extremely strong.”

“Giants amongst men? You’re really shameless! I didn’t know a bunch of scum could be considered as giants amongst men.”

While talking, Lin Feng was smiling coldly. Yu Qiu was even more furious. Lin Feng ignored his facial expression and pointed at the two young men standing to his sides. He then said: “These two, they are older than me. I challenge them both to a battle to death. If the young disciples of the Yu Clan are giants amongst men, then they will fight.”

The two young men on Yu Qiu’s sides were stupefied. They were staring fixedly at Lin Feng. He surprisingly dared uninterruptedly provoke them. These two young man men were not as strong as Lin Feng. They had seen how Lin Feng had almost killed Hei Mo. How could they accept that challenge?

Yu Qiu hadn’t thought that Lin Feng would make such a move either. A light flashed through his eyes showing his uncertainty. Immediately after, he smiled and said: “You cannot challenge Yu Clan members as you wish.”

“Coward!”

Yu Qiu hadn’t even finished talking that Lin Feng interrupted him and said coldly: “If you don’t dare, then you don’t dare, there is no need to try and think about a way out or give excuses. You say that they are giants amongst men, but they are just scum, nothing more. Last time, I violently beat one of them at the Prisoner Arena.

I don't know if he's still feeling a little weak from then. I also humiliated the other one. They are just trash, they are so scared that they cannot get their revenge alone. They had to go and find a senior to protect them. That kind of giant amongst men is just ridiculous to the extreme."

The crowd was a bit surprised by Lin Feng's words. So that's what had started all of this. Originally Lin Feng had humiliated the arrogant young people from the Yu Clan. No wonder Yu Qiu disliked Lin Feng so much.

Lin Feng continued to talk: "But when I see you, it makes me think that the juniors and the seniors of the Yu Clan are probably all the same. Therefore, I am not that surprised by your cowardliness and your shamelessness... and you still dare think that you are better than everyone else. In fact, I would like to ask you a question, are all the members of the Yu Clan so shameless?"

Lin Feng's words stupefied the people in the crowd. Yu Qiu was staring at Lin Feng as the killing intent on his face grew stronger.

"Such a shameless and impudent clan, launching surprise attacks on other people and not even admitting it... and besides you are so satisfied and proud of yourself... Surprisingly, you dare sit on the viewing platform for people of high status. What a nerve!"

As if Lin Feng didn't understand how furious Yu Qiu was, Lin Feng continued talking.

Chapter 180: Pressure

“Hehe.” Yu Qiu was evilly looking at Lin Feng. He was burning with anger and his face was bright red. He was smiling, but killing intent was obvious.

“Shameless? Today, no matter what you say, I will kill you. The only reason is because I am stronger than you and my Yu Clan is unstoppable.”

Yu Qiu’s voice couldn’t sound more arrogant and aggressive than it did at this point. His reason was enough to kill Lin Feng, he was stronger than him and his clan was extremely strong as well. Without listening to anybody else’s opinion, he could kill Lin Feng as he wished.

“Why are you not coming then? Why are you still standing up there?”

Lin Feng was looking at Yu Qiu and his voice sounded indifferent. The crowd was, once again, stupefied. What..... could it be that he really wanted to die?

Yu Qiu narrowed his eyes while looking at Lin Feng and his face crumpled in anger. He looked like he had become completely furious. Yu Qiu had clearly expressed his wish of killing Lin Feng. He wanted to make Lin Feng’s blood flow to prove to everyone that his clan, the Yu Clan, was too powerful to be insulted.

“You want to die and so I will help you achieve your aim.”

When Yu Qiu finished talking, Lin Feng started freezing from the cold energy that had started to surround his body. Under the pressure of that energy, he felt like he was frail and brittle.

And Yu Qiu seemed to be thinking about killing Lin Feng right there.

“Die.”

“Krracck.”

Two sounds spread through the air at the same time. The first one had obviously come from Yu Qiu, who wanted to kill Lin Feng.

However, Yu Qiu hadn't attacked because that second sound had come from the second prince, Duan Wu Ya, who was next to him. Duan Wu Ya's seat made of stone was broken into pieces. Duan Wu Ya was standing up. He didn't look soft and gentle anymore, he looked fierce and heroic.

“Mister Yu, what happened today is the business of Celestial Academy. Now stop with this foolishness, how does that sound?” said Duan Wu Ya while looking at Yu Qiu. He sounded indifferent and calm but his voice was filled with determination.

Yu Qiu had come to make the Yu Clan gain prestige, could he back down so easily? He was Yu Qiu after all.

He wanted to prove to everyone that the Yu Clan was unstoppable. He wanted all these unimportant people to understand clearly how powerful the Yu Clan was.

“Your Highness, you heard that boy. He humiliated my Yu clan. How could I, Yu Qiu, let him off? If I let him off, my clan would endlessly lose face.”

Yu Qiu was looking at Duan Wu Ya and sounded neither servile nor overbearing. The crowd was stupefied.

What was going on? The situation was very strange. It seemed like there was now tension between Yu Qiu and the second prince.

First, Yu Qiu wanted to kill Lin Feng and then the second prince was preventing him from doing so. When everybody thought that Yu Qiu wouldn't make the second prince lose face, he insisted that he wanted to kill Lin Feng. The crowd was puzzled by Yu Qiu's actions.

At that moment, Lin Feng looked at Yu Qiu and the second prince arguing. He took a deep breath and tried to relax.

Since Yu Qiu had arrived, he had been trying to prove to everyone how powerful he was to the extent that he had even contradicted and argued with Long Ding, the Vice-Principal of the Celestial Academy. Even though Lin Feng hadn't been there at the start, after he arrived, Yu Qiu was still humiliating the Celestial Academy to the extent that he had even threatened to destroy it.

There seemed to be nothing taboo for Yu Qiu, he felt like he could act any way he chose and say whatever he wanted. He had even dared to interrupt Lin Feng and Hei Mo's battle. It seemed like he was constantly trying to prove how powerful the Yu Clan was. The rules did not matter to him.

Why was Yu Qiu acting that way?

By making a display of his strength and not letting Lin Feng off; he would prove to everyone that the Yu Clan was the most prestigious and majestic of all the clans and sects.

Even Long Ding remained silent when Yu Qiu threatened to annihilate the Celestial Academy, as if he couldn't bear the responsibility of getting involved.

Everybody could see that the Long Ding and Duan Wu Ya's friendship was quite solid. However, even though the second prince and Yu Qiu's relationship seemed to be of a polite nature, it was still difficult to understand their mysterious relationship.

Lin Feng had already met Duan Wu Ya. Duan Wu Ya had acted as the referee for one of his battles. The result had been that one of the Yu Clan members, who was a student at the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue, had been humiliated and had lost his daemoniac fire lion.

Lin Feng had guessed that Duan Wu Ya and the Yu Clan didn't maintain good relations.

It seemed very clear at this moment that there was not a good relationship between them.

Duan Wu Ya wanted to protect Lin Feng but Yu Qiu really wanted to kill Lin Feng, to the extent that he didn't even care about making Duan Wu Ya lose face. Lin Feng didn't know exactly what Yu Qiu's main motive was though.

But Lin Feng had an even more audacious thought. He thought that the second prince, Duan Wu Ya, was actually the person at the origin of the Celestial Academy, he was the principal who never showed up.

Everybody knew that an institute such as the Celestial Academy could only be established by a powerful person and it probably even belonged to the Imperial Clan. Besides, on that day, Duan Wu Ya had appeared at a critical moment for the academy, which made Lin Feng have the audacious thought that Duan Wu Ya was maybe the person who established the Celestial Academy.

Yu Qiu certainly knew about it, but still didn't care about threatening to destroy the Celestial Academy in front of Duan Wu Ya.

Lin Feng had been gambling since the beginning on the fact that Duan Wu Ya had connections with the Celestial Academy. Lin Feng was putting pressure on Yu Qiu, who wanted to kill him, but he was also putting pressure on Duan Wu Ya to act. He wanted to see if Duan Wu Ya was going to watch him die. He was gambling with his life at stake. He was betting on the fact that Duan Wu Ya and Yu Qiu's relationship would worsen because of him and that they

would not be able to maintain appearances.

If Lin Feng guessed right, Duan Wu Ya was actually the creator and principal of the Celestial Academy. If Yu Qiu killed Lin Feng, his goal to make the Yu Clan prestigious would be accomplished. Lin Feng's conjectures were right so far as Duan Wu Ya was now confronting Yu Qiu. If he had really understood Duan Wu Ya's background, then the latter wouldn't watch Lin Feng get killed.

In fact, Duan Wu Ya was already getting involved, he had smashed his stone chair but Yu Qiu kept insisting.

When Duan Wu Ya heard Yu Qiu's words, he looked expressionless. Immediately after, he stopped talking, slowly turned around and moved down the stairs of the viewing platform. He then left and while leaving, he said a proud and majestic sentence.

“Yu Qiu, try and kill him, then see what happens.”

Try and kill him, then see what happens.

That was a very simple sentence with a clear meaning. When Duan Wu Ya had finished talking, he was already leaving. The most frightening was that he had left right after he finished speaking... Yu Qiu could try and kill Lin Feng, but what would happen to him?

“What a strong method.” thought Lin Feng.

Lin Feng was looking at Duan Wu Ya's silhouette as it vanished. He was very mysterious. All the problems were in Yu Qiu's hands, he also had the choice.

At that moment, Yu Qiu's facial expression was rigid. If Duan Wu Ya had still been there, he could have justified himself, but now that Duan Wu Ya had left, he could not argue his side anymore. He could only choose whether he wanted to kill Lin Feng or not.

After travelling for a short time, Duan Wu Ya arrived at a private mansion of his which was situated within the territory of the Celestial Academy. A silhouette suddenly appeared behind him. It was a black silhouette. Lin Feng had already seen that man in black clothes when he first arrived in the external part of the Imperial City at Qing Xin's restaurant.

"Nan Shan, what do you think?" asked Duan Wu Ya who sounded completely calm.

"Your Highness, Yu Qiu's move was a three-in-one one. He would gain prestige, damage the reputation of the Celestial Academy and make the Nie Clan's opinion of you worsen." replied Nan Shan calmly and indifferently.

He was obviously talking about the opinion of the Nie Clan after Duan Wu Ya acted as the referee. The Nie Clan's esteem for Yu Qiu had probably increased. Besides, it had made the Nie Clan and Duan Wu Ya's relations worsen as well. That was an extremely powerful method.

“I know. I need your opinion, what do you think of Lin Feng?” said Duan Wu Ya indifferently. Nan Shan was surprised. The expression of uncertainty flashed in his eyes.

“He’s an unparalleled genius.” replied Nan Shan sounding indifferent. He was lost in thought for a brief moment. After a while, his mouth moved again and he said: “If, today, he confronted Yu Qiu because he was furious, that’s alright, but if he did everything after understanding your status, that’s truly terrifying.”

“Hehe, of course, it’s the second reason. If he had done it out of anger, I would be really disappointed.”

Duan Wu Ya said: “Are you sure about what happened on that day?”

“Yes, I am sure that it was the girl who was next to Lin Feng.” nodded Nan Shan.

“A cultivator of the Xuan Qi layer... What a pity that we cannot let anyone follow Lin Feng any longer.”

When Duan Wu Ya finished talking, he started walking quickly and his silhouette vanished.

Chapter 181: Holy Courtyard Challenge

Nan Shan was still motionless. He was calmly looking at Duan Wu Ya's silhouette as he was leaving. Immediately after, his voice filled the air once again.

“Besides, it is impossible to hide Lin Feng's status now. Let's arrange things so that the news spreads quickly. They will find out, sooner or later. Besides, Lin Feng has already offended people with high status. Make sure that everybody knows his social status, tell everyone that he is one of my people.”

Nan Shan nodded while looking indifferently. His heart was filled with admiration as he sighed. In the Imperial Clan, the two princes were completely different. It wasn't a joyful thing for their clan but a great misfortune.

The crown prince, Duan Wu Dao, was extremely aggressive and his strength was terrifying. He killed anyone who opposed him. He only said things once and never twice. He was ranked as the strongest of all the eight high-officials. There was nobody who wasn't scared of him.

The second prince, Duan Wu Ya, was very ambitious and talented, he was smart and extremely strong. He was also definitely a genius. Even though he was a few years younger than the crown prince, he was also one of the eight high-officials.

While Duan Wu Ya and Nan Shan were talking, neither of them wondered whether Yu Qiu would kill Lin Feng or not. They were

already certain that Yu Qiu wouldn't dare kill Lin Feng, as if it was impossible for him to take action.

Actually, things were happening just like Duan Wu Ya had anticipated. Yu Qiu was evilly and coldly staring at Lin Feng, but he wasn't attacking him. He just turned and left abruptly.

When the crowd saw Yu Qiu leave, they took a deep breath while feeling relieved. They had surprisingly felt scared for Lin Feng and the Celestial Academy.

The two young men who had been on Yu Qiu's sides were coldly looking at Lin Feng. Immediately after, they left as well.

Not only had Lin Feng already humiliated them but on that day, but he had also announced their humiliation in front of the entire crowd. They would never forgive him.

Anyone who dared offend the Yu Clan would never have a fitting end.

Lin Feng was calmly looking at Yu Qiu and the other two as they were leaving. His eyes revealed his killing intent towards them. What had started on that day hadn't come to an end yet. Lin Feng also understood that the Yu Clan wasn't going to let him off. If, at that moment, Duan Wu Ya hadn't helped Lin Feng, Yu Qiu wouldn't have let him live. If the Yu Clan had an opportunity to kill him, they would have certainly killed him.

Besides, there was something else that Lin Feng didn't understand, why did the second prince want to help him?

Even though Duan Wu Ya and Yu Qiu's relations were hostile. Lin Feng didn't understand what the real causes were, he also didn't understand why Duan Wu Ya continued to help him. Lin Feng was absolutely aware of the fact that Duan Wu Ya was going out of his way to help Lin Feng.

After the Yu Clan left, everybody else started leaving.

But the Nie Clan and the people of the Celestial Academy hadn't left.

Long Ding looked at the fighting stage. Hei Mo and Lin Feng were still standing on the stage. He then said: "Nie Yan, Lin Feng, the battle is over for today. It counts as a draw. You can leave now."

"Little Yan, let's go." said a Nie Clan member to Hei Mo. Even though Lin Feng had been injured, he was way too terrifying. His attacks were all lethal and a single strike could kill. He didn't want Hei Mo to keep fighting against Lin Feng. Lin Feng was too dangerous, he had nearly killed Hei Mo.

Hei Mo intensely looked at Lin Feng. He looked perplexed. Immediately after, he slightly nodded, turned around and left.

Lin Feng looked at Hei Mo's back. That battle was over but everybody clearly understood that Lin Feng was the winner. Of

course, in Lin Feng's eyes, defeat or victory wasn't the most important thing. He had proved to everyone that he was not someone who could be dealt with easily.

Besides, Lin Feng didn't feel hatred for Hei Mo, after what had happened today with the Yu Clan, the conflict existing between Lin Feng and Hei Mo seemed insignificant.

The crowd was looking at Lin Feng. They all had various opinions about him but on that day, Lin Feng's strength and natural talent had caused everyone's hearts to race.

In the middle of the crowd, Lin Qian was staring at Lin Feng. The expression in her eyes revealed uncertainty. He was way too strong. In the past, Lin Feng had been expelled from the Lin Clan and considered as trash. At that moment, Lin Qian felt incredibly inferior and felt like she would never be able to catch up with his shadow. She also had good natural talent but in front of Lin Feng, she was nothing. Lin Feng's cultivation speed was simply monstrous and his battle power was terrifying.

Since Lin Feng had left Yangzhou City, he had already broken through to the sixth Ling Qi layer and even a cultivator with the strength of the seventh Ling Qi layer like Hei Mo was unable to compete with him. A year before, Lin Feng was only at the fifth Qi layer and was considered as trash. Nobody respected him even though he was the son of the former head of the Lin Clan, Lin Hai.

But at that moment, when she realized how powerful Lin Feng was, Lin Qian couldn't believe it. If the Lin Clan learnt about how strong Lin Feng had become, they would probably regret that they

sacrificed him for Lin Qian.

When she thought about how the Lin Clan would react, Lin Qian was feeling anxious. The Lin Clan couldn't learn about him, otherwise they wouldn't pay attention to her anymore and no one would admire her. Everybody would only think about the trash that had been expelled from the clan and not her.

“Don't worry, when we have the opportunity, I will help you kill him.” Said Chu Zhan Peng, who was next to Lin Qian.

He had noticed that Lin Qian's facial expression had changed. Even though Lin Feng was extremely strong, in front of him, he was just trash. It was very easy for him to kill Lin Feng.

The status of high-official was a symbol of natural talent and extreme strength. It wasn't just a rumor, otherwise, there wouldn't have been so many people eager to join the ranks.

Because of the status of high-official, many geniuses had died attempting to gain entry.

Lin Qian raised her head and looked at Chu Zhan Peng. Immediately after, she smiled and nodded. Indeed, even though Lin Feng was extremely powerful, what could he do against Chu Zhan Peng the high-official?

Chu Zhan Peng looked at Lin Qian who was smiling, slowly turned around, looked at the fighting stage and then loudly said: “I

have heard that there are many geniuses in the Celestial Academy and that Lin Feng was one of them. I, as untalented as I am, would like to know if there is a student of the academy that would accept a battle against me, so we can both benefit.”

When Chu Zhan Peng finished talking, the students of the Celestial Academy were surprised. Chu Zhan Peng, one of the eight high-officials suddenly wanted to challenge the students of the Celestial Academy.

The other students of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue were excited, if Chu Zhan Peng challenged them, who would accept?

Chu Zhan Peng was a high official and there were only eight of them in the entire Xue Yue Country, but the Celestial Academy didn't have a single high official.

“I've already said it before, the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue is extremely powerful. It stole all the geniuses of the biggest sects and brought them to a single institution. Since the Celestial Academy was created, we have only relied on our own strength to slowly grow stronger. How could we compete with the Holy Courtyard?” said Long Ding indifferently but his words were poignant. The students of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue hadn't been trained by the Holy Courtyard itself, they were just gathered for their strength after being trained elsewhere.

Of course, Chu Zhan Peng understood what Long Ding meant. He just smiled, looked at Lin Feng and said: “It seems that there are some people who don't agree with Long Ding's opinion. At the Prisoner Arena, Lin Feng humiliated the Holy Courtyard of Xue

Yue and said it was shameless and only fought rigged battles. I want to show him that he was wrong.”

Lin Feng raised his head, looked at Chu Zhan Peng and Lin Qian. Inside, he was smiling coldly.

“The high official of the Hao Yue Sect rushed over to the Holy Courtyard to become a dog and still is in a hurry to show off his strength.” said Lin Feng mockingly and continued: “Chu Zhan Peng, are all of the people of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue like you? Are they all so shameless?”

A teacher from the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue was smiling and staring at Lin Feng. They said: “You don’t dare to fight, why are you talking nonsense now?”

“It was really shameless to give such a name to the Holy Courtyard... Let’s try again though, since the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue is so powerful, why don’t you battle against Vice-Principal Long?” said Lin Feng while smiling.

That teacher was surprised. Immediately after, they said: “Vice-Principal Long is much older than me, what would be the point of fighting against him?”

“If you don’t dare fight, why are you talking nonsense?” said Lin Feng using the teachers own arguments against him. He then said coldly: “The students of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue are really shameless and its teachers are the same. You refuse to fight against Vice-Principal Long saying that he is older than you, well, I want to

ask you, isn't Chu Zhan Peng older than me as well? When proposing that battle, hadn't you thought about that?"

When the people of the Celestial Academy heard Lin Feng, they all smiled. The people of the Holy Courtyard were really shameless. Chu Zhan Peng was, indeed a genius and one of the eight high-officials but after all, he was already more than twenty years old. If Lin Feng was already twenty, wouldn't he have reached a similar strength level already? Making him fight against Chu Zhan Peng now was just unfair.

The teacher for the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue was a bit surprised, they then said: "The Celestial Academy can choose any student, as you wish, one who is of the same age as Chu Zhan Peng."

"The Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue also has the choice to choose three of your disciples. Choose three disciples, who are the same age as me, all three of them can fight against me at the same time."

The teacher for the Holy Courtyard had just finished talking when Lin Feng hastily replied. Everyone was stupefied and speechless.

"If you don't dare fight, get lost. We don't want such shameless and arrogant people here who think that they are extremely powerful, but actually, just constantly lose face with their performances." said Lin Feng very impolitely and coldly. He then continued: "If I have the occasion, I will have to pay a visit to the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue personally."

Chapter 182: Battle Energy

“If I have the occasion, I will have to pay a visit to the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue personally.”

When the crowd heard Lin Feng say these words while sounding calm, they were a bit surprised. If he wanted to go to the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue, he had to be extremely strong. He had to have at least surpassed Lo Xue and Chu Zhan Peng’s strength, otherwise, he would just end up making a fool of himself.

Nobody had doubts concerning Lin Feng’s determination. Even though they had never talked to him personally, that battle had been enough for them to understand Lin Feng’s personality. He was extremely determined, frivolous and unrestrained. Besides, he wasn’t arrogant and was unyielding when it came to his beliefs. Even in dangerous situations, he didn’t hesitate or retreat. Nobody thought that Lin Feng didn’t mean those words.

Lin Feng also had the heart of a very powerful cultivator. He was firm and persistent. Sooner or later, he would end up surpassing Chu Zhan Peng.

Each and every single person of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue was staring at Lin Feng with an ugly expression on their faces. That time, he wasn’t just making fun of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue in front of a few disciples, but in front of a great number of disciples. The Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue was being humiliated.

How cruel, incomparably cruel.

Murderous lights flashed through the eyes of the teacher from the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue. A murderous aura was being released from his body. A cracking sound spread through the air as his Qi started to pour from his body. The stone chair on which he was sitting was broken into pieces. At that moment, he was standing up.

“The Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue will be happily awaiting you.” said the teacher extremely coldly and then, his silhouette flickered and he left.

The other people of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue glanced at Lin Feng and then also started leaving.

After a while, a subtle sound spread in Long Ding’s ears. The chair on which that person was sitting, which had been broken into pieces, was still crumbling. The stone was slowly turning into powder. That stone chair had surprisingly been broken using pure energy.

Very quickly, only the people from the Celestial Academy were left in the public square. Long Ding was staring at Lin Feng with a profound gaze. He hadn’t thought that Lin Feng would be so amazing during that battle. It was really unexpected.

But it was clear to Long Ding that Hei Mo might not come back to the Celestial Academy after this battle.

The crowd looked at Lin Feng. On that day, one of the top ten

cultivators of the Celestial Academy had been a stepping stone for Lin Feng to become famous.

After that day, Lin Feng's reputation in the Celestial Academy would continue to grow.

“Alright, let's stop everything for today. You can all disperse.” said Long Ding while standing up. He glanced at everyone leaving and finally glanced at Lin Feng, he said: “Lin Feng, you should also go back and have a good rest. You should also take care of your injuries.”

Lin Feng slightly nodded, and started walking. Meng Qing was still following behind him.

Lin Feng took two steps forwards and then a group of people moved in front of him. It was Liu Fei, Jing Yun, Duan Feng and the others. Today was the day of Lin Feng's battle against Hei Mo, they were not going to miss it.

“Are you alright?” asked Liu Fei while staring at Lin Feng. She looked incredibly concerned about him. That guy was really insane. He didn't know when to stop, no matter who was in front of him... and even no matter how many people, he would never give up.

A moment before, Liu Fei and the others had been quite scared, but they were not as strong as Lin Feng. They couldn't do anything, they could only watch as the events unfurled.

Lin Feng smiled at Liu Fei. Liu Fei was surprised, but immediately after she felt relieved, however, she was still staring fixedly at Lin Feng. What was that guy thinking? He wasn't even concerned about his injuries.

"He hasn't died, so why would I?" Lin Feng was scratching his head. Hei Mo's injuries were also serious. A moment ago, Lin Feng's sword had pierced through his chest, but just missed his heart. Lin Feng's organs, and circulatory system hadn't been damaged much either.

"The people of the Yu Clan are really shameless." said Yuan Shan while looking furious.

"They are more than just shameless." said Duan Feng while furious and then said: "If the second prince hadn't been there, the scariest thing is that they would have attacked Lin Feng."

Everybody slightly nodded. On that day, if the second prince hadn't been there, it would have been very dangerous.

"Let's go. I already seized the eight rooms on the fourth floor in the cultivation tower. If you need to practice, you can use them." said Lin Feng to his friends which surprised everybody. They then all smiled wryly. With Lin Feng's strength, it was indeed not difficult to seize the entire fourth floor of the cultivation tower.

On the fourth floor of the cultivation tower, all of them entered into cultivation rooms. Lin Feng brought Meng Qing towards a room as well, inserted some purity stones and said: "Meng Qing,

you should cultivate for a while too. I'll be in the room opposite yours."

"Alright." said Meng Qing while slightly nodding. Her gorgeous silhouette was walking towards the inside of the room, but she quickly turned around and she said, while looking at Lin Feng: "Actually, even if the second prince hadn't been there today, you still would not have died. You don't owe him much."

While talking, the door of her cultivation room slowly closed itself, leaving Lin Feng outside, alone and stunned.

Lin Feng was astonished. He then shook his head and frowned. He was wondering how strong Meng Qing was. He had no idea. The only thing he knew was that last time, the Bai Clan member, the man in blue clothes, who was of the Xuan Qi layer, had been scared away by Meng Qing and had left.

Lin Feng didn't know if she had already fought against other cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer.

"The second prince, Duan Wu Ya."

Lin Feng was lowly talking to himself. That friendly and mysterious prince was unfathomable. At that moment, he was sure that Duan Wu Ya, the second prince, was at the creator of the Celestial Academy. It meant that Long Ding, the vice-principal, had to listen to him. Did Lin Feng becoming a student of the Celestial Academy have anything to do with Duan Wu Ya?

If that was indeed due to Duan Wu Ya, why would he have done that? Why was he so interested in Lin Feng?

Talent, potential?

When he had just arrived in the Imperial City and had just arrived outside in front of the Celestial Academy, nobody knew who he was. Who knew that he had potential and high natural talent? Even if they knew that he was a genius, why would one of the eight high-officials, like Duan Wu Ya, be interested in him?

Being a matter of gaining influence was even less possible. Lin Feng didn't come from an influential family. He descended from the Lin Clan of Yangzhou City and had even been expelled. His sect had even been destroyed by Duan Tian Lang.

Lin Feng frowned. He didn't understand anything about it so it was useless to keep thinking too much about it. He then inserted some purity stones into one of the cultivation rooms and entered.

The door closed itself, Lin Feng sat down cross-legged and closed his eyes. He then immediately released his Celestial Spirit.

In the blink of an eye, the world became a world of darkness. As if Lin Feng had been completely cut off from the outside world; he entered into his own world created from darkness.

At that moment, Lin Feng didn't just release the first layer of his Celestial Spirit, he also completely released the second layer. In Lin

Feng's mind, a magnificent and resplendent light appeared. Colourful spirals spanned into various shapes inside his mind, then his Celestial Book appeared.

At that moment, his celestial book had already opened to the second page as if it had been that way since ancient times.

Lin Feng was looking at that book or more precisely, he looked above it.

There was now a sword calmly floating in the air above the book.

That sword was black, it was the deadly sword of a warlord, born from battle.

At that moment, Lin Feng could clearly sense the energy released by that sword, it was sharp and deadly. It seemed like it could destroy an entire planet without flinching.

That sword, using its own energy and its own life, was able to fuse with Lin Feng.

In the blink of an eye, a month passed. Lin Feng's eyes were still closed and he was still motionless. His conscience was focused on the sword that was floating above the book.

In the small and narrow cultivation room, a sharp sword Qi emerged and mixed with deadly Qi. Then, there was a thick and dense battle energy.

That sword Qi had not been released by Lin Feng's Celestial Book. It had obviously been released by Lin Feng's body. His sword Qi was much stronger than in the past. Inside his sword Qi which was mixed with deadly Qi, was also battle energy. Nobody could look down on that battle energy.

Grabbing the black sword which was longing to rise into the heavens, to dominate both heaven and earth.

Chapter 183: The Lovesick Forest

It had already been two months since the battle between Lin Feng and Hei Mo. The students were also talking about it less and less. The Celestial Academy was once again returning to a peaceful state.

Lin Feng and his friends were in their respective cultivation rooms, making great efforts to increase their cultivation level. Nothing important was happening.

At that moment, a silhouette was coming from the cultivation tower. That person was wearing ragged robes with a great deal of holes. Their robes had become completely tattered, but when the crowd saw the person, they only showed looks of admiration rather than disdain.

That person was Lin Feng.

When Lin Feng looked up at the sky, he saw that it was already evening. There were rosy clouds floating on the horizon. The scenery was splendid, but in the world of cultivation, very few people took the time to appreciate such beauty. The only thing that mattered was strength. The powerful people possessed everything. Those who were weak would only be endlessly bullied.

Lin Feng was walking and wanted to go to his apartment, but at that moment, a silhouette flickered and appeared in front of him.

When Lin Feng saw that person, his facial expression became

slightly rigid, revealing his surprise.

Lin Feng had already seen that person before. When he was in the external part of the Imperial City, he had seen them at Qing Xin's restaurant. He had also seen that the person had an intimate relation with the owner of that restaurant, Qing Xin. That was the man in black clothes. Lin Feng hadn't expected to meet him, especially at the academy.

“Young master Lin, my name is Nan Shan.”

Contrary to all expectations, that man introduced himself first to Lin Feng in a very polite way while smiling and nodding.

“Nan Shan...” repeated Lin Feng in a low voice. He looked at him and said: “Is there something you want from me?”

“Yes.” said Nan Shan while nodding. He didn't have the same cold expression as when he had met Lin Feng for the first time. Instead, he was smiling and said: “I was worried that Young master Lin Feng wouldn't come out of the cultivation tower for a much longer time. Fortunately, I managed to meet you today.”

Lin Feng's stupefaction became even more intense. Meet him? Surprisingly, that person was really looking for him specifically.

“Young master Lin, the young master of my clan would like to invite you to a banquet. I was sent here to find you for that express purpose. I hope that you will be able to honour his invitation and

follow me.” said Nan Shan extremely politely. Lin Feng was astonished. A banquet?

“Who is the young master of yours?” Why do they want me to participate in that banquet?” asked Lin Feng surprised. The last time that he had met Nan Shan, they had almost fought. The fact that Nan Shan had come to invite him to participate in a banquet seemed strange to Lin Feng.

“You know the young master of my clan. You saw him two months ago during your battle. He personally came to see it and was sitting on the viewing platform.” replied Nan Shan. Lin Feng was stupefied: “Is it the second prince?”

“Indeed. My master is precisely His Highness, Duan Wu Ya.” Nan Shan was slightly nodding.

When Lin Feng heard his response, he looked at Nan Shan. Nan Shan was one of the second prince’s people. Therefore, the second prince probably knew about Lin Feng because of the time when he met Nan Shan at Qing Xin’s restaurant.

“Could it be Meng Qing?”

Lin Feng had an idea. Lin Feng’s show of strength on that day had been good but hadn’t been enough to draw the attention of someone as important as the second prince. However, on that day, Meng Qing had destroyed the restaurant, which shocked everybody.

But if the second prince was interested in Meng Qing, why was he inviting Lin Feng to come to the banquet? The probability that he was interested in Meng Qing was very small.

“Why invite me?” asked Lin Feng.

“His Highness said that once you are there, you will understand.” replied Nan Shan. Lin Feng seemed uncertain. He remained silent for a few seconds and then said: “Do we have to leave right now?”

Nan Shan looked at the sky and said: “The banquet should be starting soon. If this is not inconvenient for you, we should go now.”

“Alright.” replied Lin Feng while nodding after hesitating for a moment.

He also wanted to figure out why the second prince was treating him this way.

As far as safety was concerned, Lin Feng, contrary to all expectations, wasn't worried. If they wanted to kill him, they didn't need to use such methods.

In front of the second prince, Duan Wu Ya, Lin Feng was nothing.

Nan Shan hadn't thought that Lin Feng would cooperate so easily. Nan Shan was leading the way and they both left.

“Young master Lin, here. I already prepared the horses.” said Nan Shan while pointing at a place where two divine horses were standing. They both looked incredibly mighty. They even had two red horns coming from their heads. Valuable horses were really completely different from ordinary ones.

“Dragon Colt Horses...”

When Lin Feng saw these two divine horses, he sighed. Dragon Colt horses were horses of very high quality. They were not ordinary beasts and were extremely valuable. They were extremely quick and their legs were powerful. Ordinary horses could travel over five hundred kilometres a day whereas dragon colt horses could travel over five thousand kilometres a day. They were ten times faster than ordinary horses. They were even faster than Chi Xie horses.

“Indeed, Dragon Colt horses.” Nan Shan was pulling a horse towards Lin Feng. He then jumped on the other one, looked at Lin Feng and said: “Young master Lin, I’ll lead the way. Just follow me.”

While talking, Nan Shan pressed on both sides of the abdomen of the horse and left at the speed of light, looking like an illusion.

Lin Feng also jumped on the horse. The two silhouettes flew through the Celestial Academy, drawing a great deal of attention.

.....

In the Imperial City of the Xue Yue Country, the most famous place was probably the Imperial Palace. Apart from it, there was another place which also enjoyed a good reputation.

The best beverage in the Imperial City was the Lovesick alcohol. It gave drunk people the impression of being drowned in love.

There was only one place where that alcohol could be made: the Lovesick Forest.

Many people in the Imperial City only knew the name but had never been to the Lovesick Forest. Many of them had also never tasted Lovesick alcohol either because the Lovesick alcohol couldn't be brought outside of the Lovesick Forest. That was an unbreakable rule and everybody had to abide by that rule, even noble and wealthy cultivators. Even the members of the Imperial Clan had to comply with the rules of the Lovesick Forest.

Since the creation of the Lovesick Forest, the rule had never been changed.

The rumors said that the creator of the Lovesick alcohol had made it especially for lovers.

Besides, for some reason, only wealthy and noble people could enter the Lovesick Forest. Ordinary people were not permitted entry.

At that moment, Nan Shan and Lin Feng entered the Lovesick Forest, but they weren't riding their horses anymore. They had to walk as it was forbidden to ride a horse inside the forest.

When Lin Feng saw the scenery, he entered into a calm and peaceful state of mind. He was surrounded by an emerald forest of bamboo trees, small bridges and flowing water. In the air, there were exquisite fragrances which gave a pleasant feeling to the people with each breath.

It was hard to imagine that there were such sacred places in the Imperial City. It somehow looked similar to the teacher's peach orchard, but the Lovesick Forest looked even more mysterious and mystical.

“What a nice place.”

Lin Feng was sighing in admiration. Some people were drinking alcohol in the middle of the bamboo forest. They all seemed to be having a great time. The majority of them were people of high status, but they didn't look arrogant because they were inside the Lovesick Forest and it wouldn't be unlikely for them to come across people with an even higher social status as theirs.

Nan Shan guided Lin Feng on a narrow and winding path made of bluestone. They were walking slowly, and after a short moment, a lake appeared in front of Lin Feng. It was surrounded by bamboo trees, grass and plants. It seemed like a dreamscape.

In the middle of the lake, there was a broad and vast pavilion.

There were many people inside that pavilion.

“That is precisely the place. Young master Lin, you can go there.” said Nan Shan while smiling. A path made of red wood led to that pavilion.

When he finished talking, Nan Shan turned around, his silhouette flickered and he vanished in the blink of an eye. He had finished his mission and did not need to stay there anymore.

Lin Feng looked perplexed. He looked at that splendid pavilion. The one that he was looking at wasn't the only pavilion. There were other pavilions, but there was nobody inside them. The entire lake was very calm. Only a few voices filled the air every so often, they were coming from the pavilion which contained a group of people.

Lin Feng started walking towards the path made of red wood. When he was about to enter the pavilion, a silhouette appeared behind him in the blink of an eye.

When the person saw Lin Feng's clothes, which were torn and ragged, he frowned and said: “Get the hell out of here.”

Lin Feng turned around and frowned. He looked at that young man. The young man was wearing a magnificent chang pao. His hair was tied. He was also very handsome, but he was coldly and arrogantly looking at Lin Feng with disdain.

Chapter 184: The Yue Clan

Lin Feng only glanced at the young man and then ignored him. He then continued walking towards the pavilion.

“I told you to get lost. Didn’t you hear me?”

When the young man noticed that Lin Feng was ignoring him, his tone became colder. The young men of the Imperial City would never dare to make him lose face, even the second prince respected him to a certain extent. He had been personally invited by Duan Wu Ya to come to the banquet. He hadn’t thought that, on that covered pathway made of red wood, he would meet an arrogant young man wearing tattered clothes, who would ignore him.

Lin Feng continued to walk as if the other young man didn’t exist.

When he saw Lin Feng act that way, the young man put on a serious expression. Immediately after, a wild energy emerged from his fist which immediately unleashed a strong cold wind.

“BOOOOM!”

At that moment, a strong battle energy emerged from Lin Feng’s body and rose into the air. This energy was strange and it looked like it was on fire. It seemed unstoppable as if it would smash anything in its path.

The battle energy had surprised the young man whose heart started to race. That battle energy was causing fear to well up in his heart.

Lin Feng turned around and launched his fist forward with sharp energy around it. The two fists brutally collided.

“BOOOOOM!”

The covered pathway made of red wood shook insanely, but it didn't break. It was extremely solid.

The young man's eyes revealed fear and his body shot backwards from the impact. A strong battle energy was still emerging from Lin Feng's body, he looked like a terrifying warlord.

“Next time, think before you act.” said Lin Feng indifferently. He then turned around and continued walking towards the pavilion, leaving the young man alone on the pathway in a gloomy mood.

He had been taught a lesson by someone who was about the same age as him. Besides, Lin Feng had told him to think before acting with a mocking tone. These words resonated in his brain and made a distorted and ugly expression appear on his face.

“Stop.” shouted the young man coldly. He had just been careless a moment before. He wanted to show to Lin Feng what it meant to think before acting.

But Lin Feng didn't pay attention to his words, he continued to walk down the covered pathway and quickly arrived at the pavilion.

That pavilion was very spacious. People were sitting on the floor in two lines. In front of them, there was a table made of sandalwood, on which had sculptures carved into it which looked incredibly lifelike. That table was extremely precious and valuable, but there they were using it to hold food and drinks.

In the middle of the pavilion, there was a group of lithe and graceful women wearing alluring cheongsam. They were dancing lightly and gracefully while smiling. If they drew the attention of a young man in that place, in the future, they wouldn't need to come and dance there anymore. All the people who entered the Lovesick Forest had a very high social status.

All the young people who were sitting there had an extremely high social status, even inside the Lovesick Forest.

But the two rows of people weren't looking at the dancing women. Instead, they looked at Lin Feng. A moment before, the battle in the covered pathway had already attracted their attention.

When they saw Lin Feng, these people all had different expressions on their face. Some of them looked calm, some looked at him with disdain, some looked stupefied, some looked cold. Surprisingly, that was Lin Feng.

“How pleasant and elegant.”

On the lake, beautiful girls were serving drinks while smiling. What a beautiful sight.

Lin Feng, at that moment, also looked at the crowd. There were about twenty to thirty people. Lin Feng recognized some of them.

There was the young man, whose family name was Yu, whom Lin Feng had humiliated.

There was also the called Meng Chong, whom Lin Feng had provoked at the auction sales market.

There was also Duan Tian Lang's son, Duan Han.

There was Duan Lie's daughter, Duan Yu.

Lin Feng also noticed Wen Ao Xue. He was surprisingly there as well.

All these people had something in common. They were all noble people of high status. They were influential and their clans all had a strong influence.

Lin Feng hadn't thought that he would come across so many people he knew there. He was a bit surprised. Besides, some of them had ice-cold expressions on their face while looking at him.

Lin Feng was smiling deep in his heart.

Apart from his own strength and that of Wen Ao Xue, Lin Feng didn't know how strong the others were. Many of them couldn't compete with him. Back at the Yun Hai Sect, Duan Han was extremely arrogant. At that moment, if Lin Feng fought against him, he would easily be able to win.

“Lin Feng, come sit next to me.”

Wen Ao Xue was smiling to Lin Feng. The smile on his face was even more beautiful than that of most of the women there.

Everybody was astonished, Wen Ao Xue and Lin Feng were friends? Considering the smile on Wen Ao Xue's face, his friendship with Lin Feng wasn't superficial.

But at that moment, the one who had just been blown away by Lin Feng also arrived. A cold energy was surrounding his body. He walked towards Lin Feng releasing oppressive energy. Surprisingly, he had no scruples with fighting in front of the entire crowd.

The crowd couldn't help but get excited when they saw that. Lin Feng and Wen Ao Xue were good friends, which had surprised them, but it seemed like Lin Feng had offended that young man. How audacious!

In the Imperial City, there were very few people who dared

offend him.

“Brother Yue, Brother Lin. You are my guests today. I invited you all to come here. However, I don’t intend to clean up after you. Therefore, please sit down.”

The second prince was sitting on the main seat, he said that to Lin Feng and the young man in a soft and gentle voice which gave everybody the feeling that a soft breeze was blowing through their hair.

When the young man, whose family name was Yue, thought of the banquet again, the cold energy around his body disappeared. He slightly nodded to Duan Wu Ya and immediately moved aside.

“Your Highness.” said Lin Feng to the second prince. Immediately after, he went towards Wen Ao Xue and sat down next to him. He looked expressionless and indifferent.

“Let me introduce him, this is Lin Feng, he’s a student of the Celestial Academy. Two months ago, he fought against Nie Yan to a draw.”

The second prince was smiling. Many people were astonished. Nie Yan was Hei Mo. Many people had heard about that battle. Actually, Hei Mo had miserably lost the battle, but Yu Qiu had intervened. Hei Mo had been lucky to survive with his life. However, many people didn’t know who Hei Mo fought against. They hadn’t thought that it was against the young man in front of them. Many of them quickly retracted their looks of disdain.

The one who had nearly killed Hei Mo was so young. No wonder he had been invited by the second prince to come there.

“A country boy, a tramp.” said a voice coldly. The one who had said these words was Meng Chong. He was staring at Lin Feng revealing that they were on bad terms. In the past, Lin Feng had made him endlessly lose face. At that moment, he wasn’t going to make it easy for Lin Feng.

“A draw against Hei Mo, nothing more... and he surprisingly dares act that arrogantly. That’s not even worth mentioning.” said the young man, whose family name is Yue. “If Hei Mo had used all his strength, he could have won.”

“Brother Yue is only saying what he thinks, Brother Lin shouldn’t pay attention to him.” said the second prince warmly. He only mentioned the young man from the Yue Family but ignored Meng Chong. As expected, Meng Chong wasn’t important enough. That made Lin Feng laugh on the inside. Meng Chong was just a moron, nothing more.

If a person’s status was high but not high enough and they dared to call into question what the second prince said, if they weren’t complete morons then what were they? That was exactly what had just happened. There were social distinctions between noble cultivators.

“Come, Brother Lin, I will introduce you to a young man. You should keep in touch in the future. Brother Yue is a member of the

Yue Clan. The Lovesick Forest was built by the Yue Clan.”

When Lin Feng heard the second prince, he was surprised. The Yue Clan, the Duan Clan and the Yu Clan were the three biggest clans of the Imperial City. No wonder that young man was so arrogant. His social status was high and besides, the Lovesick Forest belonged to his clan.

But Lin Feng was only surprised for a few seconds. Lin Feng had already met people from all the spheres of influence within the Xue Yue Country, except people from the Luo Xia Sect which was situated in a distant corner of the country.

After that, the second prince introduced other people to Lin Feng, including Meng Chong. Surprisingly, Meng Chong’s father was the commander of the Imperial City guards, a group of elite troops. It seemed like the Qi Lin Feng had sensed the other day was indeed that of soldiers.

As far as the young man, whose family name was Yu was concerned; his name was Yu Tian Xing. He was the fifth son of the head of the Yu Clan. His status was exceptional.

Lin Feng had fought with him and after that Yu Qiu had been offended and had wanted to kill Lin Feng.

As far as Wen Ao Xue was concerned, the second prince didn’t introduce him at all.

But when Lin Feng finished listening to the second prince, his heart was pounding out of amazement. These people had the biggest influence in the entire country and could, if they wished, change its entire destiny. They were all people that gravitated around commanders and leaders. They were all at the top of the social pyramid.

Chapter 185: The Beautiful Woman

When the crowd saw how the second prince acted, some of them were jealous of Lin Feng. Why had the prince personally introduced Lin Feng to the others?

After having introduced all the influential people to Lin Feng, Duan Wu Ya grabbed a glass and raised it while saying: “Brother Lin, let’s have a toast with all these eminent young men.”

Wen Ao Xue, who was sitting next to Lin Feng poured some alcohol into his glass and said: “Lin Feng, taste the Lovesick alcohol and see what it is like to be drunk on love.”

Lin Feng was unsure. Duan Wu Ya was being way too kind to him. He had helped Lin Feng a number of times and then invited him to participate in the banquet, which was filled with nobles. Lin Feng had no idea why he was being treated this way.

But Duan Wu Ya was being very polite to him after all and Lin Feng didn’t refuse his invitation. He slightly nodded and raised his glass only to smell a sweet fragrance coming from his glass.

Many people raised their glass. Even though a majority of them didn’t like Lin Feng, considering that the second prince had initiated the toast, they still had to give him face.

However, not everybody followed basic courtesy. At that moment, Yue Tian Chen, sat motionless with his glass on the table in front of him.

He wasn't the only one. There was also Yu Tian Xing, who wasn't moving either. He was just looking at the crowd raising their glasses.

In the past, Lin Feng had humiliated him in front of a great number of people. How could he, Yu Tian Xing, toast with Lin Feng?

But Duan Tian Lang's son, Duan Han, surprisingly raised his glass while slightly bowing in front of Lin Feng. While smiling, he said: "Your Highness, you introduced us to Lin Feng but we still don't know what kind of person he is and which nobility he belongs to."

When Duan Han finished speaking, he looked at Lin Feng. Duan Han had personally come with his father, Duan Tian Lang, to destroy the Yun Hai Sect. He had even fought against Lin Feng. How could he not know Lin Feng's background?

Duan Han was only saying this to ruin Lin Feng's credibility. He already knew that Lin Feng's background wasn't from nobility. Their difference in social status was colossal.

Duan Wu Ya was surprised and looked at Duan Han. Then, a voice broke the silence.

"Brother, Duan Han, there is no reason to be stuck up on details. Drink! Lin Feng, brother, I suppose you have never tasted Lovesick alcohol before. After all it can only be drunk in the Lovesick Forest

and commoners are not normally permitted.”

The one who interrupted was actually Meng Chong. His voice sounded feminine and mysterious. He also sounded deeply sarcastic. Everybody understood what he was implying.

Everybody looked surprised. It seemed like Lin Feng had offended a great deal of influential people.

“Who are you calling brother?” said Lin Feng coldly while looking at Meng Chong which surprised everyone.

“I have, indeed, never come to the Lovesick Forest before and I have never tasted Lovesick alcohol either. However, I do not ever remember ever lowering myself to the point of becoming brothers with a degenerate like you.”

Lin Feng’s straightforwardness pierced through the atmosphere which filled the room. Meng Chong was stupefied. He had deliberately made fun of Lin Feng’s low social status, but Lin Feng had said that he could lower himself to be called Meng Chong’s brother and had even called him a degenerate. Lin Feng meant that even if his social status was low, Meng Chong was still beneath him.

Everybody seemed interested in what was happening. It seemed like there was going to be a great show to watch. Lin Feng had gone there and suddenly dared to act aggressively. He was quite courageous.

They didn't know what happened at the auction market where Lin Feng continuously ridiculed and humiliated him for his vulgar behaviour.

“Your Highness, you clearly saw that I held nothing but the best intentions. It's not that I didn't want to toast to Lin Feng but he is now making me lose face.”

Meng Chong was staring coldly at Lin Feng. He then violently slammed his glass on the table making all the others glasses shake.

“To lose face, you need to have face, do you even have face to lose?” said Lin Feng mockingly to Meng Chong.

After that he acted as if Meng Chong did not exist and turned his back on him. Meng Chong's face turned ghastly pale. He was staring at Lin Feng while wishing that he would get the chance to make him regret his words.

“Everybody, do as you wish, you can drink or not drink, but I will drink to Lin Feng.” said Duan Wu Ya raising his glass and bringing it to his mouth. He downed his glass in one and then looked very comfortable. There was a warm smile on his face. He didn't look like an arrogant prince at all. He gave other people the impression of friendliness, it felt like he was easy to get along with.

Lin Feng also raised his glass and downed it in one gulp. Lin Feng was also easy to befriend if treated with kindness.

While swallowing the sweet alcohol, a refreshing and smooth sensation invaded Lin Feng's body. Lin Feng slightly closed his eyes and enjoyed the taste of the alcohol. A feeling of love invaded his body which made him calm his heart and relax. It seemed like that alcohol enabled him to calm his heart.

“What a mysterious alcohol.” said Lin Feng surprised. The one who made the alcohol had to be an extraordinary person.

Lovesick alcohol made people have the feeling of love from drinking. There was nothing false about it.

At that moment, all those who wanted to drink to Lin Feng also downed their glasses in one gulp. They all slightly closed their eyes and sensed the loving feeling invade their body.

Wen Ao Xue turned towards Lin Feng and looked at Lin Feng with his beautiful feminine eyes. He smiled and said: “Lin Feng, the Lovesick alcohol enables people who drink it to see the one they love. Who did you think about when you drank the alcohol?”

Lin Feng laughed and replied: “What about you?”

“Me?” Wen Ao Xue's was surprised. Immediately after, a wry smile appeared on his face. He suddenly looked incredibly lonely.

“I have long run out of tears to cry for her. The one I love will never see me.”

Lin Feng was shocked as he smiled. It seemed like Wen Ao Xue, was a romantic at heart. It was very rare to see.

In the cultivation world, cultivation was the most important thing for cultivators; it was more important than anything else, including love.

Of course, in the world of cultivation, there were also many people who considered love as something worth more than increasing their cultivation.

“Alright. We have finished our glasses, but the most important person hasn’t arrived yet. It seems like I have to do something.”

Duan Wu Ya was looking at the crowd while smiling. Many people were impatient. They, of course, knew whom Duan Wu Ya was talking about.

Lin Feng was the only person who didn’t know whom he was talking about.

A realization flashed in Lin Feng’s eyes and he then looked at Duan Wu Ya, next to whom there was a free seat. It had obviously been reserved for the other person that was meant to join them.

The most important person surprisingly had such a high social status that they were able to sit next to Duan Wu Ya. He was probably just as influential as the prince.

The people of the Yue Clan and the Yu Clan were only occupying seats reserved for guests and did not get to sit with the prince.

At that moment, Duan Wu Ya stood up and nodded to the crowd. Immediately after, he started walking and suddenly vanished from the pavilion. A short time after, the crowd saw that Duan Wu Ya was already back at the covered pathway made of red wood.

After Duan Wu Ya left, everybody was still sitting in their original places. But Lin Feng noticed that everybody looked excited and impatient, especially Yue Tian Chen. Excitement was filling his eyes and a charming smile had appeared on his face as if he was posing.

Of course, there were also people who were staring coldly at Lin Feng; they were Meng Chong, Duan Han and Yu Tian Xing but Lin Feng just ignored them.

“Who is the person whom the second prince personally went to pick up?” asked Lin Feng to Wen Ao Xue. He was very curious.

Wen Ao Xue laughed and replied: “Wait and you’ll see.”

Lin Feng slightly shook his head. Wen Ao Xue surprisingly was keeping him in suspense.

People in the pavilion started whispering. From what they were saying, Lin Feng understood that the person that the second prince had to go to pick up was supposedly a woman. Besides, it was

supposed to be a beautiful woman. It seemed like all these noble people were quite excited to meet her.

While they were all calmly sitting there, the atmosphere suddenly became calm again. Lin Feng turned around and looked at the covered pathway. Immediately, he saw two silhouettes arriving.

There was the second prince, Duan Wu Ya, and a woman.

She was wearing a turquoise dress. Beautiful black hair was flowing down on her shoulders. She looked elegant and graceful. It seemed like the hearts of the guests were beating in sync with each of her steps.

“What a beautiful woman.”

When Lin Feng saw her perfect face, he couldn't help but gasp in amazement. Her skin was snowy white. Her features were delicate. There was not a single flaw to be seen on her body. She looked like a beautiful orchid whose exquisite fragrance would awake the senses.

“Xin Ye, if you would.” said Duan Wu Ya while stopping and letting the beautiful woman pass in front of him.

The beautiful woman didn't say anything and continued walking. She was walking slowly and gracefully. At the same time, everybody in the pavilion stood up.

“Princess.”

The whole crowd said these words in their most gentle tone. They all had charming and warm smiles on their face as if they were trying to gain the beautiful woman’s affection. However, the beautiful woman didn’t say anything. She just slightly nodded without looking at them and continued walking forwards looking elegant and delicate.

Chapter 186: Arranged Wedding

“Princess.”

That beautiful woman was the current princess, Wu Duan Ya’s younger sister, Her Highness: Duan Xin Ye.

She was not only beautiful, but also had a very high status. The most important thing was that she didn’t have a lover, which made all the noble young men very excited. If only they could engage in a relationship with her, they would become even more famous in their respective clans. It would also be a wonderful event for them.

After all, they all belonged to noble clans. They had many brothers who were all struggling for power. There were constant fights over power.

Duan Xin Ye walked forward and arrived at her seat and sat down.

Duan Wu Ya also sat down next to her, smiled and said: “Xin Ye, here are many people whom you probably have never met. I will introduce them to you.”

While talking, Duan Wu Ya pointed at Lin Feng and said: “That’s Lin Feng, a student of the Celestial Academy. His natural talent is incredibly monstrous. Young as he is, his strength surpasses that of Nie Yan.”

Duan Xin Ye raised her head and looked at Lin Feng in a cold and detached way, but when she saw his tattered clothes, she couldn't help but be stupefied.

In the pavilion, everybody had a very high social status, everybody was extraordinarily dressed, good looking and honourable. Surprisingly, Lin Feng's clothes were in tatters. It was hard not to draw people's attention.

But immediately after, Duan Xin Ye turned around and stopped looking at Lin Feng.

"Xin Ye, look, many handsome young men from the Imperial City are here. Have a glass of Lovesick alcohol and see if there is anyone that you like." said Duan Wu Ya while smiling.

Duan Xin Ye raised her head, looked at him and said: "Brother, what are you talking about?"

"Haha, Xin Ye, I meticulously prepared this banquet for you."

Duan Wu Ya had a clear and distinct smile on his face. Duan Xin Ye looked down at the floor and remained silent. She hadn't been able to find someone whom she liked in all this time.

At that moment, Yue Tian Chen stood up, grabbed a glass of alcohol and gave it to her. He then said: "Xin Ye, long time no see. How are you?"

“Tian Chen, brother, thank you for worrying about me. I’m fine.” Duan Xin Ye and Yue Tian Chen were surprisingly close to each other, but the expression on her face remained cold and indifferent. She slightly raised her glass and took a sip.

“If you’re alright, I can finally relax.” replied Yue Tian Chen in a soft and gentle tone while nodding. He then said: “A short while ago, my grandfather asked me about us. He hopes that we can get engaged and marry.”

When Yue Tian Chen finished talking, many people looked at him with envious expressions on their faces. Yue Tian Chen’s status was much higher than theirs.

Even though the Yue Clan was discreet, nobody dared look down on them. They all clearly understood that if the three biggest clans of the Imperial City had to be divided, the Duan Clan and the Yue Clan were on the same level. Their influence was about the same, much stronger than that of the Yu Clan.

When Duan Wu Ya heard the word “marry” from Yue Tian Chen’s mouth, he intensely looked at him. A mysterious cold light flashed through his eyes.

“Brother Yue, you will not marry Xin Ye.” said Duan Wu Ya while smiling.

“Your Highness, please pardon me for offending you, but my grandfather has no son. His sister only has a daughter. As far as the secret things happening in my clan are concerned, Your Highness

should be even more aware of them than other people. Even though my grandfather and I are not directly related, everybody in the Yue Clan clearly thinks that I, Yue Tian Chen, should be the one getting married to Xin Ye. That would make me the direct descendent and next in line.”

Yue Tian Chen was looking at Duan Wu Ya, but the surprising thing is that he looked nervous while talking. He didn't like talking about his clan matters in front of everybody else.

“Maybe there is another opportunity for a direct descendent, elsewhere.” said Duan Wu Ya sounding mysterious while looking at Yue Tian Chen.

“Impossible. Such circumstances, such a thing cannot happen. Your Highness should understand the situation better than me.”

Hearing how determined Yue Tian Chen sounded, Duan Wu Ya silently smiled and then said: “Anyway, Xin Ye's marriage will happen only happen after she has found somebody that she likes. She is free to choose whom she marries.”

“Come, brother Yue, drink more.”

Duan Wu Ya changed the topic of the conversation, raised his glass and smiled.

Yue Tian Chen was aware that he had no other alternative. He couldn't be too impatient when it came to such things. He thus

continued to drink with Duan Wu Ya.

Duan Xin Ye possesses an incredible inherited strength from her blood spirit. If a man married her and had children, their children would also inherit from that blood spirit.

If a man was married to her, he would also gain many other benefits. However, that kind of woman wouldn't let the young men run after her like a flock of duck, all eager to marry her.

Unfortunately, the others were always willing while she always remained indifferent. She had always reacted coldly and indifferently to such things. She didn't feel like finding love. She had also never been interested in anyone.

Duan Xin Ye was the princess. She had seen many outstanding disciples, maybe too many. Her two brothers were Duan Wu Dao and Duan Wu Ya. The crown prince, Duan Wu Dao, was unique, amazing and extremely strong. The second prince was equally gifted, had high natural talent, he also understood people's expectations and was incredibly friendly. People as gifted as them were rare. An ordinary person would never be able to make her heart skip a beat.

Lin Feng was still sat there sipping his drink and minding his own business. He still didn't understand why Duan Wu Ya had invited him to that banquet, but during the feast, Duan Wu Ya had given Lin Feng a few meaningful and profound looks. Lin Feng didn't understand what he wanted.

“This is a beautiful place and there is a beautiful girl as well, but it seems like something is still missing.” Suddenly said the person sitting next to Meng Chong.

“Brother Feng, what are you implying?” asked Meng Chong while smiling.

“We are all young, handsome men, but on the path of cultivation, we are not all equal. We should add a little to the fun and to enlighten Her Highness, the princess.”

When he finished talking, many people suddenly looked interested. Cultivation was always a good motivation. Showing one’s strength to the princess wasn’t a bad idea at all.

“What do you mean by adding to the fun?” asked someone else. Then, the young man, whose family name was Feng, continued and replied: “Of course I mean battles! We could choose our opponents and exchange pointers.”

“What a good idea. Brother Feng is really extraordinary. I feel ashamed, but I am way too inferior. Who could brother Feng select as an opponent?” said Meng Chong while smiling. Immediately after, Lin Feng lowered his head and continued drinking his glass of alcohol. He could feel that someone was looking at him and that person was the young man whose family name was Feng.

At that moment, many people started looking at Lin Feng as if the main event was about to start.

“I heard the prince, His Highness, say that Lin Feng could defeat Hei Mo. I, Feng Xiao, would like to exchange pointers with him. Would Brother Lin accept?”

When Lin Feng heard Feng Xiao, he raised his hand and looked at him. He then saw that Meng Chong was smiling. Lin Feng was coldly smiling in his heart.

“I admit defeat.” said Lin Feng indifferently and then lowered his head again and continued drinking. Then he just ignored Feng Xiao. He had no interest in displaying his strength to attract a woman.

The crowd was stupefied. They wouldn't have thought that Lin Feng would admit defeat so easily. It seemed like his reputation was undeserved and that the second prince was overestimating him. Otherwise, he would have the courage to accept Feng Xiao's challenge. Besides, he had admitted defeat and humiliated himself.

Duan Xin Ye looked at Lin Feng. She looked very surprised. Face was extremely important for cultivators, giving up was not something someone would do so easily.

“Hehe, Lin Feng, today, the prince and the princess are here. Refusing Brother Feng's challenge is not such a good thing to do.” said Meng Chong while smiling and glaring at Lin Feng.

“What you mean is that no matter who challenges you, you must accept. Is this correct?” asked Lin Feng while looking at Meng Chong.

“If it is to entertain the princess, it is an honour for us to do so, indeed.” replied Meng Chong.

“I see.” Lin Feng slightly nodded, looked at Meng Chong and said: “I challenge you Meng Chong to help me entertain the princess, how does that sound?”

“You...” Meng Chong was stupefied. A cold expression filled his face. Even though Lin Feng’s cultivation level wasn’t higher than Hei Mo, he was still much stronger than Meng Chong. Meng Chong was blankly staring at Lin Feng. He was scared that if he accepted, things would not go well for him.

“What’s wrong? Didn’t you say, a moment ago, that entertaining the princess was an honour for us? Why are you not saying anything now?” asked Lin Feng when he saw that Meng Chong was just blankly staring at him, which made the latter feel gloomy.

Lin Feng didn’t take notice of Meng Chong’s facial expression. His expression turned cold and he said in an ice-cold tone: “If you can’t, then just stop opening your filthy mouth!”

Chapter 187: Burning Battle Energy

“Lin Feng, brother, I challenged you to exchange pointers but you haven’t replied to me yet. At least, you should fight me first and then challenge Brother Meng Chong.” said Feng Xiao mockingly. When Meng Chong heard these words, he nodded and said: “He’s right, Lin Feng. Are you trying to escape the fight by changing the subject? You should first defeat Brother Feng Xiao and then challenge me.”

A moment ago, Meng Chong was at loss for words and had nothing to say but now he had an opportunity.

” What you mean to say is you’ll only fight me if I defeat him?” said Lin Feng in a mocking tone while looking at Meng Chong. Meng Chong avoided Lin Feng’s eyes and looked hesitant. Immediately after, he nodded and said: “Indeed.”

Feng Xiao wasn’t weak. He was at the peak of the sixth Ling Qi layer. He hadn’t seen Hei Mo and Lin Feng’s fight and knew very little about it but he had heard the news that it was a draw. Besides, Lin Feng was still at the fifth Ling Qi layer at the auction market. Meng Chong didn’t believe that Lin Feng, was able to defeat a cultivator at the peak of the sixth Ling Qi layer after such a short time such as Feng Xiao.

The second prince was overestimating Lin Feng’s strength. Feng Xiao would humiliate him.

The crowd was looking at Lin Feng. The second prince was

particularly kind to Lin Feng which caused some of them to be in a bad mood. they would gladly watch if Lin Feng could be humiliated.

Lin Feng sipped his glass of alcohol with a cold aura around him. Immediately after, he slightly raised his head, glanced at the crowd and finally looked at Feng Xiao.

Lin Feng had no choice but to humor him since Feng Xiao really wanted to use Lin Feng to show his strength.

“Where do we fight?” asked Lin Feng indifferently which surprised the crowd. Excitement immediately flashed through their eyes. Lin Feng had accepted the challenge.

Feng Xiao was also a bit surprised. He smiled immediately after, and said: “Watching a battle from the pavilion while drinking some alcohol is a very pleasant thing to do. The landscape is wonderful. We could take advantages of the bamboo rafts on the lake, what do you think?”

“Alright.” replied Lin Feng indifferently. The crowd was sneering at him. Who didn’t know that Feng Xiao had a hurricane spirit and that he was extremely powerful? Choosing the lake as a battlefield would give him a huge advantage. Lin Feng had surprisingly accepted.

“Alright, I’ll go first.” Feng Xiao’s silhouette flickered and in the blink of eye, he appeared on a bamboo raft outside of the pavilion. Then, the crowd saw the bamboo raft move with precise skill

towards the center of the lake.

“What a nice agility technique.” the crowd was amazed. They then looked at Lin Feng to see if they could catch his surprise but Lin Feng’s face didn’t reveal shock. He looked expressionless and calmly stood up.

He slowly walked towards the edge of the pavilion and jumped onto a bamboo raft. Immediately after, the bamboo raft started moving slowly towards the center of the lake. His movements were extremely ordinary and didn’t look beautiful and elegant, which made the crowd look at Lin Feng with disdain.

It seemed like Lin Feng was definitely going to lose that battle. Many people were even regretting that Feng Xiao had challenged Lin Feng before them. If they had challenged him first, they could have gained the prestige and been in Feng Xiao’s position.

After Feng Xiao arrived in the middle of the lake, he turned around. While standing on the bamboo raft, he looked at Lin Feng and a smile appeared on his face.

“Lin Feng, brother, I heard that your strength was exceptional, but today, it seems like it was unjustified. How should I dispose of you?” said Feng Xiao jokingly. At that moment, he wasn’t acting politely anymore, he was now showing his true colours.

“However you wish.” said Lin Feng as indifferently. He was extremely calm. The crowd found Lin Feng’s mind hard to fathom. He was indeed mysterious.

“Hehe, it feels like we are like old friends even though this is the first time we have met, so I will not make you suffer too much. I will cripple your cultivation and let you live.” said Feng Xiao while smiling evilly. His heart was filled with malicious intent. Having accepted his challenge on the lake was an extremely reckless decision.

If he hadn't put on his façade of kindness, how could he possibly get such an opportunity?

“Didn't you just say that the purpose of that battle was to exchange pointers? Why is it that you are talking about crippling my cultivation?” asked Lin Feng indifferently yet his heart was filled with extreme coldness.

These noble cultivators were all the same, really arrogant and considered other people's lives as trash. Their hearts and morals were disgustingly rotten. It was the first time that Feng Xiao was meeting Lin Feng, they didn't have any hatred between them, and yet he was already talking about crippling his cultivation as if it was something ordinary.

When Feng Xiao heard Lin Feng, he couldn't help but heartily burst into laughter. The other people in the pavilion were also laughing. Lin Feng was really a fascinating and amusing person.

“What's so funny?” asked Lin Feng indifferently which made Feng Xiao stop. He looked at Lin Feng and said: “I said I wouldn't kill you, I am showing mercy.”

While talking, he moved his hand and a sharp wind rushed straight towards Lin Feng's bamboo raft.

“BOOOM!”

Lin Feng's bamboo raft was broken into pieces. Water burst into the air surrounding Lin Feng's body.

But the crowd only saw that Lin Feng was surrounded by a wall of water and didn't know if he was alive.

Only when the wall of water fell down once again, they saw that Lin Feng's bamboo raft was already broken and that Lin Feng was still standing there motionless.

“If you don't try your hardest, how do you plan to fight against me?” asked Feng Xiao while laughing and looking at Lin Feng. He had accepted to fight on the lake, Lin Feng was asking to die.

“Do I even need to use any effort against someone like you?” said Lin Feng indifferently. A terrifying battle energy surrounded his body and like a fire spread around him and through the atmosphere.

Lin Feng took few steps on forward. He was skillfully and elegantly walking on the water.

When the crowd sensed Lin Feng's battle energy, they were stupefied. A moment before, Lin Feng was as calm as the lake and now he was releasing battle energy that was sharper than a sword.

Besides, the battle energy was growing even more intense with each of his steps. It was causing their hearts to race.

“Huh?”

Feng Xiao frowned and looked at Lin Feng. Lin Feng looked elegant and agile and his battle energy was piercingly sharp.

“Whoosh!” Feng Xiao swiped his hand forwards and two sharp hurricanes rushed straight towards Lin Feng.

Lin Feng moved his hand at incredible speed and a wave rose from the lake. That wave seemed like it had transformed into a sharp sword which stopped the hurricanes.

“BOOOOM!”

Lin Feng continued moving forwards. Immediately, the wave crashed down and disintegrated Feng Xiao's bamboo raft.

The crowd was amazed by Lin Feng's movements. At that moment, Lin Feng was surrounded by huge waves roaring across the lake. It seemed like the lake had turned into an enraged dragon under Lin Feng's feet. His battle energy was still burning outwards and now covered the entire lake.

Feng Xiao's facial expression drastically changed. He now had an extremely ugly expression. He looked gloomy as if he had just realized how terrifying Lin Feng's power was.

At that moment, Lin Feng looked determined, his mouth slightly opened and he said coldly: "I first admitted defeat, not because I was scared but because I thought that fighting was pointless. Since you really wanted to fight against me, I accepted."

While talking, Lin Feng moved forwards again, it seemed like he was unceasingly moving and suddenly his silhouette looked like it had disappeared.

"Pierce."

Lin Feng's voice spread through the air. The crowd couldn't see where Lin Feng was. Besides, at that moment, Feng Xiao was dumbstruck. Lin Feng looked like a terrifying warlord. Lin Feng's body was faintly discernible and an incomparably huge amount of battle energy was moving towards him. Feng Xiao could not tell where the battle energy was coming from, but he could feel the danger rushing towards him.

"Retreat."

A hurricane emerged in the atmosphere and Feng Xiao rushed backwards. A moment after, his body intensely shook and he loudly groaned. A strong sword Qi had pierced into his body and completely destroyed his Qi passageways before piercing his

dantian.

“I didn’t want to fight, not out of fear but out of disdain for pointlessly fighting.” The crowd looked at the two silhouettes. Lin Feng attacked again, he pointed his finger at Feng Xiao and deadly energy crashed into his body.

Lin Feng did not want to fight against Feng Xiao, that’s all. Defeating Feng Xiao was an extremely easy thing to do.

Feng Xiao had provoked Lin Feng. After Lin Feng had accepted the challenge, he had acted even more wildly and wanted to cripple Lin Feng’s cultivation. Lin Feng instead had crippled Feng Xiao’s cultivation and returned the favour.

Chapter 188: Condescending

Lin Feng had used a single finger to cripple Feng Xiao's cultivation, which was at the peak of the sixth Ling Qi layer.

That finger had been enough to destroy all of his Qi passageways and cripple his cultivation.

“What a terrifying power.”

The crowd was calmly looking at Lin Feng, but their hearts were pounding. No wonder Duan Wu Ya had told them that Lin Feng could defeat Hei Mo. That battle energy could cover the entire sky, it seemed unstoppable.

Possessing a battle energy which could swallow everything was the true power of a cultivator.

How could they know that when Lin Feng nearly killed Hei Mo, he wasn't even as strong as he was now. The power of his battle and sword energy was the result of two months spent practicing in the cultivation tower. Lin Feng could also control that divine black sword with a higher proficiency. He could understand its unfathomable mysteries a little better.

Lin Feng was also deeply affected by the fact that he was able to understand how to use the Celestial Book. The first page had enhanced his power of comprehension and the second page had granted him a divine black sword. That was unconceivable.

Lin Feng did not have the slightest idea as to what his spirit was, but he had thought of a great deal of things. Why were there so many kinds of spirits? How could such a powerful spirit such as his Celestial Book exist? That was a miracle in itself.

At that moment, blood was uninterruptedly flowing out of Feng Xiao's mouth. His eyes were wide open. He was fixedly staring at Lin Feng. He was dumbstruck and looked terrified.

Did Lin Feng really just cripple his cultivation?

When he realized that it really was the case, he started shaking. He was heavily flustered with a face filled with panic, and his body was covered with cold sweat.

Without being able to practice cultivation, he was worthless. Having a worthless person in such a big clan would be a humiliation. His destiny had been completely changed. His fellow clan members were going to make his life a misery.

All the things that Feng Xiao was going to experience terrified him to the bones. He was also endlessly regretting what he had done. Why had he been the first person to challenge Lin Feng? Not only had he not managed to win the princess' heart, but he had also become a useless piece of trash. He would never be able to act arrogantly again. Even a slave girl would look at him in a disdainful way.

Big clans had an important influence, but there were also rules.

His fate was truly terrible.

“A moment ago, you said that you wouldn’t kill me because you were showing mercy. Now, I decided to show mercy for you, brother Feng Xiao, as I have only crippled your cultivation. I didn’t kill you. I am very merciful indeed.” said Lin Feng while repeating Feng Xiao’s ideals. In Feng Xiao’s ears, these words were extreme ridicule.

Feng Xiao had just realized that a moment before, he had acted this way towards Lin Feng, saying such unpleasant words.

At that moment, Lin Feng’s silhouette flickered. He grabbed Feng Xiao’s body with one hand and started moving across the water with great speed. He was extremely fast and agile.

A short moment after, Lin Feng arrived close to the pavilion and jumped inside with a single swift movement. He then threw Feng Xiao’s body onto the floor, naturally and unrestrained.

“What an amazing agility technique!”

The crowd was astonished. They had found out Lin Feng’s true ability. A moment before, his movements were very ordinary, yet at this moment, they were extremely agile and skilful, which astonished the crowd.

Actually, Lin Feng wasn’t an expert at agility techniques. He didn’t practice amazing agility techniques and didn’t have an

agility based spirit. It's just that he had intensely practiced the basics to a high level. In one breath, he could travel at an incredible speed. Therefore, in a single breath's worth of time, he had been able to cross the lake and arrive in the pavilion.

When the crowd saw Feng Xiao's body lying on the floor like a dead fish, they were speechless. A moment ago, Feng Xiao had said he wanted to cripple Lin Feng's cultivation. Lin Feng's reaction wasn't exaggerated at all.

"Lin Feng, you're going too far. Today, His Highness invited us to have fun and the princess is here... but you surprisingly dare to act that cruelly and show no mercy. You crippled Feng Xiao's cultivation. Don't you think that this will make the second prince feel embarrassed?" said a voice from behind, sounding cold and detached. Lin Feng was surprised.

He turned around and looked at Meng Chong. He then said indifferently: "Can you even be more shameless?"

Meng Chong was talking shit again, which made Lin Feng grow furious.

"Am I wrong? Everybody saw that you crippled Feng Xiao's cultivation." replied Meng Chong sounding strict.

Lin Feng smiled coldly and looked at Meng Chong: "Since you think that was cruel, I will show you what real cruelty is. Everybody here was a witness when you said that you would fight against me after him."

When Meng Chong saw Lin Feng's cold smile, his heart was racing and he had an ugly expression. He then said: "If you are that cruel, I will not accept your challenge."

"Do you think that you can act so shamelessly?" Lin Feng said mockingly. Immediately after, a cold expression appeared on his face, and he said: "Do you think that I will bend according to your mood? What kind of person do you think that I am?"

While talking, Lin Feng moved towards Meng Chong.

Meng Chong's facial expression drastically changed. His body flickered, and he suddenly started running out of the pavilion. He then jumped away in an attempt to flee. If Lin Feng had managed to defeat Feng Xiao with one finger, Meng Chong would never be able to defeat Lin Feng.

Lin Feng immediately launched himself forwards and arrived on the roof of the pavilion. He had a cold smile on his face while looking at Meng Chong's body racing through the air. Lin Feng then released his sword Qi and sword force into the atmosphere.

"Come back here!"

Lin Feng raised his hand. He was releasing even more sword energy. In the air, a black sword illusion suddenly appeared. It rushed through the air and crashed into Meng Chong's body.

Meng Chong could not move while travelling through the air. He had jumped in the air to escape. However, in that situation, he couldn't escape Lin Feng's attack and now had no way to protect himself. Even though Lin Feng's attack wasn't very strong, it was enough.

When the sword energy crashed into Meng Chong's body, he immediately fell like a meteor from the sky.

“Bastard, I, Meng Chong, will never let you off.”

Meng Chong shouted these words while falling down. He was extremely furious while Lin Feng was smiling coldly. Lin Feng said: “Since you will never let me off, I don't need to be polite then.”

When Meng Chong heard Lin Feng, he was stupefied. While he was still falling from the air, he turned around and saw that Lin Feng was rushing towards him. Meng Chong's face immediately turned deathly pale. Why did he continue talking nonsense to Lin Feng?

“pssssh.”

Lin Feng arrived in front of Meng Chong, who was still falling down, and without hesitation, raised a single finger and thrust it towards Meng Chong, who was still falling. In the blink of an eye, an incredible amount of sword energy emerged from Lin Feng's finger and pierced through Meng Chong's body, instantly crippling his cultivation. Lin Feng had shown no mercy at all.

“Ahhhhhhh.....”

Meng Chong gave a horrible shriek while agonizing. The crowd could sense an extremely terrifying energy. Lin Feng was really cruel. He was incredibly determined and was a cultivator who stuck to his word. If he said that he was going to cripple someone's cultivation, he did it without fear. These noble cultivators should know better than to provoke an insane person like Lin Feng.

None of them were close to being merciful, but at that moment, they had met someone who made even their ruthlessness seem insignificant. They had to be vigilant. He was a terrifying individual.

Lin Feng had taught them a lesson, a practical life lesson.

That lesson had cost Meng Chong and Feng Xiao both of their cultivations.

Lin Feng came back to the pavilion carrying Meng Chong's body. He then threw his body onto the floor next to that of Feng Xiao. Meng Chong looked dispirited and deathly pale, even more so than Feng Xiao. Even though his body had no strength at all, he was still fixedly staring at Lin Feng.

“No need to look at me that way. If you were able to do the same to me, you would. Besides, today, I didn't want to fight at all, it was your idea. A tooth for a tooth.”

Lin Feng looked expressionless and detached. It seemed like nothing could affect him. Immediately after, he raised his head and glanced at the crowd. He then said indifferently: “Are there any other people who wish to have a battle against me to exchange pointers? I will politely accept all requests.”

His voice was loud and resonated in the pavilion, making everybody feel anxious. In front of his ruthlessness, all of them were powerless to resist.

Chapter 189: Duan Wu Ya's Tempting Offer

The crowd was staring at Lin Feng looking uncertain, everybody remained silent.

Feng Xiao was at the peak of the sixth Ling Qi layer but Lin Feng could cripple his cultivation using one finger. The fact that Lin Feng was extremely powerful was obvious. Besides, he was using a terrifying battle energy, fighting against Lin Feng was extremely dangerous.

At that moment, energy arrived on Lin Feng's body which surprised him. Immediately after, he looked at Yue Tian Chen.

“You want to fight?”

Lin Feng who could feel Yue Tian Chen's energy asked him with a cold tone.

Yue Tian Chen didn't reply. He was staring at Lin Feng as killing intent flashed in his eyes.

Even though Lin Feng had broken through to the sixth Ling Qi layer, it couldn't be that easy for him to defeat cultivators of the seventh Ling Qi layer. Yue Tian Chen had broken through to the seventh Ling Qi layer.

However, if Yue Tian Chen lost, Lin Feng wouldn't let him off easily. He might even cripple his cultivation just like he had done

to Feng Xiao or Meng Chong. If Lin Feng crippled his cultivation, his future would be ruined and even if he managed to have Lin Feng killed after, he would still suffer.

In Yue Tian Chen's eyes, Lin Feng's life was worthless and couldn't be compared to the worth of his cultivation.

Even if he won that battle, he wouldn't exactly gain any prestige. He was the member of one of the three biggest clans. His social status was high. If he fought and won, it would just be another victory for him amongst all his other accomplishments, nothing more. Many people were not worth fighting for him. Lin Feng's social status and reputation were low. He couldn't take the risk of fighting against him. When he thought about this, the energy around his body disappeared and he stopped looking at Lin Feng. He lowered his head and continued drinking.

The crowd was surprised. They had also sensed the energy emerging from Yue Tian Chen's body and then it had suddenly disappeared. He didn't want to take the risk and fight against Lin Feng so they were even less willing to take that risk.

For a while, the pavilion was drowned into absolute silence. Not a single voice was to be heard.

"Hehe." the second prince, Duan Wu Ya, laughed softly breaking the silence. He looked at Duan Xin Ye, who was sitting next to him, and said in a low voice: "Xin Ye, what do you think of Lin Feng?"

At that moment, Duan Xin Ye looked at Lin Feng. She felt that

there something different about Lin Feng. Even though he was wearing tattered clothes, he seemed domineering. In her heart, she secretly had a good sentiment for him. Lin Feng was a proud and domineering young man.

However, such a proud and domineering young man had initially refused to battle against Feng Xiao. Maybe the fact that he was wearing tattered clothes was the same reason for which he had refused the challenge, because Lin Feng didn't care about such petty things.

Suddenly, Duan Xin Ye was stupefied by Duan Wu Ya's voice. She turned towards him and looked at him as if the situation was funny. She couldn't help but lower her head and said: "Brother, what's wrong?"

"Haha, what's wrong, little sister? You're suddenly lost in thought. You're even blushing."

Duan Wu Ya was laughing making Duan Xin Ye feel even more embarrassed. Even though she was a princess, she was a woman above all. Just like any other woman, talking about such things was embarrassing.

The crowd was stupefied. Some of them had piercingly cold expressions on their face as they glanced at Lin Feng.

Among them, many of them wanted to become Duan Xin Ye's husband. Even though they didn't really have feelings for her, they still hoped to marry her.

If they could get married, their future would be filled with a wider range of opportunities to increase their status.

At that moment, Duan Wu Ya was talking to Duan Xin Ye about Lin Feng in a favourable way. Inevitably, the others were looking at Lin Feng in a cold way.

Lin Feng frowned and lowered his head and there wasn't the least bit of joy in his heart, it was rather coldness. He then turned towards Duan Wu Ya and looked at him with indifference.

“Alright, everybody clearly knows why I invited you today. Since there is nothing to say anymore, you can all leave.” said Duan Wu Ya while looking at the crowd. After ordering for guests to leave, he looked at Meng Chong and Feng Xiao who were lying down. He then said: “Please take away these two as well.”

“Lin Feng you stay here, I have some things I would like to discuss with you.”

Duan Wu Ya said while looking at Lin Feng which stupefied everybody else. They coldly looked at him as they left, they had no choice but to leave. Duan Wu Ya had already ordered for them to leave. They had to be obedient.

Wen Ao Xue looked at Lin Feng with a deep meaningful look, he then gently tapped his shoulder as he walked past and left the pavilion.

A short time after, in the pavilion on the lake, the atmosphere had become especially quiet. Duan Wu Ya, Duan Xin Ye and Lin Feng were the only people left.

“Your Highness, what do you need to discuss with me?” asked Lin Feng with indifference.

“Hehe.” Duan Wu Ya laughed softly. He looked at Lin Feng and said: “It seems like you’re not in a good mood.”

“Your Highness, do you think that I have a reason to be in a good mood?” asked Lin Feng in a cold and detached way. Duan Wu Ya didn’t take notice of his tone and was still warmly smiling.

“Brother, you two can chat, I will leave now.” said Duan Xin Ye while standing up. She wanted to leave but Duan Wu Ya prevented her from leaving and said: “Xin Ye, I am your brother and have nothing to hide from you. Stay here. Don’t be so impatient to leave.”

Duan Xin Ye’s beautiful face revealed an expression of uncertainty but she then gently nodded her head. Immediately after, she slowly sat down again and calmly stayed for their conversation.

“Lin Feng, what makes you unhappy?” asked Duan Wu Ya while kindly and warmly smiling at Lin Feng.

Lin Feng looked at Duan Wu Ya and slowly said: “Since Your Highness wants to listen to me, I will speak.”

Lin Feng clearly understood that Duan Wu Ya was well aware that he wasn't happy.

“Your Highness, a moment ago, in front of everyone else, you asked one question to the princess. You asked her what she thought about me. Were you not voluntarily trying to draw everybody's attention towards me? Your Highness seemed to think that I did not already have enough attention and asked me to stay here with you and the princess. I fear that now, everybody thinks that Your Highness' purpose is to help me to marry the princess. I also fear that now, even the people with no enmity towards me will hate me. With every single influential family after me, I am a dead man.” said Lin Feng coldly.

Duan Wu Ya thought that it would make Lin Feng happy. However, it was clear to Lin Feng that it didn't put him in a favorable situation. He didn't have a high social status and wasn't part of a huge clan like the others. They were all interested in the princess to the extent that some of them were determined to fight over her, for example, Yue Tian Chen.

Duan Wu Ya had created a false impression in front of everybody. He had led everybody to believe that Princess Duan Xin Ye was interested in him and he was going to act as a matchmaker, which had made Lin Feng become the target of every person who targeted the princess. None of them would forget this and they would make him pay.

Each and every single one of these noble young men would devour people without status and not even spit out their bones. They engrave Lin Feng into their memories. He would then be unable to take a single step inside the Imperial City ever again.

Duan Wu Ya was causing a great harm to Lin Feng.

“Lin Feng, you are, as expected, just as smart as I thought.” said Duan Wu Ya while laughing softly. He was very satisfied by Lin Feng’s answer. As he asked the princess what she thought about Lin Feng, Duan Wu Ya had paid close attention to Lin Feng. If an ordinary man had heard that the princess could be interested in him, he would have been delighted. However, Lin Feng hadn’t been delighted at all. His facial expression had immediately changed and revealed coldness. Lin Feng’s face had immediately expressed his disagreement.

Lin Feng shrugged. He didn’t understand what Duan Wu Ya meant.

“Lin Feng, how many enemies do you have in the Imperial City?” asked Duan Wu Ya.

Lin Feng thought for an instant and then, while shaking his head, said: “I have many enemies.”

The Yu Clan, the Bai Clan, Duan Tian Lang and his son, the Nie Clan etc. Lin Feng had offended many influential people because of his beliefs, too many. He didn’t even know how many exactly.

“What about their strength, how powerful are they?” Duan Wu Yan continued asking.

“Powerful, extremely powerful.” said Lin Feng honestly.

“Since you already have so many enemies, does it matter if you have a few more?” said Duan Wu Ya while laughing softly which stupefied Lin Feng.

“Hehe.” Duan Wu Ya saw that Lin Feng was speechless. He slightly smiled and said: “Lin Feng, today, I made you come here, because I had, of course, anticipated everything. If she likes you, I will not be offended at all. Both of you would even receive my support. If you became the husband of the imperial princess, who would dare to attack you? In other words, my purpose wasn’t to make even more people become your enemies, rather, my motivation was wholehearted and pure.”

Duan Xin Ye and Lin Feng were both surprised. Even Lin Feng and Duan Xin Ye looked at each other for a second, she immediately looked in another direction again. Her face was filled with shyness and excitement.

“If I could really marry such a woman, I would really be lucky.” thought Lin Feng. He really didn’t understand why Duan Wu Ya was treating him so kindly, to the extent that he had personally introduced the princess to him.

Of course, Lin Feng clearly understood that even if the princess and he were willing to marry each other, it would be impossible for

a person who doesn't have a high social status.

For him it was impossible.

Chapter 190: Lin Feng's Birth

Above the calm lake, a gentle breeze was blowing, making Duan Xin Ye's hair look even more enchanting as it floated on the wind.

Duan Xin Ye was born in the Imperial City and possessed a blood spirit, but her cultivation level wasn't high at all because her family didn't allow her to practice. Instead, they had taught her four arts: how to play the zither, how to play Go, calligraphy and painting. They wanted her to understand the basic affairs of human life, which had made her become the person she was at that moment. She had a detached temperament.

Her father was also the ruler of the Xue Yue Country and the head of the Imperial Clan. He had always told her that, in the future, her husband would be a great and heroic commander which is why she didn't need to be powerful. She just needed to have the adequate personality. Therefore, her cultivation skills were fairly low.

In the past, she had already met almost all the wealthy and noble young men from large clans except for a few people. These people were all the same to her. They met for the first time and immediately feigned feelings for her. She was sick and tired of those types of people. How was it possible to have feelings for someone when meeting them for the first time?

The more people who courted her, the more sick and tired she felt. She just didn't show it, that's all.

The same happened when Duan Xin Ye saw Lin Feng for the first time and saw his tattered clothes, she didn't like him much either. After all, he didn't need to wear magnificent clothes, but he should at least wear clean clothes.

After that, she had noticed that Lin Feng was different. His facial expression was much different from the others'. He just looked satisfied yet cold and indifferent. Besides, even though Lin Feng was wearing tattered clothes, he looked proud while in the middle of all these noble young men. He looked like he thought that he was on the same level or above many of them.

Of course, the princess' impression after meeting Lin Feng for the first time wasn't the same as when she met others. She still had quite a good impression.

But what Duan Xin Ye didn't understand was why Duan Wu Ya, her brother, who was very proud as well, had introduced Lin Feng to her. Could it be that Duan Wu Ya thought that Lin Feng would become someone with an incredible status?

What Duan Xin Ye didn't understand, Lin Feng understood even less. He was uncertainly looking at Duan Wu Ya. After remaining silent for an instant, he said: "Your Highness, may I ask you a question?"

Duan Wu Ya smiled and shook his head while saying: "You don't need to ask. You will know when the right time comes. You will clearly understand. Lin Feng, don't worry, if I made you come here, it's only to help you. At the moment, what you need is a high social status."

“High social status?” said Lin Feng in a low voice, stupefied.

“Indeed, a high social status. In the Imperial City, many people want to kill you. Even though you have a friend at the Xuan Qi layer, if these people really want to kill you, a cultivator of the Xuan Qi layer will not be able to protect you anymore. Therefore, what you need now is a social status.”

“As these people see it, a high social status is not enough to prevent them from harming me. Of course, if that social status is granted by Your Highness, it is different.” said Lin Feng with a sharp expression in his eyes.

If the second prince provided Lin Feng with a high social status, that would prove that he was one of the prince’s people. Those who wanted to harm Lin Feng first had to think about how Duan Wu Ya would react.

“It’s precisely how it is.” said Duan Wu Ya while nodding and smiling yet not admitting it clearly.

“Thank you very much, Your Highness.” said Lin Feng while slightly smiling. He didn’t refuse the offer. Duan Wu Ya wanted to protect him, why would he refuse? At least, until that moment, Duan Wu Ya had never done anything harmful to Lin Feng. He had always been helping him. Lin Feng didn’t refuse his goodwill for that reason.

When Duan Wu Ya saw that Lin Feng was smiling, he understood

that he was accepting his help.

“Lin Feng, there is something else for which I need to consult you regarding.”

“Your Highness, how may I help?” asked Lin Feng very politely. Duan Wu Ya had used the word “consult” but Lin Feng couldn’t allow himself to look proud.

“Recently, in the Imperial City, we learnt that the Mo Yue Country has been attacking us in Duan Ren City. The Celestial Academy intends to send some of its best students there to gain experience. This is a tradition in the Celestial Academy, especially for the military students. They have to spend time on a battlefield. This is the only way to acquire practical experience. Only those who have been on a battlefield can say that they are real military cultivators. Besides, the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue will also dispatch many of its students to Duan Ren City in order to put pressure on the Celestial Academy. Lin Feng, I hope that, this time, you will also be able to go to Duan Ren City and come back having accomplished outstanding military exploits.”

Duan Wu Ya was speaking slowly. A realization flashed in Lin Feng’s eyes.

Military exploits.

Duan Wu Ya was a strict person. If Lin Feng could come back after having accomplished outstanding military exploits, he would provide Lin Feng with a high social status. With the right

reputation, words carry weight. He was thus making sure to not harm his own reputation.

Besides, the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue was going there along with the Celestial Academy, which meant that it was almost a competition between these two big schools.

“Lin Feng, only triumphant heroes who can proudly look at the masses from above can marry my sister.” said Duan Wu Ya while smiling yet expressing a profound and meaningful message.

“I will go to Duan Ren City.” said Lin Feng while nodding. Even if Duan Wu Ya hadn’t told him, Lin Feng would have still gone to Duan Ren City. He needed to fight on a real battlefield. Besides, there were disciples of the Yun Hai Sect which had saved from the slave exchange. They also needed to gain experience on the battlefield. Lin Feng didn’t want the disciples of the Yun Hai Sect to be considered as trash.

There was also Han Man and Po Jun who were on the battlefield. Lin Feng was wondering how things were there for them. Liu Fei also went back and visit her father, Liu Cang Lan.

No matter what the reasons were, Lin Feng had to go to Duan Ren City.

“Alright.” said Duan Wu Ya while intensely nodding. He then smiled and said: “Lin Feng, if you accomplish great military exploits, I will grant you the grade of Officer. I will also give you the fief of Yangzhou City and you will be able to go back to your

hometown as a triumphant hero.”

“The fief of Yangzhou City... A city...” Lin Feng was stupefied. Even though Yangzhou City was a small city and was just a small territory in the Xue Yue Country, owning even a small city would be enough to become extremely famous.

Lin Feng was excited and was already impatient. If he became an officer and then returned to Yangzhou City with it under his control, it would be splendid to see the reactions of the Na Lan Clan as well as the Lin Clan. That would be truly splendid.

If a former member of the Lin Clan, who had been expelled, became the owner of Yangzhou City, the Lin Clan would be ridiculed. That would be the biggest joke in the entire history of the city.

“Thank you very much, Your Highness.” said Lin Feng while smile indifferently. “Your Highness, if you have nothing else to say, I will take my leave.”

“Alright, you can go.” said Duan Wu Ya while nodding and smiling.

Lin Feng slightly bowed. He slightly nodded at Duan Xin Ye, turned around and then immediately left in a natural and unrestrained fashion.

Duan Wu Ya and Duan Xin Ye looked at Lin Feng’s back.

Immediately after, his silhouette vanished. Duan Wu Ya turned around, looked at Duan Xin Ye and asked her: “Xin Ye, what do you think of Lin Feng?”

“He is bright and courteous.” replied Duan Xin Ye which made Duan Wu Ya smile. He then said: “Since when does my little sister try to change the subject? You should know that was not my question to you.”

Duan Xin Ye looked at Duan Wu Ya and replied: “He is strong and has high natural talent. He definitely stands out from all others. He is also stronger than these so-called nobles. Besides, he is courteous, wild and not conceited. His heart resembles that of a fierce tiger and he is extremely hot-blooded.”

Duan Wu Ya was stupefied by her answer. He then immediately smiled and said: “It is the first time that I hear my little sister say such positive things about someone, but you’re right, he has the potential to become a man of great talent. You would fit quite well with each other.”

“Brother, don’t tease me.” said Duan Xin Ye sounding shy and embarrassed. She then added: “Besides, brother, if these are his only qualities, it will still not be enough for me to be with him.”

“I know that you are never satisfied.” replied Duan Wu Ya not surprised. He smiled and said: “Of course, the one who will marry my sister will have to have an extraordinary social status. Even though Lin Feng, at birth, wasn’t born with the same status, it didn’t differ much from your own.”

“At birth?” replied Duan Xin Ye surprised and asked: “I thought he had no social status at all?”

“He does, but it’s just that nobody knows.” replied Duan Wu Ya while laughing. “Do you know why I invited him to come my banquet in the Lovesick Forest?”

“Why?” asked Duan Xin Ye sounding curious.

“Because Lin Feng is her son.” replied Duan Wu Ya.

When Duan Xin Ye heard Duan Wu Ya, she was astonished... Her son...

The legendary woman of Xue Yue.

The Lovesick Forest... only those who had a high social status and were extremely talented could go there. But who would have guessed that the creator of Lovesick Forest was a woman?

Chapter 191: Who's Stronger?

Inside a mansion in the Imperial City, there were loud and aggressive shouts, which spread through the atmosphere.

At that moment, in the middle of the room stood a robust man. He looked at the crowd of people in front of him and shouted: “You’re all a bunch of good for nothings.”

When the crowd of people heard him insulting them, ugly expressions appeared on their faces. A cold and sharp Qi emerged in the atmosphere and rushed towards the robust man.

“Blade!” shouted that robust man. He immediately raised his hand and released his blade energy. An illusionary blade appeared in the air.

“BOOOM!”

The person who was closest to the robust man was blown away and a bloody mist filled the air. That blade was ruthless.

The others immediately rushed towards the robust man in an attack formation. They all looked cold and ruthless. They unsheathed their swords and thrust them at the robust man’s heart.

“Blade.”

The robust man was standing tall and upright like a mountain. In the atmosphere, an incomparably strong blade force emerged. The most frightening thing was that above the robust man, an illusory blade was flashing. It was unceasingly absorbing blade energy from the atmosphere and was ready to attack anyone that approached.

His entire body looked like an extremely strong blade. Anyone in his way would be killed.

Immediately after, the whole crowd of people was blown backwards. They were trying to charge at the robust man, but they were all now lying on the floor even farther away from him. They were unable to get close to him. Blood was flowing endlessly onto the floor beneath them.

From the beginning to the end, the robust man was standing in the same location.

“Alright.” shouted a voice from behind the crowd. The crowd turned around and saw that someone had arrived. It was Lin Feng and he was smiling.

Lin Feng hadn't thought that Ba Dao would train them with such brutality while he wasn't there. His methods were vicious and cruel. The blade energy around his body was piercingly sharp. These people hated Ba Dao to the bone, but of course, this was because he had been making them suffer every day. How could they not hate him to the bone?

Ba Dao watched Lin Feng arrive. His pupils shrank while staring

at Lin Feng, and he said: “You have broken through to the sixth Ling Qi layer.”

“I broke through to the sixth Ling Qi layer recently. Now I am at the same level as you.” said Lin Feng while nodding. These Yun Hai Sect disciples were astonished. Surprisingly, Ba Dao and Lin Feng’s cultivation were both at the same level, how powerful!

Back in the days at the Yun Hai Sect, they remembered that Lin Feng had broken through to the second Ling Qi layer. A year hadn’t passed, yet he had already broken through to the sixth Ling Qi layer. His cultivation speed was terrifying.

For ordinary people with ordinary talent who had broken through to the Ling Qi layer, it required at least one to several years to break through to the next one. Lin Feng’s natural talent was too monstrous.

But Ba Dao’s strength was also unfathomable and mysterious. It seemed like Ba Dao could even defeat people of the seventh Ling Qi layer. Even though Lin Feng was at a similar cultivation level, his strength couldn’t be compared with that of Ba Dao.

Ba Dao was staring at Lin Feng. Surprisingly, a sharp Qi emerged from his body and moved towards Lin Feng.

Lin Feng was a bit surprised but then smiled and said: “You want to try against me?”

“Yes.” said Ba Dao while slightly nodding. Ba Dao had practiced the skill Tyrannical Blade. He was perfectly aware that he had become stronger. Before, nobody of the sixth Ling Qi dared fight against him. At that moment, he had become even stronger and was convinced that he could defeat any cultivator of the seventh Ling Qi layer. Therefore, when he saw that Lin Feng had broken through to the sixth Ling Qi layer and the battle energy that was emerging from his body, he felt like comparing their strength.

“Alright, we can have an exchange.” replied Lin Feng while smiling. The disciples of the Yun Hai Sect were stupefied. Excitement appeared in their eyes.

Such a battle.

Who was going to be victorious? The robust and strong Ba Dao or the genius of the Yun Hai Sect, the new Patriarch, Lin Feng?

Ba Dao and Lin Feng were fixedly gazing at each other. At that moment, a powerful blade energy spread in the atmosphere.

The blade was truly a powerful weapon.

Ba Dao loved blades and he had a blade spirit. The tyrannical blade that Lin Feng had given to him was truly terrifying in his hands.

The blade energy that he was releasing emitted whistling sounds as it chopped through the air. The disciples of the Yun Hai Sect had

the feeling that their bodies were being drowned in an endless ocean of blade energy and that they would be cut into pieces at any moment.

“How terrifying. When he was fighting against us, he was hiding his real power.”

The hearts of the people in the crowd were pounding. It seemed like Lin Feng would be unable to win against Ba Dao. That blade energy could easily kill a cultivator of the sixth Ling Qi layer. One blade attack would be enough.

Even though the crowd knew that Lin Feng had extremely high natural talent, they doubted the fact that he could resist Ba Dao's attacks.

At that moment, an insanely powerful battle energy emerged from Lin Feng's body, and in the blink of an eye, it was already at a level that could compete with Ba Dao's blade energy.

Lin Feng was intensely staring at Ba Dao. His body was covered with battle energy. It seemed like he was going to attack at any moment.

A hurricane-like wind moved towards Lin Feng, which made his tattered clothes flutter. He was standing there like an invincible, unmoving rock.

“How powerful.”

In the middle of Ba Dao's blade force, Lin Feng was just standing there. He wasn't moving backwards at all. He was just as strong as Ba Dao.

At that moment, Ba Dao started to move. In a flash, his blade energy struck the floor and a deep crack appeared as if it had been cut by a blade.

"The blade is the weapon of the kings. Divine protection and divine attacks." said Ba Dao.

After expressing his opinion about blades, an even stronger blade energy spread through the air. The entire crowd had the feeling that they were suffocating under the pressure. The whistling sounds were growing more intense and occurring much more often.

"I understand why Tyrannical Blade is a skill of the Di level. The blade energy emerging from his body is incredibly powerful." thought Lin Feng. At that moment, Ba Dao's entire body was like a giant blade that had just been unsheathed.

"BOOOOM!"

Lin Feng took a step forwards. His battle energy didn't decrease, and on the contrary, it became even stronger. It looked like it was overcoming the heavens and the earth.

“The sword is the weapon of the emperor; it can pierce even the heavens.”

Lin Feng used a similar description to that of Ba Dao. Lin Feng's force spread in the atmosphere like a brutal flood.

Force. Sword force!

It could destroy and annihilate everything in its path. In a flash, his sword force fused with his battle energy and spread through the air.

The crowd was astonished. Indeed, Ba Dao could use blade force, but Lin Feng could use sword force. His sword was made for destruction.

Not only was Lin Feng's sword force extremely powerful, but his battle energy was terrifying too.

The blade energy, as well as the sword and battle energy, was filling the atmosphere, and suddenly, they collided against each other. There were small crackling noises as the energies clashed. How terrifying.

At that moment, the backs of the Yun Hai Sect disciples were covered with cold sweat. Ba Dao was monstrously strong, but Lin Feng was not any weaker. They hadn't even started fighting yet and the people in the crowd already had their clothes soaked with sweat. They were uncontrollably shaking and retreating.

Ba Dao and Lin Feng were still staring at each other.

A long time seemed to have elapsed and a light flashed through Ba Dao's eyes. At that moment, his blade energy slowly started to vanish. On the other hand, Lin Feng's sword energy continued moving forwards. Ba Dao suddenly looked surprised and slowly opened his mouth: "I admit defeat."

When he finished talking, the blade force around his body instantly disappeared.

Lin Feng's sword and battle energy also disappeared.

After all the energy disappeared, the crowd started to relax and they all took a deep breath. Their hearts were all pounding. Lin Feng was terrifying and was even stronger than Ba Dao. No wonder he had become the Patriarch of the Yun Hai Sect.

"Ba Dao, now your blade force has become extremely monstrous. Wait until you have a breakthrough in force mastery."

Lin Feng said this while smiling. They had not taken that battle seriously, as they were just testing each other. Ba Dao was clearly not as strong as Lin Feng.

When Ba Dao heard Lin Feng, he was stupefied. He stared at him and said: "You have already broken through to the next force mastery?"

“A while ago.” replied Lin Feng calmly. Ba Dao was dumbstruck. Lin Feng could already use energy attacks, what a terrifying young man. Fortunately, Lin Feng had never challenged him in the Prisoner Arena; otherwise, he would not have kept his undefeated record.

“Ba Dao, I came here to tell you to get prepared. We may have to travel to join the war at any moment.” said Lin Feng indifferently, and then he immediately looked at the Yun Hai Sect disciples. He then said: “You guys should always listen to Ba Dao and train hard. If you do, your chances of surviving on the battlefield will be better.”

When Lin Feng finished talking, he turned around and left at full speed.

Chapter 192: Cold Sword

At the Celestial Academy, there was a great deal of excitement. People were walking in all directions and talking as if they were excitedly discussing about something.

“I wouldn’t have thought that the Imperial City would send an army to Duan Ren City. Could it be that the attack of the Mo Yue Country is so strong that Duan Ren City is already unable to resist anymore.” said someone in a low voice on the main street of the academy. That person heaved a sigh. It was one of the military students of the academy. He had always revered Liu Cang Lan. He wouldn’t have thought that these days, Liu Cang Lan would also be unable to resist.

“It’s probably the situation. Otherwise, they would have secretly sent students of some big institutions to practice there. They wouldn’t have declared a state of war. This time, the Imperial City has given the order to send the most outstanding disciples to Duan Ren City as well as the real army.” replied the other person. These two people were hurriedly walking as they spoke.

These two student were walking in the same direction as many other groups of students.

At that moment, There were people wearing silver armour riding horses outside of the academy. They looked majestic and strong.

In front of these people were the students of the Celestial Academy. They were riding horses as well and some were even

riding ferocious beasts. They were waiting to leave.

At that moment, a horse galloping could be heard in the distance. A white silhouette appeared and was galloping toward that location at full speed.

White clothes, white horse.

“Wen Ao Xue.”

When the crowd saw the face which was as beautiful as any woman, the crowd was stupefied. Wen Ao Xue was leaving with them as well.

“Slow.”

The white horse neighed while it slowed down and Wen Ao Xue glanced at the crowd while smiling. Immediately after, he arrived amongst the military students who slowly parted and created a path for him to lead the way.

Next to them, the leader of the army troops glanced at Wen Ao Xue in a cold and detached way and asked: “Wen Ao Xue, why do you want to go to such a place?”

“Luo Yu, if you can go, for what reason can I not go?” asked Wen Ao Xue while smiling. His beautiful eyes looked enchanting.

Luo Yu groaned and didn't look at Wen Ao Xue again. He turned his head towards the officer of the silver-armored troops and said: "The time has come for us to leave. Let's go."

"Alright." said the officer indifferently while nodding. "Prepare to leave."

But at that moment, the sound of galloping spread in the air again. Inside the academy, a group of armored horses were galloping at full speed while a cloud of dust rose behind them. The one at the very front was a very handsome young man. He looked majestic and powerful. He was galloping there at an incredible speed. His horse, surprisingly, was a dragon colt horse, a horse of extremely high quality.

On the young man's left and right, there was a single person on each side. One of them was a girl wearing a fine veil on her face. She looked holy and pure, like a celestial being.

On his other side was a beautiful woman. She looked heroic and vigorous.

But many people were astonished when they saw the young man on the dragon colt horse. It was Lin Feng.

These days, at the Celestial Academy, people who didn't know his name were rare. The fact that he was appearing at that moment was amazing.

Lin Feng was also going to Duan Ren City. He was personally going to go to the battlefield. Besides, two beautiful women were following him.

“You arrived.” said Wen Ao Xue while smiling at Lin Feng.

Lin Feng nodded to Wen Ao Xue. Of course he had arrived, he was leaving as well.

At that moment, that noble military man, Luo Yu, looked at Lin Feng and said in a low voice: “Lin Feng.”

Lin Feng looked at Luo Yu wondering who he was. He didn't know him.

“What's the problem?” asked Lin Feng.

“Nothing.” said Luo Yu while shaking his head. He then continued: “You defeated Hei Mo only because you're lucky. I hope that, on the battlefield, you will remain that lucky because it is not a place where you can just play around.”

When he finished talking, Luo Yu turned around, didn't look at Lin Feng again and started moving.

“Lucky?” Lin Feng was stupefied. He defeated Hei Mo because he was lucky?

Lin Feng laughed and shouted at Luo Yu: “Same for you, it would be a great shame if you didn’t come back alive.”

When Luo Yu heard Lin Feng, he stopped his horse. He released a cold energy from his body which moved towards Lin Feng.

At the same time, he turned around and galloped towards Lin Feng at full speed while punching towards Lin Feng which emitted a strong whistling noise as it pierced through the air.

“BOOOOOOOOM!”

Lin Feng’s horse neighed and Lin Feng flew up in the air before landing on the ground. There was blood on the corner of his mouth.

He then kicked the dragon colt horse, which had immediately fell down onto the ground while unceasingly neighing causing him to be dismounted.

From the moment when Lin Feng had talked and the end of that attack, only a short moment had elapsed. Luo Yu’s attack had been like a storm, quick and perfect.

While looking at Lin Feng, Luo Yu laughed coldly and said: “Did you think that I was like Hei Mo and that you could act so impudently in front of me?”

The crowd was astonished and amazed by Luo Yu’s move. He was

so strong.

Even though Lin Feng was monstrously gifted and could defeat Hei Mo, the difference with Luo Yu was gigantic.

Luo Yu was the seventh ranked student of the Celestial Academy. Hei Mo and him were very different. Luo Yu didn't need to use a special skill to have the strength of the seventh Qi layer.

At that moment, the crowd saw Lin Feng standing with blood on the corner of his mouth. He was standing perfectly straight and a glow emerged around his body. In his hand appeared a sword which glowed with a silvery white light. It looked extremely sharp. It was absorbing sword energy as if it was alive.

An incredible amount of battle energy spread in the atmosphere from Lin Feng's body. It was extremely sharp and powerful. Everybody was instantly terrified.

Besides, inside that battle energy, there was sword Qi.

"Huh?" the crowd was stupefied and looking at Lin Feng in a strange way. Lin Fen surprisingly wanted to fight?

Luo Yu frowned while looking at Lin Feng. He was surprised.

He only saw that Lin Feng was walking slowly. In the blink of an eye, the battle energy as well as the sword Qi immediately emerged and pierced through the air at full speed moving straight towards

Luo Yu.

At that moment, a loud neighing sound spread in the air. Luo Yu's horse had felt the energy and was terrified, it immediately fell onto the ground and started crawling. Luo Yu's body was thrown onto the ground.

“You cowardly animal.” coldly shouted Luo Yu. He immediately attacked like a madman. His horse neighed and immediately after, its heart twitched, it wasn't moving anymore.

Immediately after, Luo Yu raised his head and looked at Lin Feng. An extremely cold expression could be seen in his eyes.

Without saying anything, Lin Feng walked towards Luo Yu and when he arrived in front of him then raised his sword above his head.

An extremely powerful combination of battle energy, sword energy and deadly energy filled the air. The hearts of the people in the crowd were pounding.

It seemed like Lin Feng had become much stronger in comparison with when he fought against Hei Mo, much, much stronger.

Lin Feng hadn't stuck with his sword yet but the sword energy was already enough to make the heart of the people in the crowd beat faster. Each of Lin Feng's actions was enough to astonish

them.

“Die.”

Lin Feng said one word and swung his sword in a downwards arc towards Luo Yu. It seemed like that sword was going to reach Luo Yu's body at any moment. Deadly Qi waves were rolling in the air like a black cloud.

Luo Yu looked concentrated, a terrifying Qi emerged from his body. When he saw Lin Feng's sword approaching him, Luo Yu raised his hands out of which a bright and resplendent white light emerged. A terrifying strength flowed from within his hands.

“Crrr!” a distinct cracking sound spread through the air. The bright white light disintegrated under Lin Feng's sword. The silver deadly sword immediately continued moving towards Luo Yu.

Luo Yu's facial expression finally changed. He was dumbstruck. He heavily stepped on the ground and raised both of his hands. He quickly moved backwards. That sword caught his face leaving a thread of blood down his face. That sword had nearly cut him into two.

But Luo Yu didn't have the time to take a breath, he just saw Lin Feng flicker and come towards him again. That deadly sword was rushing towards him again. Lin Feng and his sword were the same, expressionless and cold. It made Luo Yu's heart feel extreme dread.

Chapter 193: Cowardly Dog

He moved again. Luo Yu didn't dare approach Lin Feng's sword. The sword has both battle and deadly energy fusing together. Each time, Lin Feng's attacks were filled with what seemed like endless power.

Luo Yu would get pierced right through if he approached too near to Lin Feng's sword. His heart was filled with remorse. He hadn't thought that Lin Feng would be so strong. Luo Yu had broken through to the seventh Ling Qi layer, if he wanted to attack someone, he did it without thinking much about their retaliation.

“Boom!”

Lin Feng pierced the atmosphere at incredible speed. An extremely sharp and violent wind emerged. A horse in the distance neighed and was surprisingly caught by the wind and was cut into pieces while the person who was thrown backwards. He was breathing heavily but he didn't dare say a word, he feared that Lin Feng would attack him if he did.

That person had seen what happened with Luo Yu and Lin Feng with his own eyes. Luo Yu had attacked Lin Feng while being very aggressive towards him but Lin Feng hadn't bothered to waste any words on him. He had immediately started talking with his sword and at that moment, Luo Yu was in a critical situation. Lin Feng was really going to kill him.

When seeing that, how could a person willingly provoke Lin

Feng? They did not have death wishes.

Lin Feng's deadly sword was quickly piercing through the air. The battle energy emerging from his body was becoming stronger with each passing moment. He looked cold and expressionless as he was carrying out his sword strikes. Luo Yu didn't have a single chance to strike back against him.

At that moment, Luo Yu looked extremely pale. He was surprisingly struggling to keep his life and on top of that, in front of so many people.

"Ahhhhh." shouted Luo Yu furiously. His clothes were still fluttering through the air. He looked furious and ice-cold.

"What the hell are you doing?" coldly asked Lin Feng when he heard Luo Yu shout. He then continued striking with his sword.

All of the energy within the atmosphere suddenly disappeared. Luo Yu was surprised , but suddenly looked extremely happy. He then released an extremely powerful energy along with his spirit which appeared behind him.

However at that moment, Luo Yu had a bad premonition which made his heart beat faster. There wasn't any sword force anymore but that sword seemed even more dangerous than before.

The battle energy from moments before had also disappeared. Luo Yu quickly retreated at full speed.

“Crrrrrrsssh...”

Luo Yu had barely avoided the sword but the energy had struck him. Luo Yu's clothes were torn and there was blood pouring from his chest and a wound on his throat. It was a shocking sight.

The crowd was astonished. What a sharp sword, what a terrifying and strong strength.

Luo Yu lowered his head and looked at his own chest. Immediately after, a hideous expression appeared on his face.

He raised his head and looked at Lin Feng again. Flames of rage were burning in his eyes.

However, Lin Feng looked as cold as before. He raised his sword again as he spoke.

“I am going to personally kill you.”

Luo Yu was shocked, he turned around and started retreating at full speed. He didn't feeling like fighting against Lin Feng any longer anymore.

Lin Feng laughed coldly. He moved forward and used his sword to strike towards Luo Yu again.

When Luo Yu felt the deadly energy approaching from behind, he gnashed his teeth. In spite of the fact that he was insanely shaking, he continued running away like mad.

“What a shameless and cowardly dog, to run after talking arrogantly.” Lin Feng didn’t continue chasing him. While holding his sword towards Luo Yu, he shouted: “I don’t think that you can be compared with Hei Mo, in my eyes, you cannot even come close to Hei Mo. Pray that we never cross paths again.”

When Luo Yu heard Lin Feng’s words, his injuries started to bleed heavily as his heart pounded with fury and fear at the same time. It seemed like the state of his wounds were quite serious but he didn’t dare to stop running. He continued running away like mad into the distance.

When Luo Yu’s silhouette disappeared, the crowd’s eyes fell upon Lin Feng. They were astonished and amazed.

On that day, when Lin Feng had fought against Hei Mo, the crowd did not see that Lin Feng had almost killed Hei Mo.

However, at that moment, they had clearly seen that Luo Yu, who was even more powerful and arrogant, decided to offend Lin Feng and immediately after injured him.

Lin Feng did not continue with his words and instead used his sword and the result was that Luo Yu, who considered himself above Lin Feng, had run away like a coward.

Two months after defeating Hei Mo, Lin Feng had defeated a military student of the seventh Ling Qi layer.

Lin Feng's natural talent was monstrous.

Lin Feng sheathed his sword and immediately returned to his colt dragon horse. He then said indifferently: "Let's go."

These army troops nodded to the order and immediately after, everybody started galloping at full speed and disappeared from the crowd's vision.

But that insane battle from a moment ago was still in their minds.

The area outside of the northern gate of the Imperial City was desolate. The ground was filled with yellowish mud without any grass.

The northern gate of the city wasn't a normal gate. People couldn't go through it as they pleased. In times of peace, only those who had received a military order could go through that gate.

In that depopulated and desolate place, there were many tents. They had been set up by the military troops. The area was incredibly vast.

There was a crowd of people that had gathered outside of the tents, about a hundred meters away. Amongst them were the noble

cultivators, military troops and certain military troops wearing silver armor.

All of these noble cultivators belonged to the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue. They were heading to war so they could acquire knowledge and battle experience. Their future would be even better if they achieved military merits.

Of course, many people were going to there to acquire battle experience and to become stronger through life and death situations. Those types of people were both hot-blooded and courageous.

“Thrrom Thrrom Thrrom.”

From a distance they could already hear the galloping of horses. The ground was shaking. The people in the crowd outside of the tents could already distinctly feel the ground shake.

A short time after, they could already see a large group people heading towards them.

“They have arrived.”

The crowd outside of the tents was looking at the newcomers with a sharp expression in their eyes.

At the same time, amongst the crowd outside of the tents, a young man who was sitting on the seat of the general stood up and

went to welcome the newcomers. He had a warm smile on his face.

The newcomers got down off their horses when they saw the young man who was coming towards them to welcome them. They all kneeled down and shouted: “Your Highness.”

“You have gone through many hardships to be here.” said the young man to these people while smiling and nodding. He waved his hands as a gesture that they could stand up. They were all scared. Their hearts were racing.

Even though His Highness was a prince, he wasn’t arrogant at all and was very easy to get along with. He was also very polite to these ordinary military troops.

“Your Highness.” said one of the members of the Celestial Academy very loudly.

Duan Wu Ya smiled at the crowd and said: “Everybody, I am lucky that you have come to fight with me. This is truly a stroke of luck.”

“Don’t mention it, Your Highness.”

“Come, let’s sit. I’ll give the instructions to the troops and then we can go.” Duan Wu Ya politely while he showed everyone where they could sit. Everybody had an attributed seating area. The people of the Celestial Academy could sit on the right. There was a great number of seats laid out for them.

The people of the Celestial Academy sat down. At that moment, many people were sharply glaring at them which surprised them.

Opposite them were the people from the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue.

At that moment, Lin Feng was also looking at the people from the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue. When he noticed that many people were looking at him, he narrowed his eyes.

Duan Han, Yue Tian Chen, Lin Qian... he could recognize many people amongst them.

The military apprentices of the Celestial Academy were not the only people who wanted to go to war. There were also some noble cultivators, as well as some ordinary cultivators who wanted to go to war to enhance their path of cultivation. It would enable them to have an official career and to rapidly rise up in the world. Relying on their strength and efforts, they would be able to return home as triumphant heroes.

But Lin Feng clearly felt that someone was staring at him with an even sharper glare. It wasn't an ordinary person from the crowd, it was their leader. He was sitting next to Duan Wu Ya.

“Duan Tian Lang.”

When Lin Feng saw that their leader Duan Tian Lang, was the

one who was staring dagger at him, he was astonished.

Duan Tian Lang, apart from being a member of the Duan Clan, he was also now the commander in chief of the country.

Chapter 194: The War Drums

Officers and soldiers gradually arrived at the military drill ground in their formations. There wasn't any disorder, in the slightest degree. Only the sound of their synchronized march and of the clanging noises from their armor could be heard.

Lin Feng's heart started to beat faster when he saw the officers and soldiers within the military drill ground.

He looked as far as his eyes could see and saw that there were three large groups of soldiers which gradually turned into three huge square-shaped formations. There wasn't the slightest iota of chaos. The light from the sun shining on their armor was dazzling. There were three different colours shining throughout the formation.

The armor of these soldiers were three different colours: bronze, silver and gold.

The gold armored soldiers were the highest ranked while the bronze armored soldiers were the lowest of rank. That was clear from just a glance.

Duan Tian Lang's armor was pitch black. He looked like the devourer of souls. His attire was filled with endless coldness and austerity. He looked intimidating and majestic.

“Clang, clang clang.”

The marching sounds of the soldiers rose and fell in succession. A row of bronze armored soldiers lifted their war drums and walked forwards. The war drums were so heavy that four bronze armored soldiers were required to lift a single drum.

“BOOM!”

A deep sound spread through the atmosphere. The front row of bronze armored soldiers lifted up the war drums and moved towards the other soldiers. Then the second row of bronze armored soldiers did the same. When the drums hit the floor however there was a huge crashing sound followed by a slight tremor.

In total, there were five rows and each of them had nine war drums.

“What is that?” Lin Feng was surprised. He didn’t know what these bronze armored soldiers were doing with the war drums. However, other people were indifferently watching the scene as if it was completely normal. Excitement also sparkled in all of their eyes.

“Today, the students of two big institutions as well as some other student cultivators have joined us in this war. We beat these drums for all the students. Besides, There is something else I want to announce today, Duan Tian Lang will be joining us, as the Chief Commander. My sister, Duan Xin Ye, will be joining as Vice Chief Commander. She will also be present on the battlefield. Today, it is

for all these people that we beat the drums. Besides, the people who can make more drum beats than the others can become the protectors of Princess Duan Xin Ye.” said Duan Wu Ya. Immediately after, from the middle of the troops, a beautiful silhouette appeared. Even though she was wearing armor, one could see her beautiful figure. That was the imperial princess Duan Xin Ye.

The crowd was surprised. The princess Duan Xin Ye was acting as the Vice Chief Commander? What was the reason she had come to this battle?

Regardless of the reason why things had turned out this way, these young men were excited. The ones who could make the most drum beats could become the princess’ personal guards which meant that they would constantly be accompanying her. Such opportunities were really rare.

Lin Feng seemed perplexed. Duan Tian Lang was the Chief Commander?

Lin Feng didn’t understand what relations there were between Duan Wu Ya and Duan Tian Lang. Besides, Duan Xin Ye was the Vice Chief Commander, what was this supposed to mean?

“Five people, who will come first?” shouted Duan Tian Lang. Immediately after, silhouettes flickered and immediately arrived in front of the war drums while saying: “I am willing to start first.”

In the blink of an eye, there was a great deal of people in front of

the war drums.

Five people moved at the same time. They released an incredible quantity of piercingly cold Qi.

“Boom!”

Someone brutally punched the war drum which emitted a slight buzzing sound but it didn't emit the sound of a drumbeat. Besides, some energy bounced from it and was reflected back to the attacked which knocked them backwards.

At that moment, that person looked extremely embarrassed and blushed. They lowered their head and went back to their seat. They had been unable to make the drums beat.

The second person looked imposing and majestic. With an insane strength, he punched at one drum which emitted a buzzing sound and then a light cracking beat. That person looked very excited. Without stopping at all, he directly moved to another drum and punched it. It made a crackle sound again, which filled people with enthusiasm.

Making the war drums emit any sounds was already extremely difficult. Making the drums emit even cracking sounds could improve the soldiers' morale.

Only those who had a high status like the officers would be able to beat war drums. Those who could make the most drums beats

would be adored by both officers and soldiers.

But that same man didn't manage to make the third war drum emit a sound. The man suddenly looked dispirited and depressed.

After that, the third person managed to make three drums emit a sound. The fourth person managed to make two drums emit sound and the fifth person also only managed to make only three drums emit sound.

They then went back to their respective seats. The bronze armored soldiers put the war drums back in order. As before, there were five rows of soldiers with nine war drums in each row.

Lin Feng looked pensive and was intensely gazing at the war drums. He had the impression that these war drums followed a regular pattern. In other words, he had the impression they matched a person's cultivation level, for example, someone of the second Ling Qi layer could make two drums beat, someone of the third could make three drums beat... so making nine war drums beat required to be at the ninth Ling Qi layer.

Of course, it didn't seem to be an absolute rule either. A moment ago, someone of the third Ling Qi layer had only made two drums beat while the first one was only at the first Ling Qi layer and hadn't managed to make any drum emit a sound.

"Next one?" said Duan Wu Ya while smiling at the crowd.

“I’ll go.” said Yuan Shan who was sitting next to Lin Feng while standing up and going towards the war drums.

“Yuan Shan, brother, I’ll go too.” said Duan Feng following Yuan Shan.

A short moment after, five people had gathered around the drums.

Amongst these five people, the strongest one had broken through to the fourth Ling Qi layer. They managed to make four drums beat and then walked away while smiling.

Yuan Shan was at the third Ling Qi layer and managed to make three drums beat. Besides, Duan Feng managed to surprise everybody. He had broken through to the second Ling Qi layer but managed to make three drums beat as well. Many people started looking at him with new eyes.

Many people tried, but the best person could make only four drums beat.

At that moment, a silhouette stood up and said to the students of the Celestial Academy: “I am Tu Fu of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue. Who will accompany me?”

“Tu Fu...” When Lin Feng saw that big guy, he was astonished. They used to be fellow sect disciples in the past. Tu Fu also used to be from the Yun Hai Sect. Now, he was a student at the Holy

Courtyard of Xue Yue.

The crowd was suddenly interested. The Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue had started provoking the students of the Celestial Academy.

“Are there only cowards at the Celestial Academy?” said Tu Fu when he saw that nobody was replying to him. He couldn’t help but laugh.

“Not only are you a shameless turn coat but you also dare to speak such nonsense.” said Lin Feng coldly surprising Tu Fu who immediately looked at him.

“The winners can have a prosperous life while the losers can only die. The weak are the prey of the strong. That is the main rule on the path of cultivation. When Duan Tian Lang annihilated the Yun Hai Sect, of course I followed him. That is just common sense.” shouted Tu Fu coldly. Then, while staring at Lin Feng, he added: “Lin Feng, if you want to join the Holy Courtyard, you can go and beg Duan Tian Lang, maybe then he will take care of you.”

“Oh, you have now become a cowardly turn coat whose devotion to righteousness really inspires reverence.” said Lin Feng coldly while looking at Tu Fu. He then turned around, looked at someone wearing a bronze mask and said: “You go.”

“Alright.” replied the person, wearing the bronze mask, while slightly nodding. He then looked at Tu Fu and said: “I am coming.”

When he finished talking, his silhouette instantly appeared in front of the war drums.

Tu Fu's facial expression was gloomy. He then quickly arrived next to the war drums and said: "Who will start?"

"You can start." indifferently said the person wearing the bronze mask. Tu Fu slightly nodded, his silhouette started moving and immediately moved forwards.

"BOOM!"

A drum beat spread through the air resonating in people's ears. The war drum had been smashed into pieces.

Tu Fu was unceasingly moving, insanely punching the war drums. The second and the third war drums were instantly crushed emitting explosion sounds in the air.

"Ahhhh." Tu Fu had used one breathe to do that. He shouted loudly and continued punching. The fourth war drum was crushed.

"Crack."

Tu Fu's was violently stepping on the ground as he punched the drums. He then made a beat from the fifth war drum, which nobody had managed to do until that moment.

After, as if Tu Fu had a surplus of strength moved towards the sixth war drum.

“Crrr... crrr...”

The sixth war drum was unceasingly vibrating but at that moment, his strength bounced on the war drum and blew Tu Fu's body a hundred meters backwards... but there was already a small crack on the war drum as well.

“Fifth Ling Qi layer and almost made the sixth one emit a beat. Worth being called a former disciple of the Yun Hai Sect. Too bad that he's a shameless turn coat.” said Lin Feng in a low voice when he saw the crack that appeared on the sixth war drum. A cultivator of the fifth Ling Qi layer was nothing in Lin Feng's eyes. Ba Dao was going to teach him a good lesson.

Chapter 195: The Song

Everybody was looking at Tu Fu. Even though he was pushed back by the last war drum attempt, nobody was going to look down on him. Being able to emit a cracking noise from the sixth drum was already a great performance.

The people of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue were looking at Ba Dao with cold smiles on their faces. They wanted to see how the man, who was wearing a bronze mask, was supposed to compete with Tu Fu.

At that moment, Ba Dao moved in front of a war drum. He looked calm and mystical. An incredible blade energy rose from his body.

The crowd was stupefied. Immediately after, they only saw Ba Dao's fist move towards the first war drum.

“BOOOOM!”

A clear sound spread in the air. However, it didn't sound brutal and explosive at all. The war drum looked like a bean curd that had been split open by a blade.

Immediately after, he struck the second, then the third and the fourth one. He had easily made them beat. From the beginning, Ba Dao had done this in a single breath.

He moved straight towards the fifth one, slightly raised his hand

and immediately after cut it into two distinct parts which flew away. As before, he looked relaxed and detached.

The scariest part was that Ba Dao looked like a blade that would cut through anything, even before arriving at the sixth drum.

“Ka cha.”

Looking like a terrifying blade, Ba Dao cut the sixth war drum. As before, it looked easy for him to emit the beat and it seemed like he had destroyed those six drums in a single fluid movement, without taking a second breath.

At that moment, Ba Dao stopped. He didn't move towards the seventh war drum and no longer looked interested. He calmly turned around and walked back towards the people of the Celestial Academy.

“A piece of trash dares to act so arrogantly.” said Ba Dao indifferently. Everybody was astonished. That guy surprisingly dared to call Tu Fu a piece of trash. However in comparison with Ba Dao, Tu Fu was extremely weak indeed.

Tu Fu pulled a long face and the color drained from his cheeks. In the past, he used to be considered as a genius within the Yun Hai Sect. He used to consider himself as an amazing cultivator. At the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue, he was considered as an important student but at that moment, he was being humiliated and had no way to refute Ba Dao.

He had needed his maximal strength to make a crack appear in the sixth war drum but Ba Dao had easily been able to make it beat as he split it in two. The difference between the two of them was gigantic.

“Not bad.” said Duan Wu Ya while smiling. He then continued: “Are there any stronger ones out there?”

The people in the crowd were looking at each other in dismay. After that, many others stood up to test their strength. They all tried but eventually, they all failed, unable to even reach the sixth war drum.

“Ling Hu, you are one the strongest here, why don’t you go and destroy their honor?”

At that moment, on the side of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue, Tu Fu said while looking at Ling Hu He Shan. Ling Hu He Shan used to be a disciple of the Yun Hai Sect so he and Tu Fu had a good relationship.

Ling Hu He Shan slightly shook his head and looked at the crowd on the other side: “That guy in white clothes, his name is Wen Ao Xue. He is ranked third at the Celestial Academy. He’s discreet and his strength is unfathomable. I hadn’t thought that he would come as well so now I am not entirely sure that I can win.”

Ling Hu He Shan’s words stupefied Tu Fu. Immediately after, he walked towards Wen Ao Xue, who was as beautiful as woman and saw that these two enigmatic eyes were also looking towards him.

They looked like dazzling diamonds. Tu Fu didn't dare look at them anymore.

Amongst those who came to the battlefield, the strongest student of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue was Ling Hu He Shan. If Ling Hu He Shan took action, Wen Ao Xue would inevitably get involved and if Lin Hu He Shan was defeated, the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue would lose face. Therefore, Ling Hu He Shan wasn't absolutely certain about the result of a potential confrontation and preferred not to get involved.

"I will help gain back our prestige." said someone on the side of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue. That young man was Yue Tian Chen.

Yu Tian Chen stood up, looked at Duan Wu Ya and Duan Xin Ye and said: "Your Highness, I am obviously the one who should protect the princess. Nobody else can even pretend to be better suited than Me." said Yue Tian Chen in an extremely arrogant tone. Everybody could see that Yue Tian Chen believed the logic of his words.

Yue Tian Chen was a member of the Yue Clan and he had an extremely high social status. Besides, he was also extremely strong, already reaching the seventh Ling Qi layer and possessed a terrifying spirit to match. Many people, who were stronger than him, didn't dare to provoke him while those who were weaker than him were only there to be bullied.

Duan Xin Ye lowered her head without saying anything whereas Duan Wu Ya faintly smiled and said: "Well, let's see how many war

drums you can handle, brother.”

Yu Tian Chen slightly nodded but didn't walk towards the drums. Instead, he looked at the students of the Celestial Academy, in particular in Lin Feng's direction and said: “In order to be in a relationship with a princess, no matter if you're a cultivation genius or if you were born from a noble family, you need to stand at the absolute peak. Those who have a low social status and an overrated strength are just nobodies. When they think that they have a chance to win the heart of the princess, it truly is the funniest thing in the world. Those types of people can keep dreaming.”

When he finished, he walked towards the drums.

The crowd was looking at Lin Feng with a strange look. Even though Yue Tian Chen hadn't mentioned any names, he was clearly talking about Lin Feng.

Lin Feng was trying to gain relations with the princess?

At that moment, Lin Feng was dumbstruck. His facial expression looked slightly cold.

Lin Feng had an exaggerated strength and was interested in the princess?

At that moment, Yue Tian Chen said: “Today, I would like to sing a song for the princess.”

When he finished talking, Tian Yue Chen's deep and low voice spread through the air.

"Men and officers of the vast and boundless Xue Yue, beat the drums and sound the gongs!"

"BOOM!"

An explosion followed Yue Tian Chen's song as the first war drum beat.

"Lords and nobles wearing armor and inspiring ambitions."

"BOOOOOOOM!"

With a single explosive beat he destroyed two war drums.

"A hot-blooded man surrounded by lakes and mountains....."

Yue Tian Chen's voice was deep. The energy he was releasing matched the feeling of hot-blooded behavior. He continued to punch the next drums. The fourth and the fifth war drums exploded into pieces.

Not only was it Yue Tian Chen's first breath but he still had plenty of air in his lungs.

“Achieving a thousand heroic merits.”

Yue Tian Chen continued walking forwards. It seemed like his entire body was defying the laws of space and time and that his strength could annihilate everything in his path. An incredibly loud explosion sound spread filled the atmosphere and the sixth war drum exploded.

At that moment, Yue Tian Chen stamped on the ground like a mad man. The yellow muddy ground seemed to create a terrible wave of earth as it rippled away from his foot.

Yue Tian Chen’s fist crashed onto the seventh war drum.

“Just to be welcomed back as a hero by a beautiful woman.” continued Yue Tian Chen in his deep singing voice. Finally, he had run out of air from his first breath. A cracking sound emerged in the atmosphere as the seventh war drum was smashed into five pieces.

“Lords and nobles wearing armor and inspiring ambitions.”

“A hot-blooded man surrounded by lakes and mountains.....”

The people in the crowd were listening to these words while looking at that handsome young man. Their hearts were pounding and it seemed like the blood in their veins had been ignited with the passion for battle.

The officers and soldiers were especially enthusiastic and excited. Each and every single one of them had excitement in their eyes as if they were seeing themselves as the man from the song.

“Alright!”

All the people of the Holy Courtyard were supporting Yue Tian Chen. On his seat, Duan Tian Lang was slightly smiling as well and said: “Yue Tian Chen deserves to be a member of the Yue Clan. His heart is filled with great aspirations. Relying on a single breathe, he was able to chant and at the same time make seven drums beat. Such people are a rarity. He would be a perfect match for the princess.”

He had required only one breath to sing his song and make seven war drums beat. Yue Tian Chen hadn't paused for even a moment, he had been singing heartily as he attacked the war drums. It required much more energy than just attacking. After all, he only had a single breath.

Yue Tian Chen turned around and slightly nodded towards Duan Tian Lang. Immediately after, he walked towards Duan Xin Ye and warmly smiled at her. Duan Xin Ye also smiled in response while remaining as silent as before.

“Not bad.” said Duan Wu Ya while smiling and nodding. “I wouldn't have thought that Brother Yue was as talented as he was creative. That is indeed, very rare.”

“I am just some nobody. Your Highness, you’re flattering Me.” said Yue Tian Chen with a proud smile on his face. He then immediately glanced towards Lin Feng. In his eyes, perhaps Lin Feng had already become a potential rival.

“To be more accurate, you are not even some nobody, you are even lower, you are a piece of shit.” said a loud voice with a cold and indifferent tone. The crowd was astonished, a piece of shit?

Then everybody turned towards the person who was speaking, it was precisely Lin Feng.

“That guy, how audacious!” thought the crowd.

When he heard those words, Yue Tian Chen narrowed his eyes and coldly looked at Lin Feng. He smiled coldly and said: “Alright, if I’m a piece of shit, would you want to try?”

“That’s exactly what I was planning.” said Lin Feng while smiling indifferently. In the Continent of the Nine Clouds, many people were much stronger than him but Lin Feng was probably one of the most creative people.

Lin Feng stood up and started walking slowly towards the drums. He arrived in front of the war drums. The crowd was stupefied. Lin Feng was serious about trying to beat seven drums.

The crowd was already growing impatient. They wanted to see how strong and talented Lin Feng was. However being stronger

than Yue Tian Chen wasn't very likely.

Duan Wu Ya and Duan Xin Ye were impatiently looking at Lin Feng wondering what his plan was.

“I want to see if you can make seven drums beat while singing.” said Yue Tian Chen while smiling coldly. He was fixedly staring at Lin Feng. It was impossible for Lin Feng to beat him, he would just end up humiliating himself.

Lin Feng closed his eyes and took a deep breath. A beautiful melody suddenly came from his mouth. The crowd was shocked as their hearts started to race with excitement.

Chapter 196: Lin Feng's Song

“In a towering rage, I rest under the whistling sound of rain.”

The sound of his solemn and serene voice could be heard as he took a few steps forward. With piercingly cold sword Qi Around his body . He punched the first war drum and immediately annihilated it without leaving a single trace.

It was only his first attack and the crowd was already stupefied. What powerful sword Qi.

“Gazing into the distance, looking up to the heavens, I utter a long and loud cry. My chest feels painful.”

Lin Feng's loud and melodious voice resonated in the people's ears. That song had caused them to imagine a hero holding his sword, in a towering in rage on the battlefield.

“BOOM!”

The another war drum was also destroyed without leaving trace.

“Thirty soldiers now with the dust and earth, the moon and the clouds stretching as far as can see.”

“The young man's hair turn white, he is filled with sorrow.” continued Lin Feng and was unceasingly moving through the war

drums. At this point, he had already destroyed four war drums making them beat.

He hadn't even used much of the breath he had taken. He was unceasingly moving. His voice was getting louder and was filled with emotion.

“The humiliation of Duan Ren.”

“When the officials hate, they destroy.”

“On the back of the armored horses, going to the mountains armed with flowers.”

“BOOM!”

The fifth war drum was smashed and disappeared as dust in the atmosphere.

At that moment, the sword energy around Lin Feng's body seemed as vast the sky, the earth and the clouds. It was in perfect harmony with his song, as if it could annihilate an entire country.

At the same time, an insane amount of sword force filled the air. It seemed like it was impossible to stop that force from increasing. It was surrounding the entire crowd.

“With magnificent ideals in my mind yet starvation filling my

stomach, I eat their flesh. To settle my thirst, I drink their blood.”

Lin Feng’s hand seemed to transformed into a sword. It was followed by an incredible amount of force. He easily destroyed the sixth war drum. People’s hearts were pounding. he had already destroyed six war drums.

“Clearing from the beginning until the end, the mountains and lakes, moving towards the heavens.”

The lyrics of his song were extremely presumptuous and seemed to be challenging the heavens. Around the body of that arrogant young man was an endless burning brilliance which was emerging into the atmosphere. His fist, which looked more like a sword, moved through the air and its incredible white glow crashed onto the seventh war drum which was smashed into pieces again and disappeared without leaving trace. That young man looked incredibly natural and unrestrained.

At that moment, Lin Feng finally stopped moving. His clothes and long hair were fluttering in the air. He looked frivolous, natural and unrestrained. His beautiful song was resonating in people’s minds over and over.

“In a towering rage, I rest under the whistling sound of rain.”

“Gazing into the distance, looking up to the heavens, I utter a long and loud cry. My chest feels painful.”

“Thirty soldiers now with the dust and earth, the moon and the clouds stretching as far as can see.”

“The young man’s hair turn white, he is filled with sorrow.”

“The humiliation of Duan Ren.”

“When the officials hate, they destroy.”

“On the back of the armored horses, going to the mountains armed with flowers.”

“With magnificent ideals in my mind yet starvation filling my stomach, I eat their flesh. To settle my thirst, I drink their blood.”

“Clearing from the beginning until the end, the mountains and lakes, moving towards the heavens.”

With such inspiring and exciting lyrics, Lin Feng had risen to the heavens. He was heroic.

In comparison, the song that Yue Tian Chen had sung a moment before was, indeed, nothing compared to this. Compared with Lin Feng, he actually seemed like a nobody.

Everybody looked calm and solemn but their passion had been ignited.

“Alright, alright.” said Duan Wu Ya while standing up. His expression looked sharp. Such a singing talent was rare, especially coming from a teenager.

In comparison with Lin Feng, Yue Tian Chen had no artistic talent at all. At that moment, he just had the feeling that he was a buffoon trying to amuse Princess Duan Xin Ye.

Lin Feng had the spirit and composure of a hero.

Duan Xin Ye’s beautiful eyes were twinkling. Her facial expression was resplendent. Surprisingly, Lin Feng could sing in such a marvellous way.

Everybody, no matter if they were from the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue or the Celestial Academy, remained silent and was looking at that unconventional young man. The images of Lin Feng singing was replaying in their minds.

At that moment, only Yue Tian Chen had a hideous facial expression on his face. He had lost, that was a crushing defeat.

He had lost in both the artistic and strength, it was really a crushing defeat.

No need to talk about their artistic talent but as far as their strength was concerned, they had both made seven drums beat and had both used only one breath. Besides, Lin Feng had sung longer and in a louder voice. Lin Feng had made the hearts of the crowd

start to pound in their chests. The difficulty of Lin Feng's song was also higher. Besides, Lin Feng had not just broken the war drums but he had disintegrated them into powder. He had used powerful sword energy to turn them into dust. From the first to the seventh war drum, they had all been disintegrated without leaving trace.

Therefore, it was clear at first glance who had won and who had lost. A short time before, Yue Tian Chen thought he was above everyone else and at that moment, he was suffering a crushing defeat.

The fact that he had been humiliating Lin Feng remained fresh in everybody's mind but Lin Feng had also caused him to lose face.

What Yue Tian Chen couldn't stand at that moment is that Princess Duan Xin Ye was staring at Lin Feng with her beautiful eyes. There was a splendour and radiance in her expression which didn't exist when she looked at other people. Duan Xin Ye had also been enchanted by Lin Feng. Yue Tian Chen couldn't allow such a thing to happen, Duan Xin Ye was supposed to become his wife.

That beautiful woman also possessed the power of a blood spirit. Yue Tian Chen was determined to win. In the entire Xue Yue Country, he had to be the one to win the princess' heart.

Even though he hadn't won that battle, it didn't mean that he was weaker than Lin Feng. If used all his strength, Yue Tian Chen was convinced that he was much stronger than Lin Feng.

At that moment, Lin Feng finally moved. He slowly turned

around and looked at Yue Tian Chen. There was a densely sharp expression in Lin Feng's eyes.

“No matter if it is acquired on the path of cultivation, from being born into a noble family or because of one's natural talent, only those who have a high social status can marry a princess. This is despicable. Not knowing the vastness of the heavens because you overrate your strength. You think that you can marry the princess, that is the truly the funniest thing in the world.” said Lin Feng.

Lin Feng paused and then continued in a cold tone: “You criticize me for my social status, I admit that I don't have a higher social status than you but you also say that I am weak and a nobody. I would like to ask you a question, apart from being born into a noble family, what else do you have? You do not know how large the world is, you are truly ignorant.” Lin Feng's words were sharp and poignant which made an ice-cold expression appear on Yue Tian Chen's face.

“A family's social standing depends on your luck, you cannot change it. Cultivation is something you can change and create yourself. You can decide to become stronger and to improve your abilities, even if you don't have a high social status. If you decide to always surpass your own abilities, you can reach the clouds. I am sure that such people are not affected by their low social status anymore. Once they have reached the clouds, they despise those who, in the past, used to arrogantly look down on them. Only those who are that strong have the power to be arrogant.”

Lin Feng continued speaking: “However, you are part of the other category, relying on your family's social standing. Besides,

because you have a high social status, you think that you are true perfection. You are not brave and consider everyone else beneath you. You are only suited to being a big fish in a little pond. If you cannot break free from that way of thinking then the best you can do is rely on the social standing granted to you by your clan, you are doomed. People will definitely surpass you. A clan with such people is doomed to decline and disappear sooner or later.”

When the people in the crowd heard Lin Feng’s words, their hearts were racing. Those who didn’t have a high social status had to be ambitious and brave. That’s right, if they were determined to reach the clouds, sooner or later, they could. They would manage to surpass those who possessed everything in the continent. In the end, they would end up despising those who, in the past, despised them.

Concerning the noble cultivators, they were dumbstruck after hearing what Lin Feng said. They didn’t like to hear what Lin Feng was saying but they had to admit that he was right. His analysis was extremely deep and precise, besides, it was justified. Indeed, if they didn’t bravely move forward, even if they had an illustrious status in a noble clan, sooner or later, their clan, with such useless people, would disappear.

The crowd was amazed by Lin Feng’s words. He was so young and could understand things so well. He was way too mysterious.

“That boy, even though he doesn’t have a high social status, will have unlimited opportunities in the future.” said Duan Wu Ya who was starting to think that Lin Feng would actually really be a good match for his sister, Duan Xin Ye.

While the whole crowd was thinking about what Lin Feng had just said, Yue Tian Chen's facial expression had reached the ultimate degree of ugliness. Even if everything that Lin Feng had said was justified and true, he had been saying all these things on an arrogant tone in front of everyone else, humiliated a member of the Yue Clan!

Chapter 197: Situation at the Gate

At that moment the crowd was looking towards Lin Feng and Yue Tian Chen. A cold Qi filled atmosphere and the situation felt tense.

Duan Wu Ya looked perplexed. He immediately stood up and said: “Ok. That’s enough. Stop beating the drums. We should start heading off now. Lin Feng, you are in charge of the protection of the princess.”

When the crowd heard Duan Wu Ya, they were astonished. In the end, Duan Wu Ya had chosen Lin Feng. In his eyes, Lin Feng was more important than a young prodigy of the Yue Clan. The crowd couldn’t believe their eyes. After all, they had not seen what happened in the Lovesick Forest.

In other people’s eyes, Lin Feng was just Lin Feng. Even though he was outstanding; it was impossible for him to compete with a young prodigy from a noble clan. The crowd had the impression that Duan Wu Ya, had given him the opportunity, even though it was undeserved simply because he liked Lin Feng.

Lin Feng was also astonished. Actually, if Yu Tian Chen hadn’t made him angry and attempted to humiliate him. Lin Feng wouldn’t have necessarily stood up. Even though the princess gave him a good impression, he still didn’t have any feelings for her. It was because of her delicate facial features and general beauty, no man could find her disgusting.

“Uncle Duan, even though I assigned Lin Feng to protect the

princess, the others can also participate.” said Duan Wu Ya to Duan Tian Lang. He then immediately continued: “From now on, from all the members of the army, only the princess can give orders to Lin Feng. Lin Feng is also the person in charge of the princess’ security. He can choose to achieve other military merits under his own decision. Besides, the whole army must help and assist Lin Feng if he requires it.”

When Duan Wu Ya finished talking, the crowd was astonished. Duan Wu Ya was giving incredible privileges to Lin Feng.

“Duan Wu Ya is protecting me.” thought Lin Feng. He immediately understood what Duan Wu Ya meant. Considering that Lin Feng’s enemies were everywhere, Duan Wu Ya was worried that they would attempt to harm him. Therefore, he was giving a status to Lin Feng by making him the personal guard of the princess. Besides, he was reminding everybody else that attacking Lin Feng was the same as endangering the princess.

“Lin Feng, did you hear me.” said Duan Wu Ya while looking at Lin Feng in a cold and indifferent tone. This time, there was no warmth or friendliness in his voice. There was only the might and power which made him sound like an emperor.

“Roger.” said Lin Feng while slightly nodding. Lin Feng obviously couldn’t refuse protecting the princess.

“Alright, the princess’ security is in your hands.” said Duan Wu Ya while looking at Lin Feng with a profound look. He immediately looked towards Duan Tian Lang and said: “Uncle, the troops are now under your control. When you arrive in Duan Ren

City, please cooperate with General Liu Cang Lan to fight against the enemy. I will be waiting in the Imperial City for you to return triumphant. See you then.”

“Your Highness, I will spare no effort to defeat Mo Yue and prevent Duan Ren City from being humiliated.” replied Duan Tian Lang in a calm and solemn tone. Duan Wu Ya slightly nodded, glanced at Duan Xin Ye, then turned around and left without a shred of hesitation.

Duan Tian Lang went back to his seat, his pitch-black armor looked majestic. He glanced at the crowd and said: “Troops, back to your initial positions!”

The bronze armored soldiers quickly moved the war drums away.

The people of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue and of the Celestial Academy stood up. Among the troops, obedience to the chief commander was absolute.

Yue Tian Chen coldly glanced at Lin Feng with killing intent filling his eyes. Immediately after, he turned around and moved back to his seat.

When Lin Feng noticed Yue Tian Chen’s hostile behavior, he secretly smiled coldly and said: “I hope that you will not continue to provoke me.”

Then, Lin Feng turned around and walked towards the members

of the Celestial Academy.

“Lin Feng.”

At that moment, Duan Tian Lang shouted and called out to Lin Feng which surprised him. He then turned his head around.

“You’re going to the wrong place.” said Duan Tian Lang indifferently and then added: “Now, you are the personal guard of the princess, you should always be at her side with the troops. How negligent are you. If anything happens to the princess, you will be held responsible.”

Lin Feng narrowed his eyes. Now that Duan Wu Ya had left, Duan Tian Lang was starting to put pressure on Lin Feng. However, Lin Feng couldn’t refute Duan Tian Lang’s argument.

“I made a mistake.” said Lin Feng while smiling indifferently and then adjusted his trajectory to walk towards the princess. Duan Tian Lang was the chief commander of the army and was able to put pressure on Lin Feng. Lin Feng had to be careful not to give Duan Tian Lang any reason to do so.

“Sorry for bringing you trouble.” said Duan Xin Ye when she saw that Lin Feng was walking towards her. She had a warm and tender smile on her face. She was extremely beautiful.

“It is an honor to be in charge of the princess’ safety.” said Lin Feng politely while smiling.

Duan Xin Ye looked at Lin Feng and blinked twice. She then snorted with laughter while saying: “Lin Feng, how come I have the feeling that you had to force that? It doesn’t seem like you.”

When Lin Feng saw her magnificent smile, he was stupefied, He immediately shrugged and smiled. He looked like he felt at ease.

“What a pervert.” said a voice from behind Lin Feng. He had the sensation that someone was staring at him. He turned around and saw Liu Fei who was glaring at him with evil eyes which surprised him.

That girl, was she jealous?

Lin Feng then looked at Meng Qing. She looked cold and detached like always. She wasn’t looking at Lin Feng. How could this girl be so cold?

When Duan Tian Lang saw that everybody had gone back to their initial positions, he glanced at the crowd and said in a very loud voice: “Troops, let’s head to battle!”

“Let’s go!” shouted the several thousand troops. Immediately after, the ground was shaking from so many people moving towards Duan Ren City.

.....

A few days later, a huge dust cloud covered the horizon. Thousands of troops were riding their horses on an ancient road. From above, their formation looked like a dragon's tail. There was a huge cloud of dust trailing behind them.

At the very front were two horses ridden by Lin Feng and Princess Duan Xin Ye. It had been her decision to ride a horse at the front with everybody else instead of sitting inside a carriage. She had given up her usual comfort and joined the soldiers.

Of course, in the world of cultivation, there were very few people who were pampered and spoilt even when it came to women. Cultivators could ride a horse over huge distances, for many days without rest and it was considered normal. They would only be slightly tired, nothing more.

The evening sun was on the horizon in the West. The sunlight coupled with the rosy clouds offered a splendid view.

In the distance, there was an old and simple city. Above the city the evening sun was slowly setting. It was quiet and tranquil. A small breeze was blowing through it which gave it a desolate impression.

Duan Ren City!

The troops finally arrived in Duan Ren City but the gate was firmly closed. The people in the city looked cold and remained motionless.

“Chief Commander Duan Tian Lang has arrived, hurry and open the city gate!” shouted some troops towards the people on the gate while raising their banner.

The people at the gate looked cold and indifferent. They glanced at the troops and one of them said: “Except for when the General gives us the order, we will not open the gate.”

“What?” the troops were stupefied when they heard them. They wouldn’t open the gate?

A soldier furiously shouted: “We are the Imperial City Troops! Here with the Chief Commander Duan Tian Lang. The Emperor has given us the order to come. I order you to open the gate and let us in.”

“Only the General can give us an order.” said the person as coldly as before. They didn’t listen to anyone’s orders apart from those given by their General.

Duan Ren City was under the control of General Liu Cang Lan, apart from him, nobody else could give orders to his troops.

“Liu Cang Lan... how audacious. It seems like he is not attaching importance to the Imperial City troops.” said Duan Tian Lang coldly before adding: “Does he think that he has the highest social status in the country or what?”

When the crowd heard what Duan Tian Lang was saying about

Liu Cang Lan, they started whispering all sorts of comments and at that moment Lin Feng smiled coldly and said: “What Duan Tian Lang is saying is impossible. He perfectly knows how strong we are but the fact that his people are not opening the gate until he gives them the order proves that he knows what he is doing. He taught them perfect military discipline.”

“Besides, why do you say that he thinks his social status is higher than anyone in the country?”

“When Duan Tian Lang heard Lin Feng, he was stupefied. He coldly looked at Lin Feng and said: “What do you think gives you the right to intervene in my conversation? What do you intend to do?”

“You, Duan Tian Lang, are wrong. At the moment, I am the princess’ personal guard. I will spare no effort to fulfil my duty. What you just said could have very serious consequences to the extent that it could trigger a mutiny. If something happened to the princess during such a mutiny, you would have to bear responsibility.”

Lin Feng was fixedly staring at Duan Tian Lang, sounding neither lofty nor humble.

Chapter 198: Invasion

“Shut your mouth!” shouted Duan Tian Lang and then said coldly: “You have the gift when it comes to speech and enjoy babbling nonsense. Don’t think that because you are the princess’ personal guard you can act however you wish. The military has rules.”

“Why don’t you shut your mouth? I, Lin Feng, have come to Duan Ren City to help. I never said that I wanted to give orders to the troops. I am doing exactly what the second prince has asked me to do. I will stay next to the princess and protect her. What gives you the right to give me orders? I am not your subordinate.”

Lin Feng shouted with the same tone as Duan Tian Lang. He had a cold smile on his face. They had already arrived in Duan Ren City, why did he need to fear Duan Tian Lang?

When Duan Tian Lang heard Lin Feng, he narrowed his eyes. He looked cold and murderous. In Duan Tian Lang’s eyes, Lin Feng was part of his army. Even if he was the princess’ personal guard, Duan Tian Lang still thought that he could play with Lin Feng as he wished. He hadn’t thought that Lin Feng was going to contradict him in front of all the troops. What an insanely audacious guy.

At that moment, the crowd was also dumbstruck. They were blankly staring at Lin Feng. That guy was really insane. He surprisingly dared contradict his superior, the Chief Commander.

“Uncle Duan Tian Lang, what Lin Feng said is true. When the people of Duan Ren City see a military force that overwhelms them with numbers of unknown origin, they must adhere strictly to what they have been told and not open the gate. That is precisely why General Liu Cang Lan has ordered them not to act without his orders, and his methods are correct. What you are saying is inappropriate.” said Duan Xin Ye, surprisingly defending Lin Feng. Everybody was astonished.

Under his helmet, Duan Tian Lang’s eyes revealed a cold expression. He then said indifferently: “Princess, Your Highness, before discussing whether what I say is appropriate or not, considering the outrageous words Lin Feng has said, I first want to punish him.”

“Punish me? You want to punish me?” said Lin Feng while smiling coldly. At that moment, Lin Feng already understood that Duan Tian Lang and the second prince were not on the same wavelength at all. If anyone wanted to attack Lin Feng, they wouldn’t act because of Duan Wu Ya. He had said in front of the entire army that the princess was Lin Feng’s only superior.

“Not obeying military orders can classify as treason and insubordination, which is an act that must be punished.” said Duan Tian Lang.

“Treason and insubordination?” Lin Feng was staring at Duan Tian Lang: “What do you intend to do to me?”

“I don’t want to make the princess lose face so I will not kill you. However, I will make your life a sheer hell and confine you to a

prison. Then, I will talk with His Majesty and your destiny will be in his hands.”

“Ridiculous.” said Lin Feng with an indifferent attitude. Immediately after, he looked at Duan Xin Ye and said: “Princess, it is not that I don’t want to protect you, it is just that Duan Tian Lang doesn’t want to let me do it properly. I am leaving.” Lin Feng urged his dragon colt horse away using the spurs while saying: “Anyone who wants to come with me is free to do so.”

“I am curious to see who will dare to go with you.” said Duan Tian Lang with a cold smile on his face. That guy was extremely audacious. Did he really want to die?

But when Duan Tian Lang finished his sentence, a great deal of people started moving towards Lin Feng: Meng Qing, Liu Fei, Wen Ao Xue, Yuan Shan, Duan Feng, etc. There was even Hei Mo, followed by thirty-two men wearing bronze masks. A huge group of people had come out to follow Lin Feng. Duan Tian Lang was astonished. He was wondering, since when did Lin Feng have so many companions?

“Princess, it’s not that I am not willing to protect you, but Duan Tian Lang is trying to avenge his wrongs using his current title and doesn’t allow me to protect you. Please take good care of yourself.” Immediately after, Lin Feng left and galloped towards the city gate at full speed.

Everybody else was blankly staring at Lin Feng. The others were closely following him, which made the people in the crowd completely shocked.

“Kill them.” shouted Duan Tian Lang coldly. Danger was imminent. Someone behind him took out an arrow and put it in his bow.

Lin Feng was stupefied. Cold energy was released from his body, but as before, he continued galloping forwards. He was ready to fight, but still continued towards the city gate.

“STOP!” A furious shout filled the air. That voice belonged to the soft and tender Duan Xin Ye.

“Princess, Your Highness, they are soldiers. If they disobey their orders, they must die.” said Duan Tian Lang coldly while staring at Duan Xin Ye. A general in the field is not bound by the orders from his sovereign. That was particularly true in the case of Duan Tian Lang.

Once he left the imperial city, Duan Tian Lang was already ignoring Duan Wu Ya’s orders and wanted to kill Lin Feng and his friends.

“How bold.” thought the crowd. Yue Tian Chen and the others were smiling. What they didn’t dare to do, Duan Tian Lang was going to do it for them.

“Orders?” said Duan Xin Ye looking cold. She wouldn’t have thought that Duan Tian Lang could be that audacious.

“Today, whoever fires an arrow, I will kill you on the spot. We will see if Duan Tian Lang or anyone else will dare to stop me.” shouted Princess Duan Xin Ye coldly. Everyone was astonished and felt extremely awkward.

Indeed, if Duan Xin Ye wanted to try and kill them, even if they wanted to fight back, they wouldn't. If they injured the princess, they were convinced that Duan Tian Lang wouldn't hesitate to kill them.

Duan Xin Ye and Lin Feng were not the same. She was the princess and her social status was extremely high. Duan Tian Lang may have been very audacious, but he would never dare cause harm to the princess.

Duan Tian Lang was stupefied. He wouldn't have thought that the princess would help Lin Feng to such a degree.

In a short time, Lin Feng and his friends were already far away from the army and were very close to the entrance into Duan Ren City. At that moment, even if an arrow touched them, it would not cause them much damage.

“I am Lin Feng. Brothers, could you please open the gate? Sorry for the inconvenience.”

Lin Feng shouted these words to the soldiers at the top of the gate. These people could clearly see Lin Feng's face, and they smiled at him and said: “It's young master Lin Feng, open the gate.”

“Lin Feng, young master, is Xiu okay?” said the soldiers on the top of the gate. At that moment, Liu Fei took off her helmet and her beautiful face appeared.

“Xiu, you came back.” said a soldier, looking excited. At that moment, a rumbling noise spread through the air. Lin Feng and the others urged their horses forwards and entered the city.

This scene made the soldiers on the horizon look at each other in dismay. They didn’t understand. They had come because of orders from the imperial clan, even Duan Tian Lang had joined them, but the city still would not open the gates for them.

“They are really audacious, General. Should we attempt to take the gate?” suggested someone behind Duan Tian Lang. Amongst them were many strong cultivators of the Ling Qi layer. The gate wasn’t that high so it was easy for them to jump onto it. Destroying the gate would have looked like the city was being besieged. If given the order, they would fight to death against Duan Tian Lang’s enemies.

Duan Tian Lang turned around and looked at the person with a sharp gaze.

“I came here to cooperate with Liu Cang Lan and defeat our common enemy. Do you want me to provoke them and cause trouble? Get the hell away from me.”

“Indeed, General.” said that person when they heard Duan Tian

Lang's furious shout. They then moved away. The troops were furious and agitated.

How disgusting. They had come to help Liu Cang Lan fight the enemy, but they were blocked at the gate of the city. The good opinion they had of Liu Cang Lan vanished. They didn't understand why Duan Tian Lang was accepting such a humiliation.

At that moment, Lin Feng and the others were in Duan Ren City and noticed that the city was calm and in perfect order. There wasn't the slightest bit of chaos. At the same time, Liu Cang Lan appeared; he was taking a stroll through the city.

"Lin Feng, Fei Fei, you're here."

"Uncle Liu." shouted Lin Feng but he was only surprised and bewildered. He was staring at the distance.

"Lin Feng, are you wondering why Duan Ren City is so peaceful and why I don't let them come into the city?" said Liu Cang Lan as if he could read Lin Feng's thoughts.

"Please enlighten me with your explanations." said Lin Feng without admitting it.

Liu Cang Lan smiled wryly and said: "Lin Feng, I will definitely let you know my reasoning. You came to help us fight against Mo Yue Country because they were invading us and we urgently

needed help, right?”

“Could it be that is not the case?” Lin Feng, when he heard Liu Cang Lan’s words, narrowed his eyes as if he was realizing something.

Liu Cang Lan was smiling wryly and had a piercingly-cold expression within his smile.

“Duan Ren City is very calm. It isn’t in danger at all. They haven’t come to help us, but rather to seize the power. The Imperial City can’t stand it anymore and has decided to attack me.”

Chapter 199: The Calm Before The Storm

Lin Feng was dumbstruck. A short moment after, he took a deep breath.

“Oh... my... god.” whispered Lin Feng. He thought that he had truly been tricked. He had really believed that Duan Ren City was in a critical situation. The imperial family was really hard to understand sometimes. They were living in two different worlds. For power and influence, there was nothing they wouldn't dare to do. They wouldn't hesitate to sacrifice other people.

“Are you going to let them wait outside this entire time?” asked Lin Feng. Liu Cang Lan smiled coldly and said: “Since I already knew their plans; invading my city without fighting is impossible. I want to see how they intend to seize my city as long as it's under my control.”

“But Lin Feng, you shouldn't have come here with Fei Fei, it's a bad situation.” said Liu Cang Lan with a wry smile on his face. In the past, he had asked Lin Feng to take Liu Fei with him because he didn't want them to get caught in such a situation. He hadn't thought that they would come back at the worst possible time.

“Since you're already here, you cannot escape now.”

Lin Feng shrugged without paying attention and just smiled.

“Alright, let's go to the mansion.” said Liu Cang Lan said while shaking his head and smiling wryly. He was astonished by the

crowd following Lin Feng. Each and every single one of them looked like a deity and released a fine Qi. They were all very strong, especially the girl wearing a fine veil. She was releasing a pure Qi. Liu Cang Lan found her very mysterious.

“Fei Fei, was Lin Feng good to you?” asked Liu Cang Lan on the tone of a joke while looking at Liu Fei.

“Father.” said Liu Fei while looking at her father. She then immediately looked at Lin Feng and said: “Lin Feng chose to be the princess’ personal guard. It is a very big problem.”

“Argh....” Lin Feng was stunned. That girl was really vicious.

“The princess’ personal guard?” whispered Liu Cang Lan astonished.

“Father, you also don’t know that Lin Feng in the Imperial City, Lin Feng befriended the second prince and that the princess thinks highly of him. The second prince even asked Lin Feng to take care of the princess.”

When Lin Feng heard Liu Fei’s vivid explanations, he couldn’t help but had the feeling that he had done something bad and offended his father-in-law.

“Lin Feng.” said Liu Cang Lan when he heard that Liu Fei was jealous. That guy was quite impressive, Liu Fei was already jealous of others.

“Uncle Liu, actually, I think that Liu Fei is more beautiful than the princess.” said Lin Feng shamelessly and continued: “But it’s just that Liu Fei continues to refuse when I ask for her to sleep with me.....”

“Hehe.” Lin Feng was forcing a smile while talking. Everybody around him was dumbstruck and looking at him with their eyes wide open in shock.

At that moment, Liu Cang Lan was astonished. Besides, Liu Fei knitted her brows and looked at Lin Feng in a furious way. She then said: “You perverted bastard!”

“Have I ever acted perverted, Fei Fei? You cannot lie in the presence of Uncle Liu. If I have ever been perverted with you, tell Uncle Liu about it.” said Lin Feng in a decent way. Liu Fei almost fainted. That guy... was really shameless.

Liu Cang Lan was speechless as well. Immediately after, he burst into laughter so hard that tears ran down his face. He then fixedly stared at Lin Feng. It seemed like Lin Feng could make use of any situation.

Everybody else was astonished and looking at Lin Feng. How frivolous, unconventional, unrestrained and stubborn! He never reacted the way that people expected and his teasing Liu Fei was very comical. His personality at that moment and when he was fighting was completely different as if he was a different person.

The group all continued until they entered Liu Cang Lan's private mansion. Liu Cang Lan gave them a comfortable place to stay. However, Liu Cang Lan continued to leave Duan Tian Lang and the others outside of the city and ignored them.

Duan Tian Lang didn't cause trouble either. He calmly stayed with his troops outside of the city.

Three days later, Liu Cang Lan, Lin Feng and the others were having a meal when some shocking news arrived.

A sentinel came to inform them that the prince of Mo Yue, Mo Jie, was five hundred kilometers away from Duan Ren Border with his army. Considering their speed, the troops would only need two days to arrive in Duan Ren Border.

Lin Feng was surprised and looked at Liu Cang Lan. Liu Cang Lan's nickname was the Divine Arrow and his troops considered him as a deity and knew he was incredibly strong. However, when he heard that news, he lost his calm and stood up. The news was obviously very shocking.

Liu Cang Lan was stupefied and looking at Lin Feng and the others. He then slowly sat back down and said: "Mo Jie, the prince of Mo Yue is seventeen years old. He is a true genius. He is so young and has already broken through to the ninth Ling Qi layer. He is will soon break through to the Xuan Qi layer. Besides, he is equally as intelligent. It is said that when he gets involved in a war, he is invincible."

Lin Feng and the others were stupefied. Seventeen years old and had the strength of the ninth Ling Qi layer, that was indeed terrifying. He was much stronger than some of the high officials of Xue Yue.

Besides, that seventeen year old young man had never lost on the battlefield.

“Father, you have never lost either and you participated in many battles.” said Liu Fei. The crowd was silently nodding. Liu Cang Lan the Divine Arrow was famous. He had been accumulating victories over a great number of years.

“I am not worried about that. Apart from his strength, he is also very important within the Mo Yue Country. If he gets involved in the fight, the country will use all their strength. The first reason is that they want to ensure his security and the second reason is prestige. Mo Jie is the symbol of the strength for their country. Therefore, that fight will be horrible for us.”

Liu Cang Lan’s face firmly wrinkled. There were troubles inside and outside of their country. Inside of the Xue Yue Country, the Emperor didn’t trust him and meant him harm while outside, the Mo Yue Country wanted to invade them and had deployed all their forces. There was a huge crisis in Xue Yue.

At that moment, Liu Cang Lan stood up and said: “You can continue to eat. I’m going to the city gate to have a look.”

Lin Feng was stupefied. He understood what Liu Cang Lan was

saying. He wanted to let Duan Tian Lang enter the city and go fight the enemy together.

“No wonder he has such a high reputation. He is extremely wise as well as strong.” thought the crowd. He knew that Duan Tian Lang had come to seize his city but he would let him enter to fight against Mo Jie on his side. That was a very difficult decision to make for an ordinary person.

“The prince of Mo Yue, Mo Jie!” whispered Lin Feng. It seemed that this time, the Mo Yue country was turning out in force and was ready to attack. It seemed like a great calamity. Lin Feng hadn’t thought that he would go through such things.

“I’m coming too.” said Lin Feng at that moment while standing up and then walking towards Liu Cang Lan. Everybody was stupefied and suddenly followed Lin Feng.

At that moment, in the middle of the city, it was still very peaceful and calm. Since Liu Cang Lan was in the city, nothing ever happened there.

However, the calm in the city felt like the calm before a storm. The smell of war was moving closer.

Chapter 200: The Dual Spirit

Outside of Duan Ren, only hills and valleys could be seen over the boundless distance.

That area was covered with dust blowing in the wind. In that remote area, white tents were erected everywhere which looked like a small city.

The troops stationed there all belonged to the Xue Yue Country.

Duan Ren Border was the only way to reach Duan Ren City. Besides, Duan Tian Border was just a huge valley. From Duan Ren City, there was a panoramic view of the valley so if enemies came, they could easily spot them with a glance.

Therefore, Liu Cang Lan couldn't let the troops of Mo Yue enter Duan Ren Border that easily. He had troops guarding the outer border. Except for critical situations, his troops normally wouldn't go to Duan Ren Border.

At that moment, Lin Feng and Liu Cang Lan were together above the city gate of Duan Ren City. They were looking at Duan Tian Lang and his troops. They had passed through Duan Ren City and were heading towards the border.

Liu Cang Lan had eventually allowed Duan Tian Lang to come into Duan Ren City but there was only one condition, he and his troops were not allowed to stay in Duan Ren City. They had to leave immediately and go to Duan Ren Border and establish their

military camp. They had to stay there and defend in case of attack.

Duan Tian Lang had accepted those conditions. Once inside Duan Ren City, he had surprisingly continued and moved towards Duan Ren Border.

“Lin Feng, let’s go to the campsite.” said Liu Cang Lan indifferently when he saw that the troops were moving to the Duan Ren Border. Lin Feng slightly nodded and they immediately went down the stairs and headed towards the Duan Ren Border.

In Duan Ren Border, there were countless old broken weapons on the ground. While walking through the valley, the wind was howling. Immediately after, coldness invaded Lin Feng’s body started in the legs and then spreading to the rest of his body. Lin Feng’s heart started beating a bit faster.

There were so many weapons covering the ground in Duan Ren Border. They had all been broken during the war and their owners had all died on the battlefield. Those days, Duan Ren Border was a sea of broken weapons which diffused a cold energy like mist across the ground.

Lin Feng inhaled a deep breath. He looked calm and solemn, but his heart was trembling. It was impossible for anyone to look at such a scene and not be touched.

They walked to the other side of Duan Ren Border where there was a precipice.

Lin Feng gazed into the distance and thought that the cliffs were incredibly beautiful but he was still aware that danger lurked there.

Liu Cang Lan could easily take advantage of the landscape.

Even though there was no imminent danger at the moment, as before, Lin Feng felt an oppressive cold Qi while walking in the valley. Only after having entirely passed through it could Lin Feng relax.

“Psshhhh....”

There were tents as far as Lin Feng’s eyes could see. At that moment, he took a very deep breath and said: “Uncle Liu, how many troops are there here?”

“Three hundred thousand.” replied Liu Cang Lan indifferently. In the Continent of the Nine Clouds, amongst cultivators, there weren’t many who were willing to join the army. Otherwise, three hundred thousand stationed troops was a trivial number considering that the Xue Yue Country had billions of people.

The Mo Yue Country was entirely unified under their Emperor. There wasn’t any sects, which had influence. In their country, they always say ‘A single army is stronger’. Amongst the nine other countries of Xue Yue, their army was considered as one of the strongest. They had over three million troops. They always had ambitions to conquer the other countries. Xue Yue and Mo Yue were neighbors so Mo Yue wanted to take the initiative to invade.

“The sentinels have reported that this time, the Mo Yue army has over five hundred thousand troops.” said Liu Cang Lan indifferently. Lin Feng was astonished. That meant two hundred thousand more than them. That was a terrifying amount.

“Duan Tian Lang also brought a hundred thousand troops, if he wholeheartedly cooperates with me, the Mo Yue Country is far from being able to invade us. Our geographical position is very advantageous. The opponents may have five hundred thousand troops but if Duan Tian Lang and I manage to efficiently cooperate then the terrain advantage will make it too difficult for them to invade.” said Liu Cang Lan. There wasn’t much hope but, Liu Cang Lan had high expectations.

The soldiers on the Chi Xie armored horses were rigorously protecting the campsite. The best soldiers of were there.

Liu Cang Lan and Lin Feng arrived on the campsite and said: “Make Han Man and Po Jun come to my tent.”

“Roger, General.” said an officer. A short time after, two silhouettes entered the tent. The one leading them was a robust young man. His face was well proportioned according to his body. He looked determined and strict.

These two people were both wearing red armor. Only their eyes which contained a golden light, were visible.

The two people moved into the tent. They were about to salute

Liu Cang Lan but when they saw Lin Feng, they were dumbstruck. Immediately after, inside his armor, a wholehearted smile appeared on the face of the robust man.

“Lin Feng, big brother.” Han Man rushed over to tightly hugged Lin Feng. Behind him, Po Jun was also smiling warmly. No sharp Qi was being released from his body but he was as full of vitality.

“Lin Feng, you guys can chat, I am going to see Duan Tian Lang as he settles down.” said Liu Cang Lan with a warm and soft smile on his face. Immediately after, he left the tent leaving Lin Feng and his friends alone.

“Han Man, Po Jun, are you getting used to this place?” asked Lin Feng.

“We are used to it. Lin Feng, big brother, Po Jun and I are now controlling elite troops. The General has put them under our control. They are all very strong and all have an outstanding background.”

Han Man’s voice was filled with pride. He hadn’t been there for a very long time and already had a thousand troops under his control. To achieve this, he had only relied on his own efforts. Liu Cang Lan wasn’t the type of person who gave privileges to people because he was friendly with them but he knew how to recognize people’s natural talents.

“Have you been in many dangerous situations?” Lin Feng didn’t really care about what his two friends had accomplished, he was

more concerned with their safety.

“We haven’t been in many dangerous situations. Po Jun and I have broken through to the fourth Ling Qi layer.” said Han Man while smiling proudly making Po Jun smile wryly. “Lin Feng, brother, Han Man has become a monster. There were some enemies waiting in an ambush outside of the country. In the end, he ended up fighting against two strong cultivators of the fifth Ling Qi layer and slaughtered them as well as all the rest of their members. His spirit has awakened and it provides him with endless strength. However, when he killed them, his body was completely wrecked by the time the battle was over.”

“Alone, he killed two cultivators of the fifth Ling Qi layer as well as all the other people?” Lin Feng’s pupils shrank. He was pleasantly surprised. Besides, Han Man had just broken through to the fifth Ling Qi layer.

Han Man scratched his head with a shy smile on his face. He then said: “I don’t know what happened either. Since my spirit awakened, it seems like I am able to fuse with the earth and absorb its strength to make it my own. With this power, killing these two cultivators of the fifth Ling Qi layer wasn’t too difficult.”

“Could it be a blood spirit...?” thought Lin Feng. When Han Man was at the Prisoner Arena, his spirit had awakened once already when he broke through to the Ling Qi layer. It was obviously different than a normal spirit as it had awakened a second time.

“Lin Feng, Po Jun speaks highly of me but he’s also been hiding things from us. He is also able to defeat cultivators of the fifth Ling

Qi layer.” said Han Man which made Lin Feng stupefied. Po Jun was also able to defeat cultivators of the fifth Ling Qi layer?

“Be honest and explain these things to Lin Feng yourself.” said Han Man while glancing at Po Jun.

Po Jun shook his head while smiling and immediately walked towards Lin Feng: “Lin Feng, big brother, take a look.”

While speaking, Po Jun stretched his hand and a vine slowly emerged. It looked like an illusion but was real. When it reached Lin Feng’s body, Lin Feng could feel that it was solid. That was Po Jun’s vine spirit which he could use to attack people by surprise.

But at that moment, a sharp energy suddenly emerged from Po Jun’s body. His pupils suddenly became dark and looked piercingly sharp.

A black illusion suddenly slowly emerged from his back. In the middle of that illusion, a long black spear was floating and was pointing towards the vault of heaven.

“Dual spirit.” Lin Feng’s pupils shrank. That was another spirit.

Po Jun had a dual spirit!

The vine spirit and the illusionary spear vanished in the blink of an eye. Po Jun was smiling indifferently. His dual spirit were his most powerful trump card. He even hid it from Han Man for a

while.

“Haha, awesome, a dual spirit... Po Jun, you and Han Man are the same, you are both geniuses. No wonder when I first met you, the expression in your eyes looked so sharp.”

Lin Feng was smiling wholeheartedly. His two good friends were amazingly strong which made him very happy. Han Man's spirit had been awakened a second time which probably meant he possessed a blood spirit and Po Jun surprisingly had a dual spirit which was extremely rare.

“Having a dual spirit is no big deal, especially when you have a big slave mark on your face. It's as if I already died long ago in the Prisoner Arena.” said Po Jun while sighing.

Lin Feng looked at Po Jun and said: “Po Jun, don't worry about that mark on your face, sooner or later, I will help you remove it.”

Every drop of blood could go through a rebirth process on the path of cultivation. It was very easy to modify and alter the network of blood vessels, therefore, removing that slave mark would be as easy as turning one's hand over.

“That's right, don't get depressed. We will get rid of these marks, sooner or later.” said Han Man while smiling and continued: “Lin Feng, let's go for a walk. I will tell you more about the other troops and the current situation.”

“Alright.” Lin Feng nodded and immediately after, the three friends left the tent.

They walked towards the troops outside of the tent.

Po Jun said: “Lin Feng, big brother, amongst the troops, there are different categories, the guards, the sergeants, the lieutenants, the non-commissioned officers and the officers. The guards have ten soldiers under their control. The sergeants have ten guards, and therefore indirectly a hundred soldiers, under their control. The lieutenants which Po Jun and I are, have ten sergeants under their control and indirectly control all of their soldiers, which is a thousand in total. Even higher in the ranks, there are the non-commissioned officers who control ten lieutenants and therefore ten thousand soldiers.”

“Our troops are composed of a total of three hundred thousand soldiers. Excluding General Liu Cang Lan, there are three officers divided into a left, right and middle. Besides, each officer has ten non-commissioned officers under their control.”

“Besides, there are also the Chi Xie armored troops with special commanders. Po Jun and I are part of that category. ”

Lin Feng understood how the military ranks worked. The hierarchy was strict. It didn't differ much from the previous world. The lower ranked had to execute the orders given by the higher ranked.

Table of Contents

[Peerless Martial God](#)

[Synopsis](#)

[Copyright](#)

[Chapter 101: A Dead End?](#)

[Chapter 102: Aggression and Brutality](#)

[Chapter 103: Impudent old man](#)

[Chapter 104: Blood Spirit](#)

[Chapter 105: The Sealed Doors](#)

[Chapter 106: The Prodigy of the Duan Clan](#)

[Chapter 107: To Slap or Not to Slap?](#)

[Chapter 108: One Terrifying Step!](#)

[Chapter 109: Luo Xue the High Official](#)

[Chapter 110: Behind the Heavy Curtains](#)

[Chapter 111: Conflicts](#)

[Chapter 112: Who's Slapping Who?](#)

[Chapter 113: One Finger](#)

[Chapter 114: The Menacing Old Man](#)

[Chapter 115: Joining The Academy](#)

[Chapter 116: The Third Category](#)

[Chapter 117: The Zither](#)

[Chapter 118: The Holy Courtyard](#)

[Chapter 119: Magic! The Gathering](#)

[Chapter 120: Justice](#)

[Chapter 121: What an Expression!](#)

[Chapter 122: Xue Yu](#)

[Chapter 123: Duan Ren Border](#)

[Chapter 124: Heartless Imperial Family](#)

[Chapter 125: When They Met!](#)

[Chapter 126: Meng Qing's Pain!](#)

[Chapter 127: The Snake is Back!](#)

[Chapter 128: Purity stones](#)

[Chapter 129: Lin Feng's Strength](#)

[Chapter 130: The Sixth Floor](#)

[Chapter 131: As Far as Possible!](#)

[Chapter 132: Lin Feng's Sword](#)

[Chapter 133: Rule Violation](#)
[Chapter 134: He Will Die!](#)
[Chapter 135: Hei Mo](#)
[Chapter 136: Pressured at the Entrance](#)
[Chapter 137: Life and Death Challenge](#)
[Chapter 138: The Prisoner Arena](#)
[Chapter 139: Cultivation Slaves](#)
[Chapter 140: Lin Feng's Battle](#)
[Chapter 141: Jun!](#)
[Chapter 142: Insane Fury](#)
[Chapter 143: Brothers](#)
[Chapter 144: Killing Shadow!](#)
[Chapter 145: Blood vessels](#)
[Chapter 146: Marking](#)
[Chapter 147: The Visitors](#)
[Chapter 148: The Furious Teacher](#)
[Chapter 149: Flowing Blood](#)
[Chapter 150: Ice Reigns Over The World](#)
[Chapter 151: Meditation](#)
[Chapter 152: The Journey](#)
[Chapter 153: Daemoniac Fire Lion](#)
[Chapter 154: The Scandal](#)
[Chapter 155: Battle to the Death](#)
[Chapter 156: Energy Attack!](#)
[Chapter 157: Humiliation of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue](#)
[Chapter 158: Auction Square](#)
[Chapter 159: Noble Cultivator Seating Area](#)
[Chapter 160: Who's furious?](#)
[Chapter 161: Compassion](#)
[Chapter 162: Ba Dao](#)
[Chapter 163: Horrifying Price!](#)
[Chapter 164: The Dangerous Follower](#)
[Chapter 165: Frozen to Death](#)
[Chapter 166: Slave Exchange](#)
[Chapter 167: Inspiration](#)
[Chapter 168: Forbidden!](#)
[Chapter 169: Who Kills?](#)
[Chapter 170: Sword Awakening](#)
[Chapter 171: The Rules](#)

[Chapter 172: Strength as a Rule](#)
[Chapter 173: Vast Power](#)
[Chapter 174: Beginning of the Battle](#)
[Chapter 175: Your Highness!](#)
[Chapter 176: Black Lotus](#)
[Chapter 177: Cherish a fight](#)
[Chapter 178: Sword energy](#)
[Chapter 179: Death Ploy](#)
[Chapter 180: Pressure](#)
[Chapter 181: Holy Courtyard Challenge](#)
[Chapter 182: Battle Energy](#)
[Chapter 183: The Lovesick Forest](#)
[Chapter 184: The Yue Clan](#)
[Chapter 185: The Beautiful Woman](#)
[Chapter 186: Arranged Wedding](#)
[Chapter 187: Burning Battle Energy](#)
[Chapter 188: Condescending](#)
[Chapter 189: Duan Wu Ya's Tempting Offer](#)
[Chapter 190: Lin Feng's Birth](#)
[Chapter 191: Who's Stronger?](#)
[Chapter 192: Cold Sword](#)
[Chapter 193: Cowardly Dog](#)
[Chapter 194: The War Drums](#)
[Chapter 195: The Song](#)
[Chapter 196: Lin Feng's Song](#)
[Chapter 197: Situation at the Gate](#)
[Chapter 198: Invasion](#)
[Chapter 199: The Calm Before The Storm](#)
[Chapter 200: The Dual Spirit](#)